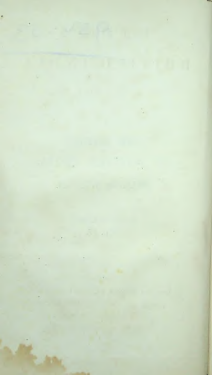


954.03

THE HISTORY
OF BRITISH INDIA,
BY
MILL & WILSON.

IN TEN VOLUMES.
VOL. IV.



THE HISTORY OF BRITISH INDIA.

BY JAMES MILL, ESQ.

FIFTH EDITION WITH NOTES AND CONTINUATION.

BY HORACE HAYMAN WILSON, M.A., F.R.S.

MEMBER OF THE ROYAL ASIAN SOCIETY, OF THE ACADEMY OF SCIENCES IN PARIS, GOTTINGEN AND LINDAU,
AND OF THE IMPERIAL ACADEMY OF SCIENCES; OF THE HONORABLE SOCIETY OF FRIENDS OF THE
INDIAN EDUCATION OF BOMBAY AND ST. JEROME'S, OF THE SOCIETY OF
ST. JEROME AND BOMBAY, AND OF THE SOCIETY OF
ST. JEROME AND BOMBAY.

VOLUME



LONDON;

JAMES MADDEN, 3, LEADENHALL STREET;

PIPER, STEPHENSON AND SPENCE,

FATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCLXXXIII

PRINTED BY WATKINS AND CO.,
PRINCETON, N. J.

CONTENTS.

BOOK V.

FROM THE FIRST GREAT CHANGE IN THE CONSTITUTION OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY, AND IN THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, IN 1773, TILL THE SECOND GREAT CHANGE, BY THE ACT, COMMONLY CALLED MR. PITT'S ACT, IN 1774.

(continued).

CHAPTER III.

	PAGE.
Deliberations on a new Plan for collecting the Revenue, and administering Justice — Death of Colonel Monson, and recovery by Mr. Hastings of the governing Power — Plan, by Mr. Hastings, for looking into the Sources of Revenue — The Taxes levied by Annual Settlements — Resignation of Hastings, tendered by an Agent, whom he discovers — Transactions of Mr. Hastings, in the Cases of Mr. Middleton, Mr. Forke, and Murray Begum — The Directors, reducing the Transactions to be reviewed, are displaced — Relations with the Maharras — A Detachment of the Bengal Army sent across India to Sarat — Expulsion from Bombay against Poonah — Unsuccessful — Fruitless Negotiation with the Maharras — Godeval's Campaign against the Maharras — Convention with the Rarras of Godeval — Mr. Francis fights a Duel with Mr. Hastings, and returns to Europe	1

CHAPTER IV.

In the Carnatic, Relations between the English and Nabob — Treaty, with independent Powers from the King — English courted by Hyder Ali and the Maharras, and in danger from both — Nabob and Presidetary desire Alliance with the Maharras —

LOOMIS:
PRINTED BY WATKINSON AND CO.,
CHICAGO, ILL., PUBLISHED BY THE
AUTHOR.

CONTENTS.

BOOK V.

FROM THE FIRST GREAT CHANGE IN THE CONSTITUTION OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY, AND IN THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, IN 1773, TILL THE SECOND GREAT CHANGE, BY THE ACT, COMMONLY CALLED MR. PITT'S ACT, IN 1784.

(continued.)

CHAPTER III.

Deliberations on a new Plan for collecting the Revenue, and administering Justice—Death of Colonel Mordaunt, and recovery by Mr. Hastings of the governing Power—Plan, by Mr. Hastings, for inquiring into the Sources of Revenue—The Taxes levied by Annual Settlements—Resignation of Hastings, tendered by an Agent, whom he disavows—Transactions of Mr. Hastings, in the Cases of Mr. Middleton, Mr. Forke, and Messrs. Begum—The Directors, ordering the Transactions to be reversed, are disobeyed—Relations with the Mahometans—A Detachment of the Bengal Army sent across India to Surat—Expedition from Bombay against Poonah—Unsuccessful—Fruitless Negotiation with the Mahometans—Goddard's Campaign against the Mahometans—Connection with the Rana of Gohat—Mr. Francis signs a Deal with Mr. Hastings, and returns to Europe

PAGE.

1

CHAPTER IV.

In the Carnatic, Relations between the English and Nizam—Placipotentiary, with independent Powers from the King—English courted by Hyder Ali and the Mahometans, and in danger from both.—Nizam and Placipotentiary desire Alliance with the Mahometans—

Presidency adhere to Neutrality — Relations with the King of Tanjore — After Hostilities, War is made upon him — War upon the Marattas — A Second War upon Tanjore — Condemned by the Directors — Pigot sent out to restore the Raja — Opposition in the Madras Council — Pigot imprisoned — Sentiments and Measures adopted in England — Committee of Circuit — Suspended by Governor Rumbold, who summons the Zemindars to Madras Transactions with Nizam Ali respecting Guntur — Considered by the Supreme Council — Governor Rumbold, and other Members of the Government, condemned and punished by the Court of Directors

45

CHAPTER V.

War with the French — Pondicherry taken — War with Hyder Ali — Presidency unprepared — Colonel Ballie's Detachment cut off — Supreme Council suspend the Government of Fort St. George, and send Sir Eyre Coxe to Madras — Hyder takes Arcot, and occupies the greater part of the Country — Lord Macartney Governor of Fort St. George — Negapatam and Trincomalee taken from the Dutch — Treaty between the Nabob of Arcot and Supreme Council — Assignment of the Nabob's Revenues — Tellicherry invaded — Great Armaments sent from both England and France — Disaster of Colonel Brathwaite's Detachment in Tanjore — Madras reduced to a State of Siege — Death of Hyder Ali — Tippee withdraws the Mysorean Army from the Carnatic — Operations and Fate of General Munro on the Coast of Malabar — Siege of Mangalore — The General at Madras, refusing to obey the Civil Authority, is arrested and sent to Europe — French and English suspend Hostilities, in consequence of Intelligence of the Peace in Europe — Operations of Colonel Fullerton in Coimbatore — Peace with Tippee — Behaviour of Supreme Council to Presidency of Madras

112

CHAPTER VI.

Financial Difficulties — Campaign of General Goddard on the Bombay side of the Maratta Country — Attack on the Bengal Side — Peace with Scindia — Supreme Court of Judicature — Effects of

the Supreme Court to extend its Jurisdiction — Their effects upon Individuals — Upon the Collection of the Revenue — Upon the administration of Justice — Interference of Parliament claimed — Granted — The Chief Justice placed at the Head of the Soldier Donor's Account — Chief Justice recalled — Judicial and Police Regulations — Provincial Councils abolished, and a New Board of Revenue set up.	210
---	-----

CHAPTER VII.

<i>Journey of the Governor-General to the Upper Provinces — History of the Company's Connections with the Raja of Benares — Requisitions upon the Raja — Resolution to relieve the Company's Necessities by forcible Exaction on the Raja — The Governor-General arrives at Benares — The Raja put under Arrest — A tumultuous Assemblage of the People — An Affray between them and the Soldiers — The Raja escapes — War made upon him, and the Country subdued — Condemnation of Mr. Hastings by the Directors — Double Negotiation with the Maharrats of Poonah — Treaty of Peace</i>	224
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

<i>Barbers sustained by the Nabob of Oude — His Complaints — How received by the English — Mr. Bristow removed from Oude — Agreement between Mr. Hastings and the Nabob — The Begums disposed of — Whether the Begums caused Insurrection — Alleged Oppression of Colonel Harvey — The head Branch of the Begums captured — A Present of Ten Lacs given to Mr. Hastings by the Nabob — Governor-General accuses Middleton, and replaces Bristow — Treatment received by Feroziah Khan — Decision by the Court of Directors relative to the Begums — Set at naught by Mr. Hastings — Governor-General's new Accusations against Mr. Bristow — Governor-General's Plan to remove the Residency from Oude — Governor-General repeats his Visit to Oude — Reduces the Government — Financial Results of his Administration — Incidents at Madras</i>	232
--	-----

CHAPTER IX.

	Page.
Legislative Proceedings from 1773 to 1789—Renewal of the Charter —Select and Secret Committees of the House of Commons—Pro- ceedings against Indian Delinquency—Mr. Dundas's East India Bill—Mr. Fox's East India Bill—Mr. Pitt's East India Bill, . . .	363

HISTORY OF BRITISH INDIA.

BOOK V.

FROM THE FIRST GREAT CHANGE IN THE CONSTITUTION OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY AND IN THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, IN 1773, TILL THE SECOND GREAT CHANGE BY THE ACT COMMONLY CALLED MR. PITT'S ACT, IN 1774.

(CONTINUED.)

CHAPTER III.

Deliberations on a new Plan for collecting the Revenue, and administering Justice.—Death of Colonel Mordaunt, and Recovery by Mr. Hastings of the governing Power.—Plan by Mr. Hastings, for inquiring into the Sources of Revenue. The Factors led by annual Settlements.—Resignation of Hastings, tendered by an Agent, when he declines.—Transactions of Mr. Hastings, in the cases of Mr. Middleton, Mr. Forde, and Mungy Begum.—The Directors, ordering the Transactions to be retraced, are disobeyed.—Relations with the Mahorattas.—A Detachment of the Bengal Army sent across India to Surat.—Expedition from Bombay against Poona.—Unsuccessful.—Fruitless Negotiations with the Mahorattas.—Colclough's Campaign against the Mahorattas.—Connection with the Rana of Dohad. Mr. Francis fights a Duel with Mr. Hastings, and returns to Europe.

THE state of the regulations for collecting the revenue had for some time pressed upon the attention of the government. The lease of five years, on which the revenue had been farmed in 1771, was drawing to a close, and

BOOK V.

CHAP. III.

1774.

BOOK V. It was necessary to determine what course should then be
 CHAP. VI. pursued. To remedy evils, which delayed not to make
 themselves perceived, in the regulations of 1772, a considerable change had been introduced in 1773. The superintendence of the collectors was abolished. The provinces (Chittagong and Tipperah remaining under the original sort of management, that of a chief) were formed into six grand divisions, Calcutta, Burdwan, Moonschahad, Dinapore, Dacca, and Patna. In each of these divisions (Calcutta excepted, for which two members of the council and three superior servants, under the name of a committee of revenue, were appointed) a council was formed, consisting of a chief, and four senior servants, to whom powers were confided, the same, in general, with those formerly enjoyed by the collectors. They exercised a command over all the officers and affairs of revenue within the division. The members superintended in rotation the civil courts of justice, called *Sudder Adaulat*. The councils appointed deputies, or *naibs*, to the subordinate districts of the division. These *naibs*, who were natives, and called also *amils*, both superintended the work of realising the revenue, and held courts of final jurisdiction, called courts of *Dewanee Adaulat*. The decisions of these courts were subject by appeal to the review of the provincial courts of *Sudder Adaulat*; which decided in the last resort to the value of 1000 rupees, but under appeal to the court of *Sudder Dewanee Adaulat* at Calcutta in all cases which exceeded that amount. Even this scheme was declared to be only immediate, and preparatory to an ultimate measure, according to which, while the local management, except in those districts which might be let entire to the *Zemindars* or responsible farmers, should be performed by a *dewan*, or *amil*, a committee of revenue, sitting at the Presidency, should form a grand revenue office, and superintend the whole collections of the country.* Such were the alterations adopted in 1773.

At an early period, under the five years' settlement, it was perceived, that the farmers of the revenue had contracted for more than they were able to pay. The collections fell short of the engagements even for the first year; and the farms had been let upon a progressive rent. The

* See Report of the Select Committee, 1801, Appendix, No. 1.

Governor-General was now accused by his colleagues of having deceived his honourable masters by holding up to their hopes a revenue which could not be obtained. He defended himself by a plea which had, it cannot be denied, considerable weight. It was natural to suppose, that the natives were acquainted with the value of the lands, and other sources of the revenue; and that a regard to their own interests would prevent them from engaging for more than those sources would afford. It was contended with no less justice on the other side, that there was a class of persons who had nothing to lose: to whom the handling of the revenues, and power over those who paid them, though for a single year, was an object of desire; and whom, as they had no intention to pay what they promised, the extent of the promise could not restrain.

The failure of exaggerated hopes was not the only evil whereof the farm by auction was accused. The Zemindars, through whose agency the revenues of the district had formerly been realized, and whose office and authority had generally grown into hereditary possessions, comprising both an estate and a magistracy, or even a species of sovereignty, when the territory and jurisdiction were large; were either thrown out of their possessions; or from an ambition to hold the situation which had given splendour and rank to their families, perhaps for generations, they bid for the taxes more than the taxes could enable them to pay; and reduced themselves by the bargain to poverty and ruin. When the revenues were farmed to the Zemindars, these contractors were induced to turn upon the ryots, and others from whom their collections were levied, the same rack which was applied to themselves. When they were farmed to the new adventurer, who looked only to a temporary profit, and who had no interest in the permanent prosperity of a people with whom he had no permanent connexion, every species of exaction to which no punishment was attached, or of which the punishment could by artifice be evaded, was to him a fountain of gain.

After several continuous debates, the Governor-General proposed that the separate opinions of the Members of the Council, on the most eligible plan for levying the taxes of the country, should be sent to the Court of Directors.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.
1773.

BOOK V. And on the 26th of March, 1776, a draught signed by Linn
CHURCH. and Mr. Barwell was prepared for transmission. The lead-
 1776. ing principle of this project was, that the several districts
 should be farmed on leases for life, or for two joint lives; allowing a preference to the Zemindar as often as his offer was not greatly inferior to that of other candidates, or the real value of the taxes to be let. The plan of the other members of the Council was not yet prepared. They contented themselves with some severe reflections upon the imperfections of the existing system, an exaggerated representation of the evils which it was calculated to produce,ⁱ and an expression of the greatest astonishment at the inconstancy of the Governor-General, in praising and defending that system, while he yet recommended another, by which it would be wholly suppressed.

On the 22nd of January, 1776, Mr. Francis entered a voluminous minute, in which he took occasion to record at length his opinions respecting the current government of the country, and the means of assuring its future prosperity. Of the measures which he recommended, a plan for realizing the revenue constituted the greatest and most remarkable portion. Without much concern about the production of proof, he assumed as a basis two things; first, that the opinion was erroneous, which ascribed to the Sovereign the property of the land; and secondly, that the property in question belonged to the Zemindars. Upon this Zemindars, as proprietors, he accordingly proposed that a certain land-tax should be levied; that it should be fixed once for all; and held as perpetual and inviolable.

This was the principle and source of his plan; and the reasonings by which he supported it, were the common reasonings which prove the benefit of certainty in levying contributions for the use of the state. But Mr. Francis misapplied a common term. By certainty, in matters of taxation, is not meant security for ever against increase of taxation. Taxes may be in the highest degree certain, and yet liable to be increased at the will of the legislature.

ⁱ "In the course of these years more, we think it must, to be apprehended, that the continued operation of this system will have reduced the country to general distress, and perhaps, on my future relation will be a calamity to the nation." Extract of a Minute from General Claverhouse, Col. Mordaunt, and Mr. Francis, March 21, 1776.

For certainly it is enough, that under any existing enactment of the legislature, the sum which every man has to pay should depend upon definite, cognisable circumstances. The window tax, for example, is a certain tax; though it may be increased or diminished, not only at the pleasure of the legislature, but by altering the number of his windows at the pleasure of the individual who pays it. By the common reasonings to prove the advantages of certainty in taxes, Mr. Francis, therefore, proved nothing at all against the power of increasing them. The sacred duty of keeping taxation in general within the narrowest possible limits, rests upon equally strong but very different grounds.

Into the subordinate arrangements of the scheme, it belongs not to the present purpose to enter. It is only necessary to state, that Mr. Francis proposed to protect the ryots from the arbitrary exactions of the Zemindars, by prescribed forms of leases, in India known by the name of *potdars*; that he condemned the provincial councils, and recommended local superintendents, to superintend, for a time, the executive as well as judicial business of the collections; a business, which, by the arrangements made with the Zemindars and the ryots, he trusted would in a great measure soon perform itself. On opium and salt, of which the monopoly had generally been disposed of by contract, he proposed that government should content itself with a duty; and terminate a large amount of existing oppressions by giving freedom to the trade.*

That the regulations which had been adopted for the administration of justice among the natives were extremely defective, all parties admitted and complained. That robbery and other crimes so greatly prevailed, was owing, in the opinion of Mr. Francis, to the reduction of the authority of the Zemindars. These officers had formerly exercised a penal control, which Mr. Francis maintained was fully judicial; which had subsided, as Mr. Hastings affirmed, to nothing but police. As a cure for the evils

* Report, as above, and Appendix, Nos. 14 and 15. See also a publication, entitled *General Summary of the Government and Council of Fort William*, by Philip Francis, Esq. For the meaning of the terms *Zemindar* and *Ryot*, see l. 21; and for the manner in which the Zemindars had in the land, see the correspondence printed on the introduction of the summary system during the administration of Lord Cornwallis.

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.

1774.

ing disorders, Mr. Francis recommended the restoration of their ancient powers to the Zemindars, who, in the case of robbery and theft, were obliged, under the ancient government, to make compensation to the party wronged; and in the case of murders and riots, were liable to severe penalties at the hand of government. Mr. Hastings, who judged more wisely what effects summary jurisdiction had produced, or was likely to produce, treated this as a remedy which was far from adequate to the disease. In conjunction with Sir Elijah Impey, he formed the draught of a bill for an act of parliament, on the subject of the civil judicature of Bengal. It was communicated to the Council on the 20th of May. In this plan of the Chief Governor and Chief Judge, it was proposed, that in each of the seven divisions, into which, including Chittagong, the country had been already distributed, two courts of record should be established; that one should be denominated "The Court of Provincial Council;" that it should in each instance consist of a president and three Councillors, chosen by the Governor-General and Council, among the senior servants of the Company; and have summary jurisdiction in all pecuniary suits which regarded the Company, either directly, or through the medium of any person indebted to them or employed in their service; that the other of these courts should be called the Adalat Dowany Zillahdar; should consist of one judge, chosen, for his knowledge in the language and constitution of the country, by the Governor and Council, from among the senior servants of the Company; and should have jurisdiction in cases of trespass or damage, rents, debts, and in general of all pleas real, personal, or mixed, belonging to parties different from those included in the jurisdiction of the Courts of Provincial Council. In this draught no provision was made for the criminal branch of judicature among the natives, which had been remitted to the nominal government of the Nabob, and exercised under the superintendence of Moham-med Reza Khan.¹

Early in November, 1774, Colonel Monson died; and as there remained in the Council after that event, only the Governor-General and Mr. Barwell on the one part, with

¹ See Francis's Memoirs, *ut supra*, and the Draught of that age's Bill: Rogers, *ut supra*, Appendix, No. 12.

General Clavering and Mr. Francis on the other, the BOOK V.
casting vote of the Governor-General turned the balance CHAP. III.
on his side, and restored to him the direction of govern-
ment.

 1770.

In the continuation of the 1st of November he had entered a minute, in which he proposed, as a foundation for new-modelling the plan of collection, that an investigation should be instituted for ascertaining the actual state of the sources of revenue, particularly of that great and principal source, the lands. As the mode of letting by auction, which had produced incompetence, was about to be discontinued, and the mode of letting by valuation to be adopted in its stead, the Governor-General was of opinion, that an accurate knowledge as possible of the subject of valuation ought first to be obtained. He proposed that this inquiry should be assigned as an exclusive duty to particular agents; that two experienced servants of the Company should be chosen, with an adequate appointment of native officers; and that their business should be to collect the accounts of the Zemindars, the farmers, and ryots; to obtain such information as the Provincial Councils could impart; to depute, when expedient, native officers into the districts for the purpose of inquiry; and to arrange and digest the accumulated materials. The use of this knowledge would be to assess the lands in proportion to their value, and to protect the ryots, by equitable agreements, or pottahs, imposed upon the Zemindars. The Governor-General finally proposed, for the sake, as he said, of despatch, that all orders issued from the office, in execution of such measures as had received the sanction of the Board, should be written in his name; and that the control of the office should be confided to his care.

As every proposal made by the Governor-General was an object of attack to the opposite side of the Board, this measure introduced, as usual, a long train of debate and altercation. Mr. Francis objected, 1. That the inquiry proposed was altogether useless; as a rate of impost, extracting from the lands their utmost value, would be cruel to the people, and ruinous to the state; while, under a moderate assessment, disproportion between the rate and the value was worthy of little regard; 2. That if an accu-

BOOK V. rate valuation were useful, it ought to have been obtained
 CHAP. III. through the Committee of Circuit, by whom the lands
 were let at auction, for the professed purpose of ascertain-
 1774. ing their highest value; 3. That the inquiry would be
 unavailing, because the Zemindars, farmers, and ryots,
 would not give true accounts; 4. That if real accounts
 were capable of being obtained, they would be so volumi-
 nous, intricate, and defective, as to preclude the possibility
 of drawing from them any accurate conclusion; 5. That a
 valuation of land, if accurately obtained, is only true for
 one particular year, not for any future one; and 6. That
 with regard to the ryots, while the proposed potatoes were
 ill-calculated to afford them protection, the interest of the
 Zemindars, if their lands were restored under a moderate
 and invariable tax, would yield the best security to the
 husbandman, from whose exertions the value of the land
 arose. A furious dispute was entered by General Claver-
 ing, in which he arraigned the measure as an attempt to
 wrest from the Council "the ordering, management, and
 government of the territorial acquisitions," and as an
 illegal usurpation of the powers that were vested exclu-
 sively in the Board. This accusation was founded upon
 the proposal about the letters and the control of the office.
 And it is remarkable that, knowing the jealousy with
 which any proposal of a new power to himself would be
 viewed by the hostile party, and the imputations to which
 it would give birth, the Governor-General should have
 embarrassed his scheme with a condition, invidious, and
 not essential to its execution. That the objections were
 frivolous or invalid, it is easy to perceive. Though the
 inequalities of some taxes redress themselves in time, it is
 a mischievous notion that inequality in the imposing of
 taxes is not an evil. Every inequality in the case of a
 new imposition, is an act of oppression and injustice. And
 Hastings showed that in the case of India, where the
 land-holder paid nine-tenths of the produce of the land to
 government, inequality might produce the most cruel op-
 pression. If the Committee of Circuit had fallen short of
 procuring an accurate knowledge of the sources of the
 revenue, that could be no reason why better information
 should not be obtained. Though it was acknowledged that
 inquiry would be difficult, and its results defective, it is

never to be admitted that, where perfect knowledge cannot be obtained, knowledge, though imperfect, is of no advantage. If it were allowed, as it was not, that the interest of the Zemindars would have been such, upon the plan of Mr. Francis, as Mr. Francis supposed, it is not true that men will be governed by their real interests, where it is certain that they are incapable of understanding those interests; where those interests are distinct and speak only to the judgment, while they are opposed by others that operate immediately upon the passions and the senses. As the Governor-General had not proposed that letters from the officer acted in his name should relate to any thing but services which had received the sanction of the Council, he insisted that they no more implied a usurpation of the powers of the Council, than the letters written in his own name, in the discharge of his functions, by any officer who was vested with a trust. The pernicious purposes to which it was in vague and general terms affirmed that such a power might be converted, it is not easy to understand. And the edum which it was attempted to cast upon the inquiry, by representing it as a preparation for exacting the utmost possible revenue from the lands, and disposing of the Zemindars, Hastings answered, and sufficiently, by a solemn declaration, that no such intention was entertained.

By the assembly now restored to the Governor-General, the office was established. Orders were transmitted to the Provincial Councils; and native officers, called *sannas*, were sent to collect accounts and to obtain information in the districts. The first incidents which occurred were complaints against those *sannas* for injurious treatment of the inhabitants; and the opposing party were careful to place those accusations in the strongest possible light. From the *sannas*, on the other hand, accounts arrived of frequent refusal on the part of the Zemindary agents, and others, to afford information, or even to show their accounts.

The five years' leases expired in April, 1777; and the month of July of that year had arrived before any plan for the current and future years had yet been determined. By acknowledgment of all parties, the country had been so grievously over-taxed, as to have been altogether unable

BOOK V. to carry up his payments to the level of the taxation.
 1771. According to the statement of the Accountant-General, dated the 18th of July, 1777, the remissions upon the five-years' leases amounted to 118 lacs 79,370 rupees; and the balances, of which the greater part were wholly irrecoverable, amounted to 189 lacs 23,819 rupees. In his minute, on the office of inquiry, Mr. Barwell expressly declared that the "impoverished state of the country loudly pleaded for a reduction of the revenue as absolutely requisite for its future welfare." In the numerous despatches arrived, by which it was declared, that the Court of Directors, after considering the plans, both that of the Governor-General for letting the lands on leases for five, and that of Mr. Francis for establishing a fixed, invariable rent, "did, for many weighty reasons, think it not then advisable to adopt either of those modes," but directed that the lands should be let for one year, on the most advantageous terms; that the way of auction, however, should no more be used; that a preference should always be given to natives resident on the spot; and that no European, or the hanger of any European, should have any share in forming the revenue. On the 18th of July, it was determined that the following plan should be adopted for the year; that the lands should be offered to the old Zemindars on the rent-roll or assessment of the last year, or upon a new estimate formed by the provincial Council; that for such lands as should not in this manner find a renter, the Provincial Councils should receive sealed proposals by advertisement; that the salt farms should be let upon sealed proposals, a preference being given to the Zemindar or farmer of the lands on which the salt was made; that security should not be asked of the Zemindars, but a part of their lands be sold to discharge their balances. Mr. Francis objected to the rent-roll of last year as too high; and Mr. Hastings admitted the justice of the observation with regard to a part of the lands, where abatement would be required; but thought it good, in the first instance, to try in how many cases the high

¹ Mr. Howe (Lord Teignmouth) said, in his valuable *Memoirs on the Revenue of Bengal*, dated June, 1765, printed in the Appendix, No. 1, to the Fifth Report of the Commission on Public Affairs, in 1834, that "the settlements of 1774, before the expiration of the leases, created, he believed, nowhere, upon the original terms."

rent, for which persons were found to engage, would be regarded as not more than the taxes would enable them to pay. Instead of sealed proposals, which he justly denounced a virtual auction, Mr. Francis recommended a settlement by the Provincial Councils. And he wished the manufacture of salt to be left to the holder or renter of the lands where it was made; the government requiring nothing but a duty. With these proposals the Governor-General signified no disposition to comply; but, after fresh commands from England, the average of the collections of the three preceding years was made the basis of the new engagements.

In their letter of the 4th of July, 1777, the Directors made the following severe reflections on the institution of the office of inquiry, and the separate authority which the Governor-General had taken to himself. "Our surprise and concern were great, on finding by our Governor-General's minute of 1st November, 1776, that after more than seven year's investigation, information is still so incomplete as to render another innovation, still more extraordinary than any of the former, absolutely necessary in order to the formation of a new settlement. In 1760, supervisors were appointed professedly to investigate the subject: in 1770, controlling councils of revenue were instituted; in 1772, the office of Naib Dewan was abolished, natives were discarded, and a Committee of Council formed, who, we were told, precisely and distinctly ascertained what was necessary to be known. and now, in 1777, two junior servants, with the assistance of a few natives, are employed to collect and digest materials, which have already undergone the collection, inspection, and revision of so many of our servants of all descriptions.—We should have hoped, that when you knew our sentiments respecting the conduct of our late administration, in delegating separate powers to their President, it would have been sufficient to prevent us further trouble on such occasions; but to our concern, we find that no sooner was our Council reduced, by the death of Colonel Monson, to a number which rendered the President's casting vote of consequence to him, than he exercised it to invest himself with an improper degree of power in the

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.

1777.

BOOK V. business of the revenue, which he could never have expected from other authority."¹

1773.

The same mode of settlement was renewed from year to year, till 1783, when a plan destined for permanence was adopted and employed.²

When Mr. Hastings was in the deepest deprecation, under the ascendancy of his opponents, a gentleman, of the name of Maclean, departed for England, and was intrusted with a variety of confidential affairs, as the private agent of the Governor-General. For the measures adopted against the *Bahadur*, Hastings had been censured by the Council of both Directors and Proprietors:³ and the Court of Directors had resolved to address the King for his removal. Upon this severe procedure, a Court of Proprietors was again convened; a majority of whom appeared assent to carry the condemnation to so great an extent, and voted, that the resolution of the Directors should be reconsidered. The business remained in suspense for some months, when Mr. Maclean informed the Court of Directors that he was empowered to tender the resignation of Mr. Hastings. If he resigned, a mere majority of the Proprietors, who appeared to be on his side, could restore him to the service. If he was dismissed, a mere majority would not be sufficient. In the letters by which the authority of Mr. Maclean was conveyed, confidential communications upon other subjects were con-

¹ *State Papers*, at *several* Appendices, Nos. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16. *Memorials of the Governor-General and Council of Fort William*, by Philip Francis, Esq.

² *First Report of the Committee of Indian Affairs*, 1783, p. 1.

³ This is not correctly stated. The Court of Directors passed resolutions condemning the principles of the *Bahadur* war, and they were confirmed by a Court of Proprietors, but with a very important modification, namely,—that "the Court had the highest opinion of the services and integrity of Warren Hastings, Esq., and could not admit a suspension of carriage, involving suspension on his conduct, without proof." Proceedings of a General Court, 10th December, 1773. The resolution to address the King, for the removal of the Governor, arose out of the charges preferred by the 14 members of the Council against Hastings and *Company*, the having taken bribes, or created even the shadow of bribery from various sources. This resolution passed the Court of Directors on the 10th of May, 1775; but, at a General Court, held on the 15th May, it was voted by 202 to 211, that the Court of Directors should reconsider their resolution. In the course of the following year, after an oral and paper discussion, the resolution was reconsidered, and all good use of Hastings' conduct proved, for the time. *MS. Records*. The substance of this discussion, and of that which follows, is to be seen, in full, from the *Minute Report of the Select Committee*; not, as it should have been, from the documents in the Appendix, which do not, in very many instances, as during the statements of the Report, influenced as they evidently are, by a spirit uniformly to favour Hastings.—*W.*

Island. On this account he represented the impossibility of his reporting there openly to the Court; but proposed, if they would appoint a confidential Committee of three, to communicate to them what was necessary for their satisfaction. The Chairman, Deputy-Chairman, and another Director were named. They reported, that they had seen Mr Hastings's instructions in his own hand writing, and that the authority of Mr. Malcolm for the proposed proceeding was clear and sufficient. Mr. Vansittart, and Mr. Stewart, both in the intimate friendship and confidence of Mr. Hastings, gave evidence that directions, perfectly correspondent to this written authority, had been given in their presence.' The two Chairmen alone concurred in the report. The third Director regarded not the authority as sufficiently proved. The

[illegible]

BOOK V. Directors proceeded upon the report : the resignation was
CHAP. 10. formally accepted : and a successor to Mr. Hastings was
 chosen. Mr. Walker was named ; presented to the King
 1777. for his approbation, and accepted. General Clavering, as
 senior Member of the Council, was empowered to occupy
 the chair till Mr. Walker should arrive. And on the 10th
 of June, 1777, intelligence of these proceedings was received
 in Bengal.

A scene of confusion, well calculated to produce the
 most fatal consequences, ensued. Mr. Hastings, who now
 possessed the power of the Council, refused to acknow-
 ledge the authority of his agent ; and declared his reso-
 lution not to resign. General Clavering claimed the attri-
 butes of supremacy ; and summoned the Members of
 Council to assemble under his auspices. Mr. Barwell at-
 tended upon the summons of the one, and Mr. Francis
 upon that of the other ; and two parties, each claiming
 the supreme authority, were now seen in action one
 against the other. An appeal to arms appeared, in these
 circumstances, the only medium of decision ; and Mr.
 Hastings showed his resolution to stand the result. The
 other party, it is probable, felt their influence inferior to
 his. At any rate they declined the desperate extremity of
 a civil war ; and finally offered to abide the award of the
 Supreme Court. The judges decided that Mr. Hastings
 had not vacated his office. This transaction was after-
 wards made the subject of a charge against him by those
 who moved for his impeachment ; but he accused the
 Directors of rashness and injustice, in taking such im-
 portant steps upon evidence which he affirmed would
 have been held, in a court of justice, insufficient to main-
 tain a decision for the transference of an article of pro-
 perty of the smallest amount.*

The power recovered by the Governor-General, and thus
 strenuously retained, was exhibited in other triumphs, of
 slender importance. One of the first mortifications to
 which he had been subjected upon the arrival of the hos-
 tile councillors, was the recall of his agent, Mr. Middleton,
 from the office of resident with the Nabob of Oude. It

* *Witch Inquiry, Select Committee, 1783, and Appendix, Nos. 107, 108, 109,
 112, 113, 114, 115. See also the charges, No. 5, and the answer of Mr.
 Hastings.*

was now his time to return the humiliation ; and on the 2nd of December, 1776, he moved in Council, "that Mr. Bristow should be recalled from the court of the Nabob of Oude, and that Mr. Middleton be restored to the office of resident." So far from imputing any blame to Mr. Bristow, the Governor-General acknowledged that he had commended his return. As the ground of his proceeding, he stated, that Mr. Middleton had been removed from his office without allegation of fault ; that he had a greater confidence in Mr. Middleton than in Mr. Bristow, and as the responsibility was laid upon him, it was but just that his agents should be chosen by himself. The measure was vehemently opposed by General Clavering and Mr. Francis ; the usual violence of altercation ensued ; Mr. Middleton was appointed, and Mr. Bristow recalled.

The part taken by Mr. Joseph Fowke in bringing forward the facts, whose imputations had been drawn upon the Governor-General himself, had excited a resentment, which, having formerly appeared only in bitter and contemptuous expressions, was now made manifest in acts. The son of that gentleman, Mr. Francis Fowke, had, on the 10th of August, 1775, been appointed by the Council, against the voice of the Governor-General, to proceed on a species of embassy to the new dependant of the Company, the Raps of Benares. On the same day on which the Governor-General moved for the recall of Mr. Bristow, he moved for that of Mr. Francis Fowke, which also, after strong opposition, was carried by his own casting vote. Mr. Fowke was recalled, and his commission annulled, on the express declaration, that "the purposes thereof had been accomplished." On the 23rd of the same month, a letter of the Governor-General and Council was written to the Court of Directors, in which the recall of Mr. Fowke was reported, and in which it was stated that the commission with which he had been invested was annulled, because the purposes for which it had been created were "fully accomplished ;" on the very day after the date of this despatch, the Governor-General moved in Council, and whatever he moved was sure of acceptance, that a civil servant of the Company, with an assistant, should be appointed to reside at Benares !

Upon both of these transactions, the Directors per-

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.

1775.

BOOK V. *continued* *condemnation.* In their general letter to Bengal, of the 4th of July, 1777, they say, "Upon the most careful perusal of your proceedings of the 2nd of December, 1776, relative to the recall of Mr. Bristow from the court of the Nabob of Oude, and the appointment of Mr. Nathaniel Middleton to that station, we must declare our strongest disapprobation of the whole of that transaction. And therefore direct, that Mr. Bristow do forthwith return to his station of resident at Oude, from which he has been so improperly removed." And in their letter of the 30th of January, 1778, "You inform us," they said, "in your secret letter of December, 1776, that the purposes for which Mr. Francis Fowke was appointed to proceed to Benares, being fully accomplished, you had annulled his commission, and ordered him to the Presidency. But it appears by your letter of the 6th of January, 1777, that in less than twenty days you thought proper to appoint Mr. Thomas Graham to reside at Benares, and Mr. David Octavius Barwell to be his assistant. If it were possible to suppose that a saving to the Company had been your motive for annulling Mr. Fowke's commission, we should have approved your proceedings. But when we find two persons appointed immediately afterwards, with two salaries, to execute an office which had been filled with reputation by Mr. Fowke alone, we must be of opinion that Mr. Fowke was removed without just cause; and therefore direct that Mr. Francis Fowke be immediately reinstated in his office of resident and post-master at Benares."

On the 30th of July, 1778, the commands of the Court of Directors, with regard to Mr. Fowke, came under the deliberation of the Governor and Council, when Mr. Hastings moved that the execution of these commands should be suspended. A compliance with them, he said, "would be adequate" (meaning equivalent) "to his own resignation of the service, because it would inflict such a wound on his authority, as it could not survive." He also alleged that intelligence might daily be expected from England of resolutions which would decide upon his situation in the service; and, notwithstanding the opposition of one-half of the Council, he decided, by his casting vote, that Mr. Fowke, in spite of the command of the Directors, should not be replaced.

On the 27th of May, 1778, the Court of Directors write, BOOK IV.
 "We have read with astonishment your formal resolution CHAP. III.
 to suspend the execution of our orders relative to Mr. 1778
 Francis Forbes. Your proceedings at large are now before us. We shall take such measures as appear necessary for preserving the authority of the Court of Directors, and for preventing such instances of direct and wilful disobedience in our servants in time to come. At present we repeat the commands contained in the sixty-seventh paragraph of our letter of the 30th January, 1778, and direct that they be carried into immediate execution."

The place rendered vacant in the Council, by the death of Colonel Monson, has been supplied, by the appointment of Whaler, who commonly voted with Francis; but as General Clavering died in the end of the month of August, 1777, the decisions of the Council were still, by his own casting vote, at the command of the Governor-General.

Another of the transactions, which, during the ascendancy of his opponents, had most deeply offended the Governor-General, was the subversion of his regulations respecting the government and household of the Nabob. As this, however, had obtained the sanction of the Court of Directors, and the appointment of Mohammed Ibra Khan in particular had met with their specific approbation, some colour for reversing these measures was very much to be desired. The period, at which the Nabob would come of age, was approaching. In the secret consultations on the 23rd of July, 1778, the Governor-General desired that a letter from the Nabob Mubarak-al-Dowla should be read. In this letter the Nabob stated that he had now, by the favour of God, arrived at that stage of life, his twentieth year, when the laws of his country assigned to him the management of his own affairs; he complained of the severity with which he had been treated by Mohammed Ibra Khan; and prayed that he might be relieved from this state of degrading tutelage, and allowed to assume the administration of his own government and affairs.

Mr. Whaler and Mr. Francis maintained, that it was

! The original documents respecting these transactions, may be found in the Appendix to the Fifth Report of the Select Committee, 1781; and in the Minutes of Evidence on the trial of Mr. Hastings.

BOOK IV. CHAP. III.
1773.

not competent for the delegated government of India to submit a regulation of so much importance, which had been directly confirmed by the Court of Directors; and that the requisition of the Nabob should be transmitted to England for the determination of the superior power. Mr. Hastings and Mr. Barwell insisted that justice admitted of no delay. It is remarkable, how these contending parties in India could reverse their plans, as often as their interests required that different aspects of the same circumstances should be held up to view. In 1773, when the party in opposition to the Governor-General meant to alter the regulations which he had formed, they represented it as their object "to recover the country government from the state of feebleness and insignificance, to which it was Mr. Hastings's avowed policy to reduce it." The Governor-General, in opposition to these pretences, declared, that "all the arts of policy cannot conceal the power by which these provinces are ruled; nor can all the arts of sophistry avail to transfer the responsibility of them to the Nabob, when it is as visible as the light of the sun, that they originate from our own government; that the Nabob is a mere pageant, without the shadow of authority, and even his most consequential agents receive their appointment from the recommendation of the company, and the express nomination of their servants." Notwithstanding these recorded sentiments, the Governor-General could now declare; "The Nabob's demands are grounded on positive rights, which will not admit of discussion. He has an incontestable right to the management of his own household. He has an incontestable right to the Nizamat; it is his by inheritance; the dependents of the Nizamat Adshut, and of the Peshawar, have been repeatedly declared by the Company, and by the government, to appertain to the Nizamat. For these reasons I am of opinion, that the requisitions contained in the Nabob's letter ought to be complied with." In the eagerness of his passions, the Governor-General, by asserting the incontestable right of the Nabob to all the powers

¹ *Speech of the Governor-General on the 25th December, 1773, P. 25. Report, at large, p. 104, and App. No. 2.*

² *Secret Consultations, vol. II. 1773. P. 25. Report, p. 10, App. No. 2 (B.)*

give Hastings uneasiness. On the 10th of October of the same year (1778), he was obliged to write to the Nabob BOOK V,
CHAP. III.

* That the affairs both of the Prouduary and Adalmut were in the greatest confusion imaginable, and that daily robberies and murders were perpetrated throughout the country;—that his dependants and people, actuated by selfish and avaricious views, had by their interference so impeded the business of justice, as to throw the whole country into a state of confusion."

 1778.

Meanwhile the report of this transaction was received in England: and the Court of Directors, in their letter of the 8th of February, transmit their sentiments upon it in the following terms: "We by no means approve your late proceedings on the application of the Nabob Mubareck ul Dowla for the removal of the Naib Subahdar. In regard to the Nabob's desire to take charge of his own affairs, we find it declared by one of your own members, and not contradicted, that the Nabob is, in his own person, utterly incapable of executing any of those offices which were deemed of essential importance to the welfare of the country. The Nabob's letters leave us no doubt of the true design of this extraordinary business being, to bring forward Muzry Begum, and again to invest her with improper power and influence, notwithstanding our former declaration, that so great a part of the Nabob's allowance had been embezzled, or misapplied under her superintendence. You have requested the inexperienced young men, to permit all the present judges and officers of the Nimmut and Prouduary Adalmuta, or courts of criminal justice, and also all the Prouduars or officers appointed to guard the peace of the country, to continue in office until *le Nabob shall have formed a plan for a new arrangement of these offices*: and it is with equal surprise and concern, that we observe this request introduced, and the Nabob's ostensible rights so solemnly asserted at this period by our Governor-General; because, on a late occasion, to serve a very different purpose, he has not scrupled to declare it as visible to the light of the sun, that the Nabob is a mere pagrant, and without even the shadow of authority. No circumstance has happened, since that declaration was made, to render the Nabob more independent, nor to give him any additional degree of power or consequence; you must

BOOK V. therefore have been well apprized that your late concessions to Mubarek-al-dowla were unnecessary, and as such unavarrantable. As we deem it for the welfare of the country, that the office of Naib Subahdar be for the present continued, and that this high office should be filled by a person of wisdom, experience, and approved fidelity to the Company; and as we have no reason to alter our opinion of Mohammed Reza Khan, we positively direct, that you forthwith signify to the Nubel Mubarek-al-dowla our pleasure, that Mohammed Reza Khan be immediately restored to the office of Naib Subahdar."†

1778.

The state of the relations between the Company's government and the Mahratta powers had for some time pressed with considerable weight upon the attention of the Council. The treaty which had been concluded by Colonel Upton, commonly distinguished by the title of the treaty of Poorender, had left the minds of the governing party at Poona, and those of the Bombay Presidency, in a state of mutual jealousy and dissatisfaction. The occupation of Salsette, and the other concessions which had been extracted, but above all the countenance and protection still afforded to Ragoba, rankled in the minds of the Poona ministry; while the Bombay rulers, condemned and frustrated by the Superior Council, but encouraged by the approbation of the Court of Directors, stood upon the watch for any plausible opportunity of evading or infringing the treaty. Colonel Upton, though he remained at Poona till the commencement of the year 1777, departed before any of the material stipulations had been carried into effect. Fatty Sing, as by the treaty it had been rendered his interest, disavowed his right to alternate

† Folly Report, *et cetera*, p. 32—33, and App. No. 1. Also the extracts against Mr. Hastings, &c. &c. with Mr. Hastings' answer. See also the evidence taken for the Prosecution and the Defence, in Minutes of Evidence, all supra.—H.

No comment is made upon the immorality of the Court, in their evading as the continuance in office of Mohammed Reza Khan, a person whom they had formerly accused of corruption, and sentenced to imprisonment. In all their meddling orders and opinions, the real state of things should be kept in view. The majority of the Court of Directors were friendly to the opponents of Hastings; the majority of the Court of Proprietors were his friends. In reliance on their support, the governor held his post and his paragon, in defiance of what he was continually regarded as the party spirit of the Directors; but their opposition, and that of his council, forced him to receive arguments and assign motives—framed to meet the majority of the assembly, and, therefore, consistent as much as was possible with themselves, as were the arguments of those by whom he was so vehemently and unreasonably opposed.—H.

in favour of the Company any portion of the Calcutta BOOK I.
 donations; and the Poona Council made use of the fa- CHAP. II.
 vour shown to Ragoba, as a pretext for delaying or evading 1779.
 the concessions they had made.

A new feature was soon added to these disputes, by the arrival of a French ship in one of the Mahratta ports, and the reception given at Poona to some gentlemen whom she landed, as on a mission from the king of France. This circumstance strongly excited the English jealousy and fears. The object at which the French were supposed to aim, was the establishment of a factory at Poona; and the acquisition of a sea-port on the coast of Malabar. These advantages would enable them, it was apprehended, to sustain a competition with the English in matters of trade, and to annoy them seriously in a period of war. The reservations of the Mahratta government, that nothing was in view prejudicial to the interests of the Company, gave little satisfaction. Colonel Upton, whose partiality was engaged to the treaty which he had concluded, and the party whom he served, accused the Bombay Presidency, and answered for the secrecy and pacific designs of the Mahrattas. Mr. Hastings leaned to the un-pacific side; his opponents urged the propriety of yielding consentment to the Mahrattas, especially by the abandonment of Ragoba. The probability of a rupture between France and England was already contemplated in India; and, as it was to be expected that the French would aim at the recovery of their influence in India, so Mr. Hastings, at least, thought that the western coast was the place where they had the best prospect of success; and the support of the Mahrattas was the means most likely to be adopted for the accomplishment of their ends.

The progress of inquiry respecting the agent from France discovered, that his name was St. Labin; that he was a more adventurer, who had opened to the French Minister of Marine a project, supported by exaggerated and false representations, for acquiring an influence in the Mahratta councils, and an establishment in the Mahratta country; and that he had been intrusted with a sort of clandestine commission as an experiment, for ascertaining if any footing or advantage might be gained. The presidency of Bombay represented to the Supreme Council, that St. Labin

BOOK V. received the most alarming countenance from the Poonah
CHAP. III. ministers; that nothing could be more dangerous to the
 Company, than a combined attack from the Mahrattas and
 French. And they urged the policy of participating the
 designs of their enemies, by espousing the cause of
 Ragoba; and putting us and to the power of men, who
 waited only till their schemes were ripe for execution, to
 begin an attack upon the Company. The Bombay Presi-
 dency were more emboldened in their impertinacy, by a
 letter from the Court of Directors, containing their objec-
 tions to the conduct of the Supreme Council in taking
 the negotiation with the Mahrattas out of the hand of the
 Bombay government, and on the treaty which the
 Supreme Council had concluded with the Poonah rulers.
 "We approved," said the Directors, "under every circum-
 stance, of keeping all territories and possessions ceded to
 the Company by Ragoba; and gave directions to the Presi-
 dencies of Bengal and Fort St. George to adopt such mea-
 sures as might be necessary for their preservation and de-
 fence. But we are extremely concerned to find, from the
 terms of the treaty concluded by Colonel Upton at Poonah,
 that so great a sacrifice has been improvidently made;
 and especially, that the important cession of Bassein to
 the Company by Ragoba has been rendered of no effect.
 We cannot but disapprove of the mode of interference of
 the Governor-General and Council, by sending an ambas-
 sador to Poonah without first consulting you, and of their
 determination to disavow and invalidate the treaty for-
 merly entered into by an agent from your Presidency, and
 solemnly ratified under the seal of the Company. We are
 convinced that Bassein, which is so great an object with
 us, might have been obtained if they had authorized you
 to treat either with Ragoba, or with the ministers at Poonah;
 reserving the final approval and ratification of the
 treaty to themselves. This is the precise line we wish to
 have drawn; and which we have directed our Govern-
 ment-General and Council in future to pursue. We are of opi-
 nion, that an alliance originally with Ragoba would have
 been more for the honour and advantage of the Company,
 and more likely to be lasting, than that concluded at
 Poonah. His pretensions to the supreme authority appear
 to us better founded than those of his competitors; and

therefore, if the conditions of the treaty of Pooreh have not been strictly fulfilled on the part of the Mahattas, and if, from any circumstance, our Governor-General and Council shall deem it expedient, we have no objection to an alliance with Ragobh, on the terms agreed upon between him and you."

While these circumstances were under the consideration of the Supreme Council at Calcutta, intelligence arrived, that the rivalry of Secaram Baloo and Nana Funnaroo had produced a division in the Council at Pooreh, that a part of the ministers, with Secaram Baloo at their head, had resolved to declare for Ragobh; that they had applied for the assistance of the English to place in his hands the powers of government; and that the Presidency of Bombay had resolved to co-operate with them in his favour. This subject produced the usual train of debate and contention in the supreme Council; where Mr. Francis and Mr. Wheeler condemned the resolution of the president and Council of Bombay, first, as illegal, because not taken with the approbation of the supreme authority; next, as unjust, by infringing the treaty; and finally, impolitic, by increasing the dangers and burdens of war. The Governor-General and Mr. Barwell approved it, as authorized by the suddenness and greatness of the emergency, and the declared sentiments of the Court of Directors; as not unjust, since the principal party with whom the treaty was forced now applied for the interference of the Company; and as not impolitic, because it anticipated the evil designs of a hostile party, and gave to the Company an accession of territorial revenue, while it promised them a permanent influence in the Mahattia councils. It was resolved, in consequence, that a supply of money and a reinforcement of troops should be sent to the Presidency of Bombay. The Governor-General proposed that a force should be assembled at Calcutta, and should march by the most practicable route to Bombay. This also gave rise to a warm debate, both on the policy of the plan, and the danger of sending a detachment of the Company's army to traverse India through the dominions of princes, whose disposition had not been previously ascertained. It was finally determined, that the force should consist of six battalions of Sepoys, one com-

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.
1778.

BOOK V

CHAP. III.

1778.

pany of native artillery, and a corps of cavalry; that it should be commanded by Colonel Leslie; and anticipate, by its expedition, the obstruction of the rains. That commander was instructed to take his route through the province of Benar, of which the rulers were friendly; to obtain, where possible, the consent of the princes or chiefs, through whose territories he might have occasion to pass; but even when refused, to pursue his march; to be careful in preventing injury to the country or inhabitants; to allow his course to be retarded by the pursuit of no extraneous object; and to consider himself under the command of the Bombay presidency from the commencement of his march. That Presidency were at the same time instructed to use their utmost endeavours to defeat the machinations of the French; to insist upon the execution of the treaty; to take advantage of every change of circumstances for obtaining beneficial concessions to the Company; and, if they observed any violation of the treaty, or any refusal to fulfil its terms, to form a new alliance with Ragoba, and concert with him the best expedients for retrieving his affairs.

In the mean time another change had taken place in the fluctuating administration at Poona. The party of Sircarao Bahoo had prevailed over that of Nana Furnavase without the co-operation of Ragoba; and it was immediately apprehended at Bombay, that they would no longer desire to admit as an associate, a party who would supersede themselves. The arguments, urged upon this change, by Mr. Francis and Mr. Wheeler, did not succeed in stopping the march of the troops; because the unsettled state of the government of Poona, and the machinations of the French, rendered it highly expedient, in the opinion of the Governor-General, that the Presidency of Bombay should be furnished with sufficient power, both to guard against dangerous, and to take advantage of favourable, circumstances and events.

The detachment experienced some slight obstruction at the commencement of its march, from some of the petty Mahratta chiefs; upon which, as indicating danger of its proceeding any farther, Mr. Francis renewed his importunities for his recall. Mr. Hastings opposed his arguments, on the ground, that after a few days' march the troops

would arrive in Bundelcund, which was independent of the Mahrattas; would thence pass into the territories of the Raja of Berar, in which they would be received with friendship, that, on quitting the territories of the Raja, more than two-thirds of the march would be completed; that the consent of the Peshwa had been obtained; and that the Mahratta chiefs, whatever their inclinations, were too much engaged in watching the designs of one another, to be able to oppose the detachment.

Various were the orders by which its movements were affected. The Presidency at Bombay, having taken up hopes that the prevailing party at Poona would favour the views of the English, and dismiss the agents of the French, wrote a first letter to the detachment, requiring them to halt, and wait till subsequent directions; and presently thereafter another letter, desiring them to prosecute the march. In the meantime, intelligence had reached Calcutta, that war was declared between the English and the French. Upon this, instructions were despatched to Colonel Leslie by the Supreme Council, not to advance, till further orders, beyond the limits of Berar.

According to the Governor General, the Company had nothing to dread from the efforts of the French, at either Calcutta or Madras: it was the western coast on which, both from the weakness of Bombay, and the inclinations of the Mahratta government, those enemies of the English had any prospect of success; and where it most behoved the servants of the Company to provide against their attempts. He recommended a connexion with some of the leading powers of the country; pointed out the Raja of Berar as the prince with whom it was most desirable to combine; and mentioned two services by which the co-operation of that Prince might be secured. One of these services was to assist him in the recovery of the dominions which had been wrested from him by Nizam Ali. The other was to support him as a pretension to the Mahratta Regency. The legitimate, but impotent King of the Mahrattas, had recently died in his captivity at Saciarah, without leaving issue: and the Raja of Berar, as a branch of the house of Sivajee, might urge a claim to the succession. In pursuance of these objects, an embassy to the court of Berar was voted by the majority,

00000 V.
CHAP. III.
—————
1778.

BOOK V. and despatched. In the meantime another revolution
 CHAP. III. had arisen in the government at Poona. The party of
 1773. Siccaram Baboo was upon overthrown; and that of Nana
 Furnavese exalted by the powerful co-operation of Madajee
 Sindia. The party of Nana still appeared to favour the
 French. The defeated party, now led by a chief named
 Moonda, as the age of Siccaram Baboo in a great measure
 disqualified him for business, were eager to combine with
 the English in raising Ragoba; and the Presidency of
 Bombay had no lack of inclination to second their de-
 signs. A resolution to this effect was passed on the 21st
 of July, 1773, but it was not till the beginning of No-
 vember that any step was taken for its execution. The
 activity of the Presidency had been repressed by acts of
 the confinement of the leading members of the party at
 Poona, from whom they expected assistance, and by
 instructions from the Supreme Council not to pursue any
 measures which might interfere with the object of the
 embassy to Madajee Sindia, the Regent of Serar. Early
 however, in November, a plan of operations was concerted;
 a treaty was concluded with Ragoba; a loan to a con-
 siderable amount was advanced to him; and, upon in-
 telligence that the ruling party at Poona had penetrated
 their designs, and were making preparations to defeat
 them, it was determined to send forward one division of the
 army immediately, and the rest with all possible despatch.

The force which was sent upon this enterprise amounted
 in all to nearly 4500 men. A committee, consisting of
 Colonel Egerton, Mr. Carnac, a member of the Select Com-
 mittee, and Mr. Moutyn, formerly agent of the Presidency
 at Poona, were appointed a Committee for superintending
 the expedition, and settling the government at Poona.
 The army set out about the beginning of December; on
 the 23rd completed the ascent of the mountains, and
 arrived at Conkola. The enemy now, for the first time,
 appeared. From the head of the Ghaut, or pass, which
 they secured by a fortified post, the English, on the 4th
 of January, began their march toward Poona, with a
 stock of provisions for twenty-five days. They were op-
 posed by a body of troops, who retired as they advanced,
 but cut off their supplies, and seized every opportunity
 to harass and impede them. They were not joined, as

they had encouraged themselves to expect, by any chief of importance, or numbers to any considerable amount. And it was in vain, as they were informed by Ragoba, to hope, that his friends and adherents would declare themselves, till the English, by some important operations and success, held out to them a prospect of safety. The army continued to advance till the 9th of January, when, at the distance of about sixteen miles from Poona, and eighteen from the summit of the pass, they found an army assembled to oppose them. The Committee, to whom, by a strange policy, the command of a military expedition was consigned, began to despair; and, on learning from the commissary in chief, that only eighteen days' provisions were in stock, and from the officer commanding the force, that he could not protect the baggage, without a body of horse, they made up their minds to a retreat. It commenced on the night of the 11th. But secrecy had not been preserved; and they were attacked by the enemy before daybreak; when they lost a part of their baggage, and above three hundred men. It was not until four o'clock in the afternoon that the enemy desisted from the pursuit, when the English had effected their retreat as far as Wangran. Hope now deserted not only the Committee, but the Commander of the troops; who declared it impossible to carry back the army to Bombay.* An embassy was sent to the Mahratta camp to try upon what terms they could have leave to return. The surrender of Ragoba was demanded as a preliminary article. That unfortunate chief was so impressed with the danger of waiting another attack, that he had declared his intention of surrendering himself to Sindia, and had been in con-

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.
continued
1778.

* Mr. Shadys was then taken ill, and returned to Bombay, where he died. On arriving at Tellicoona, Colonel Pigot was obliged to suspend the command till doctor Laidley recovered, and continued to act as a Member of the Committee. In either capacity, he must be considered as proceeding unaccountably far the Limits of the Commission. After covering his retreat, the necessity of the army was so great, that it had advanced but eight miles to the westward, without any notice for such a retrograde movement; and when it became a question what was to be done, Colonel Dalhousie expressed his doubts of making good the march to Poona, and other well-considered efforts were of opinion, that as long they shrank, when they ground under the weight of their march on. History of Madras, II. 265.—W.

* Captain Hurrell, who had distinguished himself in command of the regiment during the retreat, proposed a plan by which it might be effected. The scheme failed, however, disappointed of its accomplishment. Hist. of Madras, II. 272.—W.

BOOK V. correspondence with that chieftain for several days; the
 CHAP. III. Committee were less scrupulous, therefore, in bartering
 1773. his safety for their own. When this compliance was
 announced, and the English expected a corresponding
 facility on the part of the Mahrattas, the leaders of that
 people informed them, that the surrender of Ragoba was
 a matter of the utmost indifference; that the treaty,
 which had been concluded with Colonel Upton, had been
 shamefully violated; the territory of the Mahrattas in-
 vaded; and that unless a new treaty were formed upon
 the spot, the army must remain where it was, and abide
 the consequences. The declaration of the Committee,
 that they possessed not powers to conclude a treaty, was
 disregarded. The commanding officer declared, that the
 attempt to force a retreat could lead to nothing but the
 total destruction of the army. It was, therefore, agreed
 to submit to such conditions as the Mahrattas might
 impose; and a treaty was signed, by which all the ac-
 quisitions were relinquished, which had been made in
 these parts by the English, since the treaty with Madho
 Rao in 1754; Baroach was given up to Sindia;¹ Ragoba
 placed in his hands; the detachment from Bengal was
 ordered to return; and two Englishmen of distinction
 were left as hostages for the due fulfilment of the terms.

No approbation could be more complete than that which
 was bestowed by the Court of Directors on the object of
 this expedition. In a letter from the Committee of Se-
 cretary, dated the 31st of August, 1778, "The necessity,"
 they say, "of counteracting the views of the French at
 Poona appears to us so very striking, that we not only
 direct you to frustrate their designs of obtaining a grant
 of the port of Choul, but also to oppose by force of arms,
 if necessary, their forming a settlement at that or any
 other place which may render them dangerous neighbours
 to Bombay. As the restoration of Ragoba to the Pesh-
 waship is a measure upon which we are determined; and
 as the evasions of the Mahratta chiefs, respecting the
 treaty of Poona, justify any departure therefrom on our

¹ It was the policy of the Committee to appeal to Sindia, which, as Captain Grant observes, flattered him exceedingly, and attended with his plans of policy: but, nevertheless, sought himself of the opportunity to take every ad-
 vantage of the British, as far as was consistent with the control he wished to
 preserve over Sate Purnarrao. *Mahratta History*, v. 337.—G.

part, we, therefore, direct, that if, on the receipt of this letter, you shall be able to obtain assistance from the friends of Bagoba, and with such assistance find yourselves in force sufficient to effect his restoration without dangerously weakening your garrison, you forthwith undertake the same." In proportion to the satisfaction which would have been expressed upon a fortunate termination of this enterprise, was the displeasure manifested upon its failure. "The first object which strikes us," say the Directors, "is the slow progress of the army. Thus we deem an irreparable injury to the service; and in this respect the conduct of the Commander-in-Chief appears extremely defective. The consequence was obvious; the enemy had full opportunity to collect their strength; the friends of Bagoba, instead of being encouraged by the spirited exertions of our force, to join his standard, went, as we conceive, have been deterred from declaring in his favour, by the language of our military proceedings." They condemn the first resolution to retreat, when "the army was so far advanced, the troops full of spirits and integrity, and eighteen days' provisions in store." And the utmost measure of their indignation and resentment is poured on the humiliating submission which was at last preferred to the resolution of a daring, though hazardous retreat; preferred, on the pretext that the troops would not again resist the enemy, though they had behaved with the utmost intrepidity on the former attack; and though Captain Hartley declared that he could depend upon his men, urged every argument in favour of resolute measures, and even formed and presented to the commanding officer a disposition for conducting the retreat. The two military officers who had shared in the conduct of the expedition, the Directors dismissed from their service; and the only remaining member of the Field Committee, who had been selected from the civil branch of the service, for one had died during the march, they degraded from his office, as a member of the Council and Select Committee of Bombay.

The detachment which was proceeding from Bengal had wasted much time on its march, having advanced as far as Chatterpore, a principal city of Baidelcore, early in June, it halted till the middle of August. During this

BOOK V. 1800. when the rains, according to Colonel Leslie, interrupted; according to the Governor-General, favoured the march; the commander of the troops engaged himself in negotiations and transactions with the local chiefs; measures severely condemned by his superiors, and very open to the suspicion of selfish and dishonourable motives. The President and Council of Bombay, on the receipt of intelligence of a rupture with France, had earnestly exhorted him by letter to accelerate his motions. They renewed their solicitations on the 11th of July, when they came to the resolution of supporting Ragoba. And they urged the delay of this detachment, and the uncertainty of its arrival, as a reason for having undertaken the expedition to Poona, without waiting for that addition of strength which its union and co-operation would have bestowed. Dissatisfied with the long inactivity of the detachment at Chatterpore, the Supreme Council wrote to the commanding officer on the 31st of August, desiring him to explain the reasons of his conduct, and to pursue the march. He had put himself in motion about the middle of the month, and was at Rajagar on the 17th, where a party of Mahabhatas disrupted the passage of the river Kana. On the 17th of September he despatched a letter to the Supreme Council from Rajagar, where he still remained, stating, that the retardation of the detachment had been occasioned by the weather; that he had concluded friendly engagements with Gouda Sing and Konda Sing, two Rajas of Bundelcund; and had received satisfactory assurances from Moudjee Booda, the Regent of Benar, to whom the proposition of an embassy from the English rulers appeared to have yielded peculiar gratification.¹

The person² who had been chosen to conduct this em-

¹ The arguments of the Court of Directors were not applicable to the attempted advance. In their letter of the 14th of May, 1800, to the Governor-General and Council, they say: "The undertaking appears to us contrary to the Company's former policy, to our engagements with Ragob, and Frank All, and doubtful respect to any reasonable prospect of advantage." And, in another letter, dated on the 11th of the same month, to the President and Select Committee of Bombay, they say: "We earnestly hope, that upon your repulse and reply to Ragoba being communicated to our Governor-General and Council, they will recover with you to giving full effect thereto, and abstain from entering into any new conditions which may yet add or diminish your recent agreements with Ragoba." *South Report, Committee of Secrecy, 1800, p. 84.*

² Mr. Elphinstone, he died on the 12th September. -*W.*

knay, died upon the journey, before he reached the capital of Bomee. After some fluctuation of opinion, it was determined not to continue the negotiation by appointing a successor; but rather to wait in expectation of some advances from the Regent.

BOOK V
CHAP. III.
—————
1778.

The party of Mr. Fauson now urgently pressed for a distinct declaration of the design with which the detachment on its way to the western Presidency, was directed to continue its march. There was not only a complication, they affirmed, but a contrariety of objects; the alliance for raising Moudajee Borda to the throne of his ages, being inconsistent with the scheme for establishing Ragoba in the office of Peshwa. The Governor-General, without any detailed explanation, alleged that the reinstatement of Ragoba had never been pursued as an end, but only as a means; that his hopes and expectations were placed on Moudajee; that the detachment, whether its services should be required for the restoration of Ragoba, or in prosecution of engagements with Moudajee, or in opposing the French, ought equally to continue its march. The opposite party once more urged in vain their reasons for its recall. But all parties agreed in condemning Colonel Leslie for the delay which he had incurred, and the engagements which he had formed; in pronouncing him unfit to be any longer intrusted with the command which he held; and in transmitting orders that he should resign it to Colonel Goddard, the officer next in command. Leslie, however, survived not to receive the intelligence of his disgrace; nor to produce, it ought to be remembered, what he might have urged in vindication of his conduct. He was an officer of experience and reputation. It is known, that he held a high language, that he complained of the Governor-General, to whom, by his special directions, he had communicated a private journal of his transactions, and to whom he had treated for the explanation of his proceedings. But no inference can safely be founded on the allegation that the Governor-General, who had previously defended his conduct, was informed of the deadly nature of his disease, and the hopelessness of his recovery, at the time when he condemned him and voted for his recall.

By the death of Leslie, the command devolved on
VOL. IV. D

BOOK V. Colonel Goddard on the 2nd of October. On the 23rd
 year. III. he wrote a private letter to the Governor-General, inform-
 ing him of the progress which the detachment had made
 1772. towards the Nerbudda, or the boundary of Berar. At the
 same time with the letter from Colonel Goddard, arrived
 despatches from Moodajee, expressing his lamentation
 upon the death of the late ambassador, and his hopes that
 such an event would not frustrate the plan of friendship
 which it had been the object of that embassy to establish.
 Upon the receipt of these letters, the Governor-General
 moved, that the negotiation with Moodajee Banda should
 be resumed; and that powers to treat with him should
 be committated to Colonel Goddard. The opposite party
 contended, that an alliance with the Begum of Berar
 would be equivalent to a declaration of war against Nizam
 Ali, and involve the Carnatic in misfortune; that neither
 did Colonel Goddard possess the qualifications of a nego-
 tiator, nor did the duties of his command enable him to
 devote his mind to the business which a negotiator was
 required to perform; and that the Presidency of Bombay,
 under whose orders the detachment had been placed, might
 take measures in favour of Ragoba, with which the instruc-
 tions which might be given in regard to Moodajee would
 not be reconcilable.

On the 7th of December, after intelligence had arrived
 of the second revolution at Poona, which the Governor-
 General regarded as defeating the original design upon
 which the assistance of the detachment had been sent to
 Bombay, he proposed that it should no longer act under
 the orders of that Presidency, but the designs of those
 rulers should defeat the negotiations with Moodajee, in-
 trusted to Colonel Goddard. While this proposition was
 under debate, a despatch was received from the resident
 at Poona, stating his expectation of being immediately
 recalled, as the Select Committee at Bombay had deter-
 mined to proceed against the governing party at Poona.
 After this intelligence, the proposition of the Governor-
 General, for retaining the detachment of Colonel Goddard
 under the immediate authority of the Supreme Council,
 received the sanction of the Board. In the meantime
 Moodajee Banda, for whose alliance so much anxiety was
 expressed, had written an evasive letter to Colonel God-

ard, dated the 23rd of November; manifesting pretty clearly a wish to embroil himself as little as possible either with the English or with the Poonah confederacy. Goddard crossed the Nerbuddah on the 1st of December; and sent an agent to Nagpore, to ascertain how far he might depend upon Moodjee. In conclusion, he inferred, that no engagement could be formed between that chieftain and the English; but that a friendly conduct might be expected toward the detachment, while it remained in his dominions.

By this time the army of Bombay was on its march to Poonah. But though Colonel Goddard had transmitted regular intelligence of his movements to Bombay, he had received no communications from that quarter; and remained in total ignorance of their designs, except from some intimations communicated by Moodjee, that an expedition against Poonah was in preparation. Uncertain as was the ground upon which he had to proceed, he had come to the determination, that the balance of probabilities required his proceeding to Poonah; when he received despatches from the Council at Bombay, unfolding what they had done, and what they were intending to do; and pressing it upon him to march to Poonah, with the smallest possible delay. To the question why the Presidency at Bombay had not sooner made Colonel Goddard acquainted with the design of the expedition, and taken the precautionary steps for securing co-operation between his detachment and their own, the answer must be, either that they overlooked not the degree of reflection necessary for that moderate display of wisdom; or that they wished to have to themselves the glory of setting up a Maratha government; or that, to avoid the expense of the detachment, they wished it not to arrive. Moodjee, who was afraid to embroil himself with the Poonah government, if he gave a passage to the troops of Goddard, and with the English government if he refused it, was very earnest with him to wait till he received satisfactory letters from Calcutta. But, notwithstanding his solicitations, Goddard, on the 15th of January, began his march from the banks of the Nerbudda.

He took the great road to Boorhanpoor and Poonah and arrived at Chareah on the 22nd, where he received

DOKE V. intelligence that the army from Bombay had advanced
 CHAP. III. as far as the Bernaghat, a place fifty miles distant from
 ————— Poonah.

1775.

On the 24th, he received a letter dated the 11th, from the Field Committee, who conducted the Bombay expedition, representing, that in consequence of an alteration which had taken place in the state of affairs, it was not expedient he should advance; that he should either proceed to Surat, if he found himself in a condition to make his way in spite of the Mahratta power, by whom his march would be annoyed; or remain in the territories of the Raja of Berar, till further instructions. This letter placed him in a state of perfect uncertainty, whether the Bombay army had sustained a disaster which cut off their hopes, or had so flattering a prospect of success, that all additional force was accounted unnecessary. On the next day a letter arrived from the Council at Bombay, accurately written without a knowledge of the circumstances which dictated the letter of the Field Committee, and urging him to proceed. Under the perplexity which this lack of information, and discrepancy of injunctions, inspired, he resolved to proceed to Boorhanpoor, in hopes of obtaining intelligence, and arrived at that ancient capital on the 30th.

There, on the 2nd of February, he received another letter from the Field Committee, dated on the 10th of January, more mysterious than any which had yet arrived. It shortly cautioned him against obeying the order in their letter of the 18th, which on better consideration they deemed themselves incompetent to give. Goddard could ill conjecture the meaning of this warning, as he had not received the letter of the 10th; but he believed that it indicated evil rather than good; and saw well the dangers which surrounded him in the heart of the Mahratta country, if any serious disaster, which might produce a change in the mind of Moodjee himself, had befallen the army from Bombay. He waited at Boorhanpoor till the 5th, in hopes of receiving more certain information, when he was made acquainted with the nature of the disaster pretty exactly by Moodjee. He resolved to retreat to Surat, and marched on the 6th. On the 9th a valcool arrived from the Poonah government, bearing the letter written

by the Field Committee on the 18th of January. It was the letter in which, under the dictation of the Mahattas, they had commanded his immediate return to Bengal. This injunction it was the business of the vakeel to enforce. But Goddard replied, that he was marching to Bombay in obedience to the orders of the Supreme Council, and with the most friendly intentions toward the Mahatta state. The march was conducted with great expedition. The troops were kept in such exact discipline, that the people having nothing to fear remained in their houses, and supplied the army by sale with every convenience for the march. They arrived at Surat on the 30th; a distance of nearly three hundred miles, in nineteen days.¹

In consequence of these events, it was resolved at the Supreme Board, to vest Colonel Goddard with full powers for treating with the Poonaish government, to dissolve the convention concluded with the Bombay committee; but to express a desire for accommodation on the basis of the treaty of Poorender, if the Mahattas, on their part, would afford encouragement by re-acquiring all claims founded on that convention, and by a promise of forming no connexion, either commercial or political, with the French. If they should reject these proposals, Colonel Goddard, when the Supreme Council now promoted to the rank of general, was empowered to recommence the war, and if possible to form connections with the head of the Guikarnar family, and the government of Berar.

Goddard had commenced his correspondence with the Poonaish ministry, when Ragoba made his escape, and repaired to Surat, where he recovered an asylum. Discordance prevailed among the Mahatta chiefs, and much uncertainty hung over their proceedings. Dissensions broke out between Kana and Sarda, by whose united power Shumser and Morcha had been subdued. With profusion

¹ It is worthy of remark, that Grey of the Viceroy's Bombay Force at the capture and arrival of the great British ship, was at the time engaged at sea, in the service of a private war, and that, till the Supreme Council became convinced, disapproved of all acts of violence, but forbade its opposing with a the resources of the Company. See the Letter from Governor-General to Directors, dated 15th January, 1818. See also Report to the Secret Committee, Appendix, No. 1st.—M. It is still more worthy of remark, that by the expedition of 1. the march, the detachment consisted of 10,000 men, and that Poonaish to accompany them.—W.

BOOK V. of a desire for peace, they kept clear from definite terms; CHAP. III. reports were received of their preparations for war; and negotiation lingered till the 20th of October, when Goddard sent his declaration, that if a satisfactory answer to his proposals was not returned, in fifteen days, he should consider the delay as a declaration of war. A reply arrived on the 28th. Without the surrender of Ragoba, and the restoration of Salsette, it was declared that the Mahatta powers would make no agreement. The General upon this broke off the negotiation, and repaired to Bombay, to concert with that Council the plan of hostilities.

The President and Council of Bombay had received, with considerable indignation, the intelligence of the power, independent of themselves, with which General Goddard had been invested at the Superior Board. They regarded it as an encroachment upon the rights conveyed to them, both by the act of parliament, and the commands of the Directors; and they had declared that they would sustain no responsibility for any of his acts. At first they alleged the great exhaustion of their resources, as a reason against taking any considerable part in the war, but when the General held up, as the first object of his operations, the acquisition, on which they had long fixed their affections, of a territorial revenue adequate to all the demands of the Presidency, they agreed to supply as great a portion of their troops, as the security of Bombay would allow; and furnished him with powers and instructions to treat with Putty Sing Guikavar, whose assistance, as placing a friendly country in the rear, it was of the greatest importance to obtain. With regard to Ragoba it was proposed to feed him with such hopes, as should secure the advantage of his name; but to engage themselves as short a way as possible for a share in the advantages of the undertaking, to the success of which it was so little in his power to contribute.

On the 2nd of January, 1780, General Goddard had crossed the Tapti, with a view both to stimulate the good inclinations of Putty Sing, and to reduce the fortress of Dabhoj. On the 19th the army appeared before the place. On the next day it was evacuated by the enemy, when the whole district, yielding by estimate a revenue of two lacs of rupees, was taken possession of in the name

of the Company. On the 25th, Potty Sing was at last, with some difficulty, brought to trust so far in the power of the Company, as to accede to the terms proposed; and it was agreed that the Gzerat country should be divided between the Company and himself, the Company obtaining that proportion which had formerly accrued to the Mah-ratta; and the remainder being rendered independent of the Peshah government, and freed from every exterior claim. Being pained by the cruelty of this chief, the General marched towards Ahmedabad, the capital of the province, before which he arrived on the 10th of February, and in five days carried it by storm, with inconsiderable loss. The united armies of Sindha and Holkar, amounting to 40,000 men, were in the mean time advancing towards Surm. The English General, by rapid marches, arrived in the neighbourhood of their encampment, near Brodera, on the 8th of March, and intended to attack them in the night, but was prevented by a letter from one of the gentlemen, left as hostages with Sindha, signifying that propositions were made by the Mahatta chiefs of a desire to establish unity with the English government. Of this desire, Sindha afforded a favourable indication the following day, by sending back the hostages, and along with them a vakeel, or commissioner, who acknowledged the hatred borne by his master to Nizam Ferozpoor, and his desire of a separate arrangement with the English. Upon farther explanation it appeared, that he was anxious to get into his hands Ragoba and his son, as an instrument for approaching himself to the Mahatta state; a proposition to which General Goddard would by no means accede. Sindha, at the same time, was offering terms to General Row, the brother and opponent of Potty Sing, and had actually received him in his camp. Not convinced of his sincerity, and suspecting his design to waste the season, till the commencement of the rains, when he would return home to the business of his government, and to his intrigues, General Goddard was desirous of forcing him to a battle, which he constantly avoided, by retreating, as the English army advanced. To defeat this stratagem, the General, on the 3rd of April, marched silently from his camp, about two o'clock in the morning, with four battalions of Sepoy grenadiers, four companies of European

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.
1780.

BOOK V. Infantry, and twelve pieces of field artillery. The distance
 CHAP. III. was about seven miles to the camp of the enemy, which he
 1780. entered at dawn. He reached the very centre of the encampment before he was perceived. The enemy were thrown into their usual confusion; and, though some troops were collected, and made a show of resistance, they soon abandoned their camp, and occupied a neighbouring ground. The English made no delay in proceeding to charge them, when the Mahrattas dispersed, and left them masters not only of the field, but of the country in which it was contained. A detachment from Bombay took possession also of Parak, Bellagere, Panvel, and Callia, and extended the territory of the Presidency along the coast and towards the passes of the hills in the way to Poona. On the 6th of April the General was joined by six companies of European infantry, and a company of artillery, which had been sent to his assistance from Madras; and about the same time five companies of Sepoys arrived for him at Surat. As the rainy season had now commenced, Sindia and Holkar withdrew into their own countries; and the General, after sending back the Bombay detachment, put his troops into winter-quarters, and prepared for the succeeding campaign.

Sir Eyre Coote, who had been appointed to succeed General Clavering, both as Commander-in-Chief, and as a member of the Supreme Council, had arrived at Calcutta in the beginning of April, 1780; and without showing an unvarying deference to the opinions of the Governor-General, commonly supported his measures. Early in November of that year, as consequence of an application from the Raja of Gohud, commonly known by the name of the Rana, a Hindu chieftain or prince, who governed a hilly district of considerable extent, lying on the Aruma, between the territories of Sindia and the Nabob of Oude; the Governor-General proposed a treaty, by which the Rana might be empowered to call for the assistance of the English against the Mahrattas, of whom he stood in constant danger, and should agree to assist the English with his forces, when they should undertake any enterprises against the contiguous powers. The Governor-General, who contemplated the continuance of the war with the Mahrattas, proposed this alliance, both as a barrier against

an invasion, in that direction, of the territory of the Company or their allies; and as an advantage for invading the territory of the Mahratta, and operating a diversion in favour of the enterprises which might be undertaken on the side of Bombay. The measure was opposed by the opposite side of the Board, both on the ordinary and general ground of the importance of abstaining from war, and also on consideration of the weakness of the Raja, who had few troops, and not revenue to pay even them; whose aid, in consequence, would be of little avail, and his protection a serious burden. In the objections of the opposing party the General concurred; and even transmitted his protest against the terms of the connexion. But, as he was absent, the casting vote of the Governor-General gave his opinion the superiority, and the treaty was formed.

In the meantime intelligence arrived by a letter from General Coote, dated the 10th of November, of an invasion of the territory of the Raja, by a body of Mahrattas, whom his want of resources made it impossible for him to resist. Instructions were despatched to afford him such assistance as the exigency of the case might require, and the state of the English force permitted. A detachment of the company's army had been prepared in that quarter, under the command of Captain Popham, for the purpose of augmenting the force of Gokul; but from the consideration, partly that they could not arrive in time on the Bombay coast, partly that they might contribute to the success of his operations by an attack upon the part which was nearest of the Mahratta frontier, they had not been commanded to proceed; and in the beginning of February, 1780, they were sent to the assistance of the Raja of Gokul. Captain Popham found means in this service of distinguishing his enterprises and talents. With a small force, and little assistance from the Raja, he expelled the Mahrattas from Gokul; crossed the Sind, into their own territory; laid siege to the fortress of Lohar, the capital of the district of Cutchwagar; and having effected an imperfect breach, which the want of heavy cannon enabled him not to complete, he, on the first of April, successfully assaulted and took possession of the fort.

It had, however, been importunately urged, both by

BOOK V. Coote and Goddard, and was acknowledged by the Governor-General, that the force employed on the Malabar frontier under Captain Popham, was far from adequate to any such important operations as could materially affect the result of the war. After some fluctuations of plan, and great debate and opposition at the Superior Board, in which Mr. Francis in particular vehemently opposed the extension of military efforts, it was determined that a detachment of three battalions, stationed at Cawnpore, under Major Camac, with a battalion of light infantry, under Captain Brown, should threaten or invade the territories of Bindee and Holkar. In the meantime Captain Popham, with the true spirit of military ardour, after securing with great activity the conquest of the district of Cashnagar, turned his attention to the celebrated fortress of Goolier, situated within the territory of the Rase of Geland, but wrested from his father, and now garrisoned by the Mah-rattas. This fortress was situated on the summit, three miles in extent, of a stupendous rock, scarped almost entirely round, and defended by a thousand men. By the princes of Hindustan it had always been regarded as impregnable. And Sir Eyre Coote himself, in his letter to the Supreme Council, dated the 21st of April, had pronounced it "totally repugnant to his military ideas, and even absolute madness," to attack it with so feeble a detachment, and without a covering army to keep off the Mahattas in the field, and preserve the line of communication. Captain Popham moved to the village of Ripore about five miles distant from Goolier, and employed his spies in continually searching if a spot fit for encamping could be found. After many and dangerous experiments, they at last brought him advice that one point only afforded any appearance of practicality. At this place the height of the scarp was about sixteen feet, from the scarp to the wall was a steep ascent of about forty yards, and the wall itself was thirty feet high. "I took the resolution," says Captain Popham, "immediately. The object was glorious; and I made a disposition to prevent, as much as in my power, the chance of tarnishing the honour of the attempt, by the loss we might sustain in case of a repulse." At break of day, on the 3rd of August, the van of the storming party arrived at the foot of the rock. Wooden ladders

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.

1780.

were applied to the scorp, and the troops ascended to the feet of the wall. The saps checked up, and fired the rope ladders, when the Sappers mounted with amazing activity. The guards assembled within, but were quickly repulsed by the fire of the assailants. The detachment entered with rapidity, and pushed on to the main body of the place. In the meantime, the greater part of the garrison escaped by another quarter, and left the English masters of one of the greatest and most celebrated strongholds in that quarter of the globe. This brilliant achievement, for which Captain Popham was rewarded with the rank of Major, struck the Mahirats with so much consternation, that they abandoned the surrounding country, and conveyed the alarm to Sindia in his capital.¹

The opposition which was made by Francis to these proceedings, for pushing the war on the Jannas, brought to a crisis the animosities which the struggle between him and the Governor-General had so long maintained. On the 20th of July, 1786, Mr. Hastings, in answering a minute of Mr. Francis, declared, "I do not trust to his promise of candour, convinced that he is incapable of it. I judge of his public conduct by my experience of his private, which I have found to be devoid of truth and reason." The ground of these severe expressions, the Governor-General stated to be a solemn agreement formed between him and Mr. Francis, which Mr. Francis had broken. Of this transaction, the following appear to have been the material circumstances. When the parliamentary appointment, during five years, of the Governor-General and Council, expired in 1778, the expectation of a change in the Indian administration was suspended, by the re-appointment, upon the motion of the king's chief minister, of Mr. Hastings for a single year. Upon the arrival of this intelligence in India, an attempt was made by some mutual friends of Mr. Hastings and Mr. Francis, to deliver the

¹ For the transactions relative to the Malivatta war, the materials are found in the last Report of the Committee of Secretory, in Vol. and 1st part some of documents printed in its Appendix; the materials which the Parliamentary Character against Hastings, and the report; the Papers printed for the use of the House of Commons on the Report, and the Minutes of Evidence to the Trial of Mr. Hastings. The publications of the day, such as the, and other parts of the history of Mr. Hastings Administration, have been consulted, some with more, some with less advantage, for the collection of

BOOK V.

CHAP. III.

1780.

government, at a period of difficulty and danger, from the effects of their discordance. Both parties acknowledged the demand which the present exigency presented for a vigorous and united administration; and both professed a desire to make any sacrifice of personal feelings, and personal interests, for the attainment of so important an object. On the part of Mr. Francis, it was stipulated that Mohammed Reza Khan, Mr. Dupleix, and Mr. Forde, should be reinstated in conformity to the Company's orders; and on the part of Mr. Hastings, that the Mahratta war, the responsibility of which Mr. Francis had disclaimed, and thrown personally on the Governor-General, should be conducted in conformity with his conceptions and plans. It was this part of the agreement which Mr. Hastings accused his opponent of violating; and of depriving him, by a treacherous promise of co-operation, which induced Mr. Darwell to depart for Europe, of that authority which the vote of Mr. Darwell ensured. Mr. Francis, on the other hand, solemnly declared, that he "never was party to the engagement stated by Mr. Hastings, or had a thought of being bound by it." His agreement with regard to the Mahratta war, he explained as extending only to the operations then commenced on the Malabar coast, but not to fresh operations on another part of the Mahratta dominions. Mr. Hastings produced a paper, containing the following words: "Mr. Francis will not oppose any measures which the Governor-General shall recommend for the prosecution of the war in which we are supposed to be engaged with the Mahrattas, or for the general support of the present political system of his government." To the terms of this agreement, presented to Mr. Francis in writing, he assented that Mr. Francis gave his full and deliberate consent. The reply of Mr. Francis was in the following words: "In one of our conversations in February last, Mr. Hastings desired me to read a paper of memorandums, among which I presume this article was inserted. I returned it to him the moment I had read it, with a declaration that I did not agree to it, or hold myself bound by the contents of it, or to that effect." Mr. Francis added some reasonings, drawn from the natural presumptions of the case. But those reasonings and presumptions had little tendency to

strengthen the evidence of his personal assertion—the ground, between him and his antagonist, on which this question seems finally to rest.¹ With the utmost earnestness, Mr. Hastings repeated the affirmation of the terms on which Mr. Francis declared his assent; and at that point, the verbal controversy between them closed. Soon after, a duel ensued between Mr. Hastings and Mr. Francis, in which the latter was wounded; and on the 9th December, that gentleman quitted India, and returned to Europe.²

BOOK V.
YEAR. IV.

1770.

CHAPTER IV.

In the Carnatic, Relations between the English and Nabob—Plenipotentiary, with independent Powers from the King—English courted by Hyder Ali and the Mahrattas, and in danger from both—Nabob and Plenipotentiary desire Alliance with the Mahrattas—Presidency adheres to Fidelity—Relations with the King of Tanjore—After hesitation, War is undertaken—War upon the Marathas—A second War upon Tanjore—Condemned by the Directors—Pigot sent out to restore the Raja—Opposition in the Madras Council—Pigot imprisoned—Sentiments and Measures adopted in England—Committee of Council—Suspended by Governor Blandford, who invites the Secretaries to Madras—Transactions with Hyder Ali respecting Gondar—Censured by the Supreme Council—Governor Blandford, and other Members of the Government, condemned and punished by the Court of Directors.

WHILE the principal station of the Company's power in India was giving birth to so many important transactions, their Presidency on the Carnateadul coast

¹ It is a strong indication of Hastings's belief in such a witness having been received from Francis, that he refused, for the sake of having presented it, Marcellin's testimony. That what he knew would leave him in a minority, and not that he expected the French would share his opposition, is one indication of the readiness made to him, could have supported Hastings in the loss of his friend. The opinion of his secret and malicious enemies upon the recompliments under which Farwell quitted Bengal.—W.

² A full Report of the Committee of Secretaries, 1771, p. 95, and Appendix, No. 158, also full Report of the Select Committee, 1781, pp. 14, 15, 20; Minutes of the same war in Asia, i. 380, 381.

BOOK V. was not barren of incidents related to a great share of
 CHAP. IV. our regard.

1770.

The relation, in which the Company professed to stand to the country, was different in the Carnatic, and in Bengal. By the avowed possession of the Dewannee, they entered in Bengal into the direct discharge of the principal functions of internal government. In the Carnatic, during the contest with the French, they had held up Mohammed Ali; upon the termination of it, they had acknowledged him as the undoubted sovereign of the country. He was established, therefore, in the possession of both branches of power, both that of Nadra, or the military power, and that of Dewan, or the financial power; and the Company held the station of dependants, possessing their privileges through his sufferance, and owing obedience to his throne. They possessed a district of land surrounding Madras, which had been granted in 1759, and in 1762 was confirmed, by the Nabob of the Carnatic or Arcot, in recompense of the services rendered by the Company to him and his family. This was a sort of estate in land, under what is called a jaghire tenure, enabling the owner to draw the revenue, which would otherwise accrue to government; and to exercise all those powers which in India were usually connected with the power of raising the taxes. This Presidency also possessed, and that independent of their Nabob, the maritime district, known under the title of the four Northern Circars, which they had obtained by grant from the Mogul in 1765, and enjoyed under an agreement of partnership, entered into the succeeding year with the Nizam or Subahdar.

Partly from characteristic imbecility, partly from the state of the country, not only exhausted, but disorganised by the preceding struggle, the Nabob remained altogether unequal to the protection of the dominions, of which he was now the declared sovereign. Instead of trusting to the insignificant rabble of an army which he would employ, the Presidency beheld the necessity of providing by a British force for the security of the province. For this reason, and also for the sake of that absolute power¹

¹ The restriction of restricting this absolute power, is thus clearly expressed in the letter of the Court of Directors to the Presidency of Madras, dated 24th Dec. 1769, 1769. "The Nabob has hitherto desired, at least expressed

which they desired to maintain, the English were under the necessity of urging, and, if need were, constraining the Nabob to transfer to them the military defence of the country, and to allow out of his revenues a sum proportional to the expense. The Nabob, having transferred the military power of the country, was placed in absolute dependence upon the Company; they being able to do what they pleased, he to do nothing but what they permitted. In a short time it was perceived, that his revenue was by no means equal to the demands which were made upon it. The country was oppressed by the severity of his exactions, and instead of being repaired, after the tedious sufferings of war, it was scourged by all the evils of a government at once insatiable and neglectful. When his revenues failed, he had recourse to loans. Money was advanced to him, at exorbitant interest, frequently by Englishmen, and the servants of the Company. He generally paid them by a species of assignments, called in India *recesses*, which entitled the holders of them to the revenue of some portion of the territory, and to draw it immediately from the collectors. While his embarrasments were by these means increased, the creditors were encouraged to greater avarice.

In this situation, the Nabob and the Presidency were both distressed, and both uneasy. Finding his power annihilated, and his resources absorbed, after feeding his imagination with the prospect of the unlimited indulgence of an Eastern prince, he regarded the conduct of the Presidency as the highest injustice. The gentlemen entrusted at once with the care of their own fortunes and

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1770.

with various speculations, that portions of our troops should be placed in his forts: at a bad suggestion that, after a time, he may wish to fund his power, and remove it. It will not however happen, it may happen some other way to avoid strengthening it here, and, at the same time, a decree is sometimes proposed to your grace, to give that power to me too. But we consider it as a fatal mortal point, that the Company's influence and real power in the presidency may be any way so considerably weakened, as by keeping the detached parts in our hands," say four members of the Committee of Directors, Appendix, No. 101. "It is found on comparison of state of the strong places, the troops being collected by the Company, and the revenues strictly under the Company, that they are kept in as their power to give law to the Carnatic. Without the concurrence of the Presidency, he can do nothing. They are soldiers of peace and war, and even if one of his men is detached from the garrisons, the payment of a half year has managed, without there his annual call there to my account." Letter from Sir John Lindsay to the President and Council of Madras, 22d June, 1771. *Ibid* Appendix, p. 358.

BOOK V. the interests of the Company, for both of which they
 CHAP. IV. imagined that the revenues of the Carnatic would cop-
 1770. iously and delightfully provide, were chagrined to find
 them inadequate even to the exigencies of the govern-
 ment; and accused the Nabob, either of concealing the
 amount of the sums which he obtained, or of impairing the
 produce of the country by the vices of his government.

Upon the termination of the disputes in London, to-
 ward the end of the year 1769, between the Ministers of
 the Crown and the East India Company, respecting the
 supervisors, and respecting the power of the King's naval
 officer to negotiate and to form arrangements with the
 Indian powers;¹ a marine force, consisting of some frigates
 of war, was commissioned, under the command of Sir
 John Lindsay, to proceed to the East Indies: "to give
 countenance and protection to the Company's settlements
 and affairs." In conformity with the terms to which the
 Company had yielded, they vested Sir John Lindsay with
 a commission to take the command of all their vessels of
 war in the Indian seas; and also, on their behalf, "to trans-
 act and settle matters in the Persian Gulf."

So far, there was mutual understanding, clearness, and
 concert. But in addition to this, Sir John Lindsay was
 appointed, by commission under the great seal, his Majes-
 ty's Minister Plenipotentiary, with powers to negotiate
 and conclude arrangements with the Indian sovereigns in
 general. This measure was not only contrary to what the
 Company had claimed as their right, against which the
 Minister appeared to have owed, for the time, to con-
 tend; but it was a measure taken without their know-
 ledge: and Sir John Lindsay appeared, in India, claiming
 the field for the exercise of his powers, before they or
 their servants had the smallest intimation that any such
 powers were in existence.

If there was a danger which must strike every con-
 siderate mind, in sending two independent authorities, to
 act and clash together in the delicate and troubled scene
 of Indian affairs, a danger inevitable, even if the circum-
 stances had been arranged between the Ministers and the
 Company with the greatest harmony and the greatest
 wisdom; all the principles of mischief were naturally

¹ See the account of these disputes, *supra*, vol. iii., book iv., chap. ix.

multipled, and each strengthened to the utmost, by the present stroke of ministerial politics.

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1778

The ground upon which this disputed and imprudent exercise of power appears to have been placed, was the eleventh article of the treaty of Paris, concluded in 1763. With a view to maintain peace in India, and to close the disputes between the English and the French, who, according to their own professions, appeared to have nothing else in view but to determine who was the just and rightful Nabob of the Carnatic, and who was the just and rightful Sahibdar of the Deccan; it was there decided and agreed that the two nations should acknowledge Mohammed Ali as the one, and Salabat Jung as the other. It occurred to the ingenuity of practical statesmen, that the King of Great Britain, having become party to an article of treaty, had a right, without asking leave of the Company, to look after the execution of that article; and hence to send a deputy duly qualified for that purpose. If this conferred a right of bestowing upon Sir John Lindsay the powers of an ambassador; it also conferred the right of avoiding altercation with the East India Company, by taking the step without their knowledge.¹

The power of looking after the due execution of the eleventh article of the treaty of Paris was not a hiding power.

It included in the first place, the power of taking a part in all the disputes between the Nabob and the Company's servants, as Mohammed Ali was in that article placed upon the footing of an ally to the King of Great Britain, and hence entitled to all that protection which is due to an ally. The servants of the Company had been at some pains to keep from the knowledge of the Nabob the full import of the new relation in which he was placed to the British throne; as calculated most imprudently to inflame that spirit of ambition and love of independence, with which it was so difficult already to deal, and with the gratification of which the existence in the Carnatic, either of his power or of that of the Company, was altogether

¹ It was impossible to prevent the servants from becoming aware of the Company, and very improbable that they would not resist it. Alterations was designed — therefore well attended; and I would have better known the probability to have apprized the Company at once, of their determination to send out an agent of this nature.—W.

BOOK V. incompatible. The band of Englishmen, and others, who
 CHAP. IV. surrounded the Nabob, for the purpose of paying upon
 him, wished of course to see all power in his hands, that
 they might pay the more abundantly. They filled every
 1770. place with their calumnies against every restraint which
 was placed upon him : and in particular had endeavoured,
 and with great success, to disseminate an opinion in
 England, that he was an oppressed and ill-treated prince,
 while the servants of the Company were his plunderers
 and tyrants.

Nor was this all. As the grand intent of the eleventh
 article of the treaty of Paris was to preserve peace be-
 tween the English and other powers of India, and as there
 is nothing in the relations of one state to another which
 the care of peace may not be said to embrace, the whole
 international policy of the British government in India
 was, by the now ministerial expedient, deposited in the
 hands of the King's Minister Plenipotentiary.

On the 26th of July, 1770, Sir John Lindsay, after
 having remained some months at Bombay, arrived at
 Madras : and at once surprised and alarmed the servants
 of the Company by the declaration of his powers. In one
 of their first communications with Sir John, they say,
 "when you now inform us, you are invested with great
 and separate powers, and when we consider that those
 powers, in their operation, may greatly affect the rights of
 the Company, we cannot but be very much alarmed." To
 their employers, the Court of Directors, they exposed
 themselves more fully. "To give you a clear representa-
 tion of the dangerous embarrassments through which we
 have been struggling, since the arrival of his Majesty's
 powers in this country, is a task far beyond our abilities.
 They grow daily more and more oppressive to us ; and we
 must sink under the burthen, unless his Majesty, from a
 just representation of their effect, will be graciously
 pleased to recall powers, which, in dividing the national
 interest, will inevitably destroy its prosperity in India.
 Such is the danger ; and yet we are repeatedly told, that
 it is to support that interest, by giving the sanction of his
 Majesty's name to our measures, that those powers were

¹ Letter to Sir John Lindsay, dated 12th August, 1770, *ibid.* Appendix
 p. 326.

granted, and for that alone to be exerted. It has always been our opinion, that with your authority, we had that of our Sovereign and of our nation delegated to us. If this opinion be refuted, your servants can neither act with spirit nor success: for under the control of a superior commission, they dare not, they cannot exert the powers with which they alone are entrusted. Their weakness and dispoise become conspicuous; and they are held in derision by your enemies."¹

The first of the requisitions which Sir John Lindsay made upon the President and Council was to appear in his train, when he went in state to deliver to the Nabob his Majesty's letter and presents. They conceived, that, as the servants of the Company had heretofore been the medium through which all communications to the princes of India had been made, and they had been considered in India the immediate representatives of the British monarch, and the highest instrument of his government, they could not appear in the train of Sir John Lindsay without degradation in the eyes of the natives, and a lessening of the dignity and influence of the Company which, as they had no instructions upon the subject, they did not think themselves at liberty to resign. With the assignment of these reasons, they respectfully signified to Sir John Lindsay the inability under which they found themselves to comply with his request. This brought on an interchange of letters, which soon degenerated into bitterness and animosity on both sides.²

Among the reasons which the President and Council assigned for declining to appear in the train of Sir John Lindsay, they had stated, that any suspicion, disseminated in the country, of the annihilation or diminution of the Company's power "ought, at this crisis particularly,

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1759.

¹ Letter to the Court of Proprietors, dated July 26th, 1751, *Bengal Appendix*, p. 486.

² *Bengal Appendix*, p. 486-487. In the representation of the circumstances, the train of Sir J. Lindsay was that of attending ambassadors. It soon became that of consular or national. The Government of India were first, only alarmed, and treated him with unnecessary reserve. Their later conduct could well have been so far removed from solicitude with him, such they had received instruction and from Scotland: as they could not be expected to recognise powers nearly incompatible with those which the Court of Directors had approved, those had been conferred upon the same order of the King's agents in India, and His Majesty's representative in the Empire of Persia only.—*W.*

BOOK V. prove fatal to the existence of the Company, and the in-
 terests of the nation in India: because they were on the
 brink of a war with the most formidable power in India,
 which it would require all their efforts to avoid, while
 they feared that all their efforts would be inefficient."¹
 This apprehension was a good deal exaggerated, to serve
 the present purpose; and the exaggeration yielded an ad-
 vantage to Sir John Lindsay, of which he immediately
 availed himself. He was very sorry, he said, to find them
 on the brink of a dreadful war, which was all but in-
 evitable. He pressed upon them the recollection of the
 importance of peace to a commercial body. And as he
 was sent out to watch over the execution of the eleventh
 article, of which peace was the main object, he begged they
 would lay before him such documents and explanations,
 as "would make him acquainted with the real state of the
 Company's affairs."² He also informed them, that he was
 commanded by his Majesty to apply to them for a full
 and accurate account of all their transactions with the
 Nabob of Arcot since the late treaty of Paris; and to en-
 quire with the utmost care into the causes of the late war with
 the Nabob of the Deccan and Hyder Ali, and the reasons
 of its unfortunate consequences."³ To this point the re-
 ply of the President and Council was in the following
 terms: duplicates of our records, and very minute and
 circumstantial details of all our transactions, have already
 been transmitted to the Court of Directors of the East
 India Company, our constituents. We have heard, that
 when an inquiry at home into the state of the Company's
 affairs was thought necessary, it was signified by his Ma-
 jesty's ministry to the Court of Directors, that they would
 be called upon by parliament to produce their records;
 that they were accordingly called upon by parliament, and
 did produce them. This, we believe, was a constitutional
 course; but we have never heard that the Company's pa-
 pers and records were demanded by, or surrendered to,
 the ministry alone; for that we believe would be un-
 constitutional. The Company hold their rights by
 act of parliament, their papers and their records are
 their rights; we are entrusted with them here; we are
 under oath of fidelity, and under covenants not to part

¹ *Reed's Appendix*, p. 346.² *Ibid.* p. 354.³ *Ibid.* p. 353.

with them; nevertheless all conditions are subservient to the laws; and when we shall be called upon in a legal and constitutional way, we shall readily and cheerfully submit ourselves, our lives, and fortunes, to the laws of our country. To break our oath and our covenants would be to break those laws. But we hold them sacred and inestimable, for they secure the rights and liberties of the people."¹

Corresponding to the jealousy and dislike with which Sir John Lindsay was received by the president and Council, were the cordiality and pleasure with which he was received by the Nabob and those who surrounded him. To the Nabob he explained, that he was come to recognize him as a fellow sovereign with the King of Great Britain, and to afford him the protection of that great King against all his enemies. The Nabob, who had a keen Oriental eye for the detection of personal feelings, was not long a stranger to the sentiments with which his Majesty's Minister Plenipotentiary, and the Company's President and Council, regarded each other. He described the President and Council as his greatest enemies; for they withdrew the greater part of his revenues and power. Sir John, who was already prejudiced, and ignorant of the scenes in which he was appointed to act, told it was not all the views of the Nabob, and the crowd by whom he was heard. The Nabob laid out his complaints, and Sir John listened with a credulous ear. The Nabob described the policy which had been pursued with respect to the native powers by the servants of the Company; and easily made it assume an appearance which gave it to the eye of Sir John a character of folly, or corruption, or both. He drew the line of policy which at the present moment it would have gratified his own wishes to get the Company to pursue; and he pointed it in such engaging colours, that Sir John Lindsay believed it to be recommended equally by the sense of justice, and the dictates of wisdom. The King's Commissioner, resuming his own consequence by that of the master whom he served, and treating the Company and their servants as not worthy of much regard, on the score either of wisdom or of virtue, widened the difference between the partnership sovereigns of the Carnatic. The

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1774.

¹ *Scott's Annals*, p. 251.

BOOK V. royal sanction assumed the character of protector of
 CHAP. IV. the Nabob; and appeared to interpose the royal authority,
 1778. between an ally of the crown, and the oppression of the
 Company. The contempt which the Nabob saw bestowed
 upon the authority to which he had been accustomed to
 bow, and the dignity to which he appeared to be exalted
 as an ally of the British King, augmented his opinion of
 the injustice under which he appeared to himself to groan;
 and the letters of the Commissioner to the ministers in
 England were filled with accounts of the oppression exer-
 cised by the insolent and rapacious servants of a counting-
 house, over an independent and sovereign prince. The
 feeble discomfit which has generally stained the pro-
 ceedings of the East India Company, and which has often
 lavished upon them applause where their conduct has been
 neither virtuous nor wise, has almost uniformly arraigned
 them for not accomplishing impossibilities, and uniting
 contrary effects, for not rendering themselves powerful
 and independent, without trenching upon the power and
 independence of princes, who would suffer their power and
 independence, only in proportion as they were deprived of
 those attributes themselves. Beside this fundamental
 consideration, it was not to be disputed, that, left to him-
 self Mohammed Ali could not maintain his possession of
 the provinces for even a few years; and that nothing but
 the power of the English could prevent it from falling a
 prey to the neighbouring powers, or even to its own dis-
 organisation. Though it is not disputed that the rapacity
 of individuals, who preyed upon the Nabob may have
 added to the disorder of his affairs; it is true that the
 poverty of the Carnatic, and the wretched administration
 of the Nabob, enabled it not to fulfil the golden hopes of
 the English, or even to provide for its own necessities.*

When the President and Council described themselves
 as on the brink of a war, the circumstances to which they
 alluded were these. In the second article of the treaty,
 which was concluded with Hyder Ali, in 1782, it was
 agreed: "That in case either of the contracting parties
 shall be attacked, they shall, from their respective coun-
 tries, mutually assist each other to drive the enemy out;"
 and the party in aid of whom the troops were employed,

* See *Raw's Appendix*, No. II, *passim*.

Was to afford them maintenance at a rate which was mutually determined. This was a condition so highly esteemed by Hyder, that all hopes of an accommodation with him, on any other terms, were, at the time of the treaty, regarded as vain.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.
1778.

Within a few weeks, Hyder endeavoured to persuade the English of the great advantage which he and they would derive, from uniting Jasees Bouda with them, in triple league. He also informed them of his intention to recover from Mithoo Row, the Peshwa, certain possessions which that invader had wrested from him two years before; and requested that they would send him a certain number of troops, no matter how small, merely to show to the world the friendship which now happily subsisted between the English and him. The Presidency, pointing out in what manner this, to which the treaty did not bind them, would be an act of unwarranted hostility against the Mahrattas, declined compliance with his request.

Early in 1778, the Mahrattas invaded his country; and again he solicited assistance, if it were but a few troops, for the sake of the manifestation on account of which he had requested them before. If a more substantial aid was afforded, he professed his readiness to pay three lacs of rupees. It was not very easy for the English now to find a pretext. They evaded, procrastinated, and withheld, rather than refused compliance with his desire.

The Mahrattas reduced Hyder to great difficulties, nay dangers; and seemed resolved to seize his dominions to their spreading conquests. During this period of his distress, in which he was obliged to abandon the open country, and to depend upon his forts, he endeavoured to persuade the English that their own interest was deeply concerned in combining with him against the Mahrattas, who would touch upon their frontier, and present them a formidable neighbourhood, if the barrier which he interposed were broken down.

The Mahrattas, too, very earnestly pressed for the assistance of the English. They had, indeed, by weight of superior numbers, driven Hyder from the open country; but the protection of his strong holds enabled him still to hold out, and they saw the time rapidly approaching, when the exhausted state of the country would compel

did gifts of territory, which, if they had the power of giving, they would also have the power of resuming at pleasure. But in the third place, he expected, according to the opinion of the President and Council, to place the English government, by means of the alliance with the Mahrattas, in a state of dependence upon himself; and that was what he valued above all other things. "Once engaged in the war," said they, "we are at the Nabob's mercy, for we have no certain means of our own. Enter, we are told, into an engagement with the Mahrattas; engage to assist them in the conquest of the Mysore country, and they will cede to the Nabob the Ghauts, and all the countries dependant on Mysore on this side the Ghauts. If we enter into such a measure, utterly repugnant to every order and every idea that has been suggested to us by our employers, we cannot see any end to the consequences, but utter ruin; we must therefore follow the schemes of the Mahrattas and the Nabob, wherever they shall please to drag us, be it to place the Nabob on the throne of the Deccan, or to subjugate the whole peninsula."

Sir John Lindsay adopted completely the views of the Nabob, with regard to the Mahratta alliance: nor was there any reproach, or censure, or threat, which he spared, to induce or to drive the Presidency into that measure.

The ministry, it would appear, became in some degree alarmed at the accounts which they received of the contentions which prevailed between the King's Minister Plenipotentiary, and the servants of the Company in India; and they thought of an expedient; which was, to change the person, and leave the authority. Sir John Lindsay was recalled, and Sir Robert Harland with an addition to the marine force, was sent to exercise the same powers in his stead.

Sir Robert arrived at Madras on the 2nd of September, 1771. Sir Robert took up the same ideas, and the same passions exactly, which had guided the mind of Sir John Lindsay; and the only difference was, that he was rather more intemperate than his predecessor; and in consequence created rather more animosity in his opponents.

The progress of the Mahrattas had become still more

BOOK 7.

CHAP. IV.

1770.

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1771.

alarming. In the month of November, they were in the possession of the whole of Mysore, excepting the principal Forts. They had advanced to the borders of the Carnatic : and some straggling parties had made plundering incursions. They openly threatened invasion ; and it was expected that about the beginning of January, when the crops would be ready, they would enter the country. The Nabob was, or affected to be, in the utmost alarm ; and Sir Robert Hartwell urged the Presidency to accept the terms of the Mahattas, who had high for assistance on the one hand, and threatened fire and sword on the other. In this trying situation, the Presidency vented the most bitter complaints, at being left by the Court of Directors, totally without restrictions.¹ Nevertheless, "although we have not yet," say they, "had any answer from our constituents, to the repeated representations of the embarrassments we labour under for want of their clear and precise instructions with respect to our conduct in the present critical situation of affairs, yet it is evident from the whole spirit of their orders for some years past, that they look upon the growing power of the Mahattas with jealousy and apprehension." From this, from an adoption of the same sentiments, from a regard to the treaty with Hyder, which rather required them to assist than allowed them to join in destroying that sovereign, and from a regard to the opinion of the other Presidencies, they determined not to comply with exhortations or commands of Sir Robert. They would have thought it advisable on the other hand to support Hyder as a barrier against the Mahattas, had not the opposition of his Nabob, supported as he was by the minister of the King, placed it, for want of resources, out of their power. They determined, therefore, to remain neutral ; and only to collect a body of troops in some central position, where they might best protect the country in case of attack, and distress the enemy by cutting off their supplies.

¹ "It is with infinite concern the Committee observe that, notwithstanding facts repeated and constant representations to the Court of Directors, of the very critical situation of affairs with respect to the Mahattas and Hyder Ally, who were so fully and clearly explained, in order to make them give us their instructions and orders with respect to the conduct they would wish us to observe in so important and interesting a matter, we still find ourselves not only without orders, but without the least intimation of their opinion therein." Robert Combes, 25th November, 1771. First Report, Committee of Enquiry in 1811, Appendix, No. 51.

The Mahattas, notwithstanding their threats, had not, it would appear, any serious intention of invading the Carnatic; for in the month of January, 1773, the Nizam and Sir Robert, finding the Proskauy inflexible against their project of alliance, found the means of prevailing upon them to promise a cessation of hostilities till the pleasure of the British King should be known.¹ The Mahattas were afraid of provoking the English to join Hyder Ali; and they began now to feel their situation abundantly uneasy. The activity and capacity of this great leader were still able to give them incessant annoyance; and the country was so excessively ravaged and exhausted, that the means of subsisting an army could no longer be found. They became, therefore, desirous of an accommodation; and in the beginning of July consented to a peace, for which, however, they made Hyder pay very dearly, both in territorial and pecuniary sacrifices.²

If a judgment may be formed from this instance, the chance for good government in India, if the ministers of the crown were to become, and the East India Company come to be its organ, would undergo an irreparable change. The course into which the ministers of the crown would have plunged the nation leads upon it every mark of ignorance and folly: that which was pursued by the East India Company and their servants is eminently characterized by prudence and foresight.

Aloud the pecuniary wants of the Nizam and the Presidency, both had often looked with a covetous eye to the supposed riches of the King of Tanjore. They considered the natural fertility of his country, and his general exemption from the ravages of the war which had desolated the rest of the province; but they did not consider that the tempering policy by which he had laboured to save himself from the resentment of all parties, had often cost him considerable sums; that the wars which raged around and perpetually threatened himself, had imposed upon him the maintenance of an army, as great as he could possibly support, that the country which he governed, though fertile, was small; that the expense of a

¹ That they gave money, and gave largely, appears plainly from a letter to *Lord's Appendix*, p. 255.

² See *First Report*, at pages, p. 28, and *Appendix*, Nos. 10, 11, 12, 13: and the Papers published by the Directors, in *Lord's Appendix*, Nos. 17 and 18.

BOOK V. court aims to be as grand in a small, as in an extensive
 CHAP. IV. country; that the expense of protecting a small country is
 comparatively heavy; that hardly any government has
 ever yet been so good, as not to expend as much as it
 could possibly drain from its subjects; and that the govern-
 ment of Tanjore was a true specimen of the ignorance
 and weakness of the Hindoos.

1731.

In the war with Hyder, the Raja of Tanjore had not only contributed less, both in troops and treasure, to the maintenance of the war than was expected of him, but was known to have held a correspondence with Hyder; and if he did not offer, at any rate protracted, resistance. Without making any allowance for the current policy of the feeble princes in India, who aim at contributing as little as possible to the wars of the greater powers, from which they are not that they have any thing to gain, and by professions of friendship for both parties, to avert the dangers of their neighbourhood, the Company and the Nizam were sufficiently disposed to have treated the Raja as a faithless ally. In the treaty, however, which they concluded with Hyder in 1760, they insisted upon including the Mahratta chieftain, Nizam Rao, whose territories would have formed a convenient conquest for Hyder; and he refused to accept the condition unless the Raja of Tanjore was admitted to the same protection. That the Raja might not appear to give his safety to the interposition of Hyder, the English pretended to regard him as their partisan, and included him in the treaty as their own ally.

In their letter to the Select Committee at Fort St. George, dated 17th March, 1780, the Court of Directors said, "It appears most unnecessary to us that the Raja of Tanjore should hold possession of the most fruitful part of the country, which can alone supply our armies with subsistence, and not contribute to the defence of the Carnatic. We observe the Nizam makes very earnest representations to you on this subject, whereas he takes notice that the Zemindars of the Carnatic have been supported, and their countries preserved to them by the operations of our forces employed in his cause; and that nothing was more notorious, than that three former princes of the Carnatic had received from the Tanjore Raja seventy, eighty, nay even one hundred lacks of

rupees at a time. We therefore enjoin you to give the Nabob such support in his pretensions as may be effected; and if the Raja refuses to contribute a just proportion to the expense of the war, you are then to pursue such measures as the Nabob may think consistent with the justice and dignity of his government. Whatever sums may, in consequence of the above orders, be obtained from the Raja of Tanjore, we expect shall be applied to the discharge of the Nabob's debt to the Company: and if more than sufficient for that purpose, to the discharge of his debts to individuals."†

Upon this injunction of the Court of Directors, the Select Committee deliberated on the 18th of September, 1768. "With regard," they say, "to the demand recommended to be made on the King of Tanjore, our situation at this time is such, for want of money, that, if there were no other obstacles, that alone would put it utterly out of our power to undertake an expedition against him. The treaty of 1762 being before the Hon. Court, considering also, on the other hand, the late conduct of the King of Tanjore, we certainly should not postpone an undertaking so warmly recommended, if it were in our power now to attempt it consistently with good policy and the safety of the Carnatic. But as the case is, were the difficulty of money out of the question, it would become a point of serious consideration, whether an attempt upon Tanjore might not again involve us in a war with Hyder Ally, as the Raja is expressly included in the treaty lately made with Hyder Ally Khan. However unreasonable it may be, that he should enjoy the benefits derived from the government of the Carnatic without contributing his proportion of its expense; and however impolitic, and contrary to the natural rights of government, to suffer such a power to remain independent in the heart of the province, we must submit to necessity, and the circumstances of the times. He has, indeed, lately made some objections by his letters to the payment of his annual *pushrah*, alleging in excuse the great expense of the troops sent to join our army; although, as the Nabob informs us, it be contrary to the custom of the country for tributary princes to make any demands for the charges of troops furnished to the power

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1771.

† *Official Papers in Bengal Appendix*, pp. 320, 321.

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1771.

to whom they are tributary, while employed within the districts dependant on such power. Should he persist in requiring an statement in the peshkash due on account of his late charges, it might furnish us with a just pretext to accuse him of a breach of his engagements, and to take our measures accordingly when our situation will admit of it. But as the case now is with us; under difficulties to provide the money necessary even for our current expenses; doubtful of the intentions of the Mahrattas; suspicious of the designs of the Subah: and apprehensive of the King of Tanjore's calling upon Hyder for aid, and thus raising a fresh flame, the Committee are clearly of opinion, that at this juncture the undertaking would be impolitic and unwarrantable.*

The Raja had urged, that, instead of having any money, the late expenses, which was the fact, had involved him deeply in debt; and he prayed, if a remission could not be granted, at any rate for a delay in the payment of the exacted tribute; an indulgence to which the expenses incurred by him in sending troops to assist in the wars of the Nabob afforded, he thought, a reasonable claim.[†]

Early in the month of February, 1771, the Presidency received intelligence that the Raja of Tanjore was setting out upon the expedition against one of his neighbours the Poligar of Samastly, one of the Maravars.[‡] On the 14th of February, the President wrote to the Raja, that as Maravar belonged to the Nabob, as a dependency of the Carnatic, it was contrary to the treaty between the Raja and him, to make war upon that country, and that, as the English were guarantee of that treaty, it was their duty to request he would relinquish his design.[§]

The Raja represented that Ramanantagoudy was a district of country which did belong to the King of Tanjore, and was actually in his possession at the time of the conclusion of the treaty of 1762; that it had been unjustly seized by the Maravar chief, while the armies of Tanjore

* Papers, at supra, p. 521.

† *Ibid.* pp. 522, 523.

‡ There was no such person as the Poligar of Samastly. The author has mistaken, apparently, the title of the Poligar of Samastly, for the name of his province. The word occurs in the new editions of the Madras Government Gazette, and is correctly used, as the "The Poligar of Tanjore sent a force against the Poligar's country." - "Tanjore is ready to send the Poligar," &c. The proper title is Seta-pati, chief of the "Seta," or bridge, the realm extending from the continent to Ramanantagoudy.

§ Papers, at supra, p. 524.

were engaged in the service of the Nabob, that the King of Tanjore, at the time when the Nabob was setting out upon his expedition to Madras, had represented the necessity of wresting back this territory from the Maravars, but the Nabob professed to have undertaken the expedition against Madras only upon the strength of the assistance which he expected from his dependants, and therefore requested the execution of his design might be delayed, till that expedition was accomplished; that he had represented the necessity of recovering the territory in question to the President himself, who had offered no objections. "For these reasons," said he, "I was in hopes to this day, that the Nabob and your honour would give strict orders to Maravar to restore our country. I also wrote to my nephew on that head. But you and the Nabob did not get the country restored to me. Besides which, when the elephants relating to my present from Begumabum were coming, Nalcooty,* pretending that the vessel was driven on shore by a storm in his transports, seized the said elephants, and detained them; concerning which I sent him word, as well as to your honour; but he did not return them to me. If I suffer Maravar to take possession of my country, Nalcooty to seize my elephants, and Tondaman to injure my country, it will be a very great dishonour to me among my people, to see such compulsions used by the Polygars. You are a protector of my government. Notwithstanding, you have not settled even a single affair belonging to me.

"If I stay quiet, I shall greatly hurt my dignity. Wherefore, I marched myself. If you now advise me to desist, what answer can I give? In the treaty, it was not forbidden to clear the country possessed by Maravar, or to undertake any expedition against the Polygars, who may use compulsion. Since it is so, it cannot be deemed contrary to the treaty."

The Presidency urged, that, whatever was the truth with regard to the facts set forward by the Raja, he knew that they were disputed by the Nabob; and for that reason, was guilty, because he had taken upon himself to be judge and executioner in his own cause, when he ought to have reserved the decision to the English government. In his defence, the Raja observed: "You were pleased to write,

* The Little Maravar.

† Papers, &c. supra, pp. 554, 554.

BOOK V. that if I doubt in my present expedition, you will then
 CHAP. IV. settle the affairs in a reasonable manner. I continued to
 1371. speak to you for this long time concerning this affair; but
 you have not settled it. Notwithstanding, if you now
 write that I did not acquaint you before I began it, what
 answer can I make to it? I did not undertake to do any
 thing contrary to the hereditary custom observed."

The Nabob called upon the Presidency, with unusual
 force and boldness of importunity, to make war upon the
 Raja; as the honour of his government was concerned in
 chastising a refractory dependant; and the honour of the
 Company's government was concerned in supporting a
 faithful ally. Sir John Lindsay vehemently urged the
 same conclusions, not without reproaches, that the Presi-
 dency were betraying the Nabob, and violating their duty,
 by even deferring the assistance which he required.

On both hands, the Presidency were assailed by the
 greatest difficulties. There was imminent danger that the
 views of Sir John Lindsay, who was the creature of the
 ministry, would prevail at home; and that the Council,
 should they refuse to join with the Nabob, would be con-
 demned, punished, and disgraced. They were restrained,
 on the other hand, by the consideration of the want of
 money; of the impossibility of receiving sufficient funds
 from the Nabob; of the danger, while the troops were en-
 gaged in a distant quarter, of an attack upon the Circars
 by the Nizam; and of a war with the Mahometans, with
 whom the king of Tanjore was allied, and who already
 hung over the Carnatic with alarming menaces. They be-
 lieved that, beside the Nabob's old passion for the con-
 quest of Tanjore, he was at present stimulated by the
 desire of that part of the Mysore country which lay on
 the Carnatic side of the passes, and which he had been
 promised by the Mahometans, as the price of the assistance
 which they wished to receive; that he now despaired of
 being able to persuade the English to give that assistance;
 but expected, if he could inveigle them into a war with
 the King of Tanjore, that they would then be glad to
 form an alliance with the Mahometans, in order to escape
 the calamity of their arms. In these circumstances, the
 Governor and Council bitterly complained, that they were

¹ *Papers*, at pages, pp. 548, 550.

² *Ibid* pp. 478, 515.

left by their honorable masters, with instructions and orders which might be construed all manner of ways; and that, whatever course they took, they were sure of condemnation if they failed; could expect approbation, only as a consequence of success.¹ They resolved to collect as much of the army and of the military stores at Trichinopoly, as could be done without appearing to prepare for war; and to abstain from hostilities unless unavoidably involved in them.

Inquiring into the supposed dependence of the Marwar country, the Presidency found, that both Tanjore and Trichinopoly had alternately made use of their power to set up and put down the chiefs of Marwar. But in conclusion, "it appears," they said, "to us, that the only right over them is power, and that constitutionally they are independent of both: though Trichinopoly, since it has been added to the government of the Carnatic, having been more powerful than Tanjore, hath probably received more submission from them." Between states in India, "power," they remark generally, "is the only arbitrator of right; established usage or rules cannot exempt one state from a dependence on another, when superior force prevails; neither can they enforce dependence where power is wanting."

These findings and conclusions, with regard to the

¹ See these considerations below, and the terms condemnation placed upon these employees. Papers, 90-194-2, pp. 575, 576, 585, 578.

of that you told, look
Toward to the persons, they is an understander on
Toward, but the law of the strength. The last is important, and has also it
should not must, one of I used always have submission for the most, great words
which theories have understander better efforts.—34.

[illegible]

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1771.

jore, have date in the records of the Presidency from the beginning of February to the end of March. On the 13th of June, when Trichinopoly was sufficiently supplied with stores for defence, and the question was to be determined whether more should be sent, the Nabob dissuaded from any further preparations; alleging that the Mahrattas would never give the necessary troops for undertaking an expedition against Tanjore, and that to him every article of expense, however small, was an object of importance. Upon this, the Presidency express themselves in the following terms: "When we consider the earnest and repeated solicitations urged by the Nabob to engage us in an expedition against Tanjore; when we consider the taunts and reflections cast on us by Sir John Lindsay for refusing to comply with the Nabob's requisition of proceeding immediately against Tanjore at a time when we were unprepared; when we consider that our apprehensions from the Mahrattas are not nearly so great, since most of the grain is now collected in the different forts, which would render it difficult for an army of Mahrattas to subsist; all these circumstances considered, it appears strange that the Nabob should so suddenly alter his opinion, and should now decline entering on the expedition, which he so lately and so earnestly urged us to undertake." They conjectured, that, as his grand motive for urging the expedition at first, was to force them into an alliance with the Mahrattas, so now, despoiling of that event, he wished not to give the Mahrattas a pretext for overrunning his dominions.¹

On the 24th of July, the Committee resolved, first, that an expedition against the Raja would, in itself, be advisable, but being contrary to the inclination of the Nabob, ought not to be undertaken; secondly, that negotiation should be used instead of war, and that the negotiation, in which the Nabob wished the English not to appear, should be left to be conducted by that venerable prince.²

No sooner was conference attempted than the Raja declared, that he had already "referred all differences between him and the Nabob to the Company, and that he wished the Company would mediate between them; that he was ready and willing to settle terms of accommoda-

¹ Papers, at supra, pp. 101, 102.

² *Ibid.* p. 106.

been under the guarantee of the English, on whose faith and promise he would rely; but that he would never trust the Nabob without the security of the English; as he well knew the Nabob's intentions were to negotiate late matters for the present, but that he had had intentions whenever opportunity should offer in future."¹

On the 25th of July, the demands of the Nabob were presented to the Raja's valued at Madras, but as he required fifteen or twenty days to receive the instructions of his master, and as the distance of Madras would aid the Raja in spending out the time till the commencement of the rains, the Nabob proposed to send his two sons to Trichinopoly; the eldest, Omdut ul Omrah, to conduct the negotiations; and the younger, Mider ul Halk, to manage the supply of the army; while the negotiation, he thought, should be supported, by the awe of inevitable war, if the Raja declined implicit submission.²

Now was required a decision on the question, what, if the war should come in a conquest, was to be done with Tanjore. The Presidency knew, that the grand cause of the reluctance which the Nabob had lately shown to the war, was a fear lest the Company should conquer Tanjore for themselves; and, that there was no accommodation, how unfavourable never, which he would not make with the Raja, rather than incur the hazard of so hateful a result. The Nabob offered to give the Company ten lahs of jagohas, if, after conquering, they delivered Tanjore, in full dominion, to him. The Presidency wished to reserve the question for the proper authorities in England, but the Nabob would not consent. The Presidency imagined, that as they had now convinced the Raja of the hostile designs both of themselves and the Nabob, it was highly dangerous to leave him possessed of power, which he would have an interest in lending to the French, or any other enemy; and as they could not proceed to war, except with the consent of the Nabob, it was therefore best to comply with his terms.³

Early in September, the young Nabob, (such was the name by which the English generally spoke of Omdut ul Omrah) who had repaired to Trichinopoly, to conduct the negotiations, reported to General Smith, the commander

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

3771.

¹ Papers, at seq. p. 317.² *Ibid.* pp. 319, 320.³ *Ibid.* p. 320-323.

BOOK V. of the English troops, that nothing but compulsion would
 CHAP. IV. bring the Raja to the submission required. The army was
 1771. ready to march on the 12th of September; but the department of supplying the army had been entrusted wholly to the Nabob's second son; and it was found upon inquiry that there was not rice in the camp for the consumption of a single day.¹

The greatest exertions were made by the general to enable the army to move; and on the 16th it arrived before Vellum, a fortress of considerable strength, and one of the great bulwarks of Tanjore. The battery, having been constructed first in a wrong place, was not ready till the morning of the 20th; and the breach could not have been made practicable till about three o'clock the next afternoon, but towards evening the garrison stole out of the fort.²

On the 23rd the army again marched, and encamped before Tanjore. They broke ground late on the evening of the 25th, and by that time began to be distressed for want of provisions. On the 1st of October, the enemy made a strong sally, which threatened to have considerable effects: but Major Varghan, the officer against whose post it was directed, acted with firmness and judgment, and the attack was repelled without much loss. The operations proceeded but slowly. The 27th of October had arrived, when the engineers reported that the breach would be practicable the next morning. On that day the young Nabob signed a peace with the Raja, and hostilities ceased.³

The Raja engaged to pay eight lacs of rupees for arrears of paymaster; 30,00,000 for the expense of the expedition; to restore whatever he had taken from the Marawars; and to aid with his troops in all the wars of the Nabob. Vellum was the principal difficulty. It was finally agreed, that it should be restored to the Raja, but demolished if the Nabob chose.

Before this event, a dispute had arisen about the plunder. Quidat ul Omrah was informed, that, by the usage of war, the plunder of all places, taken by storm, belonged to the captors. Quidat ul Omrah, unwilling to lose the

¹ General Smith's Letter, *Ibid.* 712.

² *Ibid.* p. 716-718.

³ Papers, of Mysore, p. 341-348.

plunder of Tanjore, offered a sum of money in lieu of it to the troops. His offer was not satisfactory, and a disagreeable and acrimonious correspondence had taken place. By concluding a peace, before the reduction of the fort, any allowance to the army was a matter of gratuity, not of right.¹

The Presidency were struck, as they say, with "alarm," when, expecting every hour to hear of the fall of Tanjore, they were accosted with the news of the conclusion of a peace. They expressed the greatest dissatisfaction with the terms, which ought, in their opinion, to have been nothing less than the surrender of the fort at discretion. The terms were not only inadequate; but an accessory, they said, was provided for the execution of them such as they were. On this account, they held it necessary to keep themselves prepared as for immediate war. Orders were sent out to give up Vellum without further instructions. The expectation was entertained, that the Raja would not be exact to a day in the delivery of the money and jewels he had agreed to resign. This happened. The want of punctuality was pronounced a breach of the treaty; the guns had not yet been drawn out of the batteries; and the troops were under the walls of Tanjore, the fort of Vellum, and the districts of Colliady and Ranged, were demanded: a renewal of hostilities was threatened as the only alternative: the helpless Raja could do nothing but comply.²

In averting from themselves the effects of this deep-probation, the General stated, that he communicated to Omiah ul Omrah the progress of the siege, and the great probability of success: that he had no control over the negotiation, and was bound by his instructions to desist from hostilities the moment the Nabob desired: on the other hand, Omiah ul Omrah affirmed, that he took not a step without consulting the General; that the troops were under the greatest apprehension on account of the rains which had begun; that when the breach was partly made, he stated the terms to which the Raja had yielded, declaring that he would not accept them, if the fall of the place were assured; that the General replied, he could not say he would take the place, but he would endeavour to

BOOK V,
CHAP. IV.

177L

¹ Papers, at Nagpur, p. 337.

² *Ibid.* pp. 333, 334.

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1771.

takes it; that being asked his opinion, whether the Raja would give such terms as he now offered, if the siege were unsuccessful, the General said, "My opinion is, that in that case he will give you nothing, but if he does he is a great fool;" that when asked if he would guarantee equivalent terms in case the enterprise miscarried, he repelled the proposal; that when peace was then held up to his view, as what in that case appeared the most politic choice, he replied, "It was well, it was at the Nabob's option."¹

Before all things were settled with Tanjore, the Nabob made application for the Company's forces to reduce the two Marwar Polygars. The Governor and Council, in their letter upon this to the Court of Directors, make the following pertinent remarks; "It is well worthy of observation that Marwar and Nalcooty are the two Polygars whom the Raja of Tanjore attacked in the beginning of the year, asserting their dependence on his government; while the Nabob claimed the right of protecting them, as tributaries to the government of Trichinopoly. It was in this cause that the late Plenipotentiary² took the field of controversy; asserted the Nabob's pretensions to us, who did not deny them; exaggerated the outrage of the Raja of Tanjore in taking arms against them: and entailed their obedience and submission to the Nabob's government: and he will say, he compelled us to vindicate the Nabob's dignity. What honours are due to the minister's zeal for his friend's cause! Mark now the reasoning of that friend: the Raja transgressed! Marwar and Nalcooty, from obedient dependants, become immediately dangerous and ungovernable delinquents; and there can be no safety to the Nabob's government unless they are reduced."³

Notwithstanding the contradiction which the Presidency thus remarked in the protests of the Nabob, they consented, without any difficulty in this case, to undertake the expedition. The season of the rains of necessity delayed their operations; but in the meantime inquiries were made; terms were settled with the Nabob; and the army was kept ready at Trichinopoly, the nearest of the stations to the place of attack.

The Nabob imputed no other crime to the Marwar,

¹ Papers, at supra, p. 402, 407.

² Sir John Lindsay.

Tanjore Papers, at supra, p. 404.

except their not sending troops to the late war upon Tanjore, and not paying the money which he exacted of them. And the Presidency acknowledged that he had no right over them whatsoever, but that right of apperception, which is claimed by the strong man over the weak. The reason for concurring with the Nabob in his desire to attack them, was, that the Nabob, by his ill-measures, had made them his enemies. They concurred, they said, "not to gratify the Nabob's revenge on these Polygars; but because, if they were not originally and internally, he has made them his enemies; and therefore it is necessary they should be reduced. It is necessary; or it is good policy they should. We do not say it is altogether just; for justice and good policy are not often united."¹

The objects, however, of the Nabob and of the Company were somewhat different. The ardent passion of the Nabob was to destroy every creature who bore any rule in the country, and place the whole under his own immediate authority. The intention of the Company was by no means to proceed to "the total extirpation of the Polygars; but only to reduce them to such a state of dependence, by seizing their forts and strong-holds, as might prevent their being troublesome in future."²

The Nabob's application for reduction of the Marattas was made at the beginning of November, 1771; at the beginning of December, when the consequences and views of the Presidency were understood, he recommended, if not a declaration, at any rate a suspension of the design, for fear of the Mahometans; and at the beginning of March, 1772, he renewed his application for undertaking the expedition. On the 12th of May, a force consisting of 120 artillery-men, 400 European infantry, three battalions of sepoy, six battering cannon, a body of the Nabob's cavalry, and two of his battalions of sepoy, marched from Tanjore, accompanied by Omdut ul Omrah, who was deputed by his father to conduct all operations, not military, connected with the expedition. They arrived, having met with no opposition, at Ramnadpore, the capital of the greater Marwar, on the 28th. The batteries were opened in the morning of the 2nd of April, and a practicable

¹ *Tanjore Papers*, *et supra*, p. 228, continued with p. 229, par. 24.

² *Ibid.* p. 181.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.
—
1771.

breach was effected before the evening. This time a bargain had been made with the Nabob, that he should not forestall the wishes of his allies, by the precipitate conclusion of a peace. Terms were, however, offered both by Omdut ul Omrah and the General, which, notwithstanding their inadequate means of resistance, the people of the Polygar refused. The fort was assaulted the same evening, and carried with the loss of only one European and two negroes killed. The Polygar, a miser of only twelve years of age, with his mother, and the Dowry, were taken in the place; and soon reduced to a situation which excited the compassion of Englishmen. The Nabob bargained for the plunder by a sum of money to the troops.¹

The Nabob's troops, before the 15th of June, were put in possession of all the forts in great Marwar; and on the 16th, the army began its march toward the other principality of that name. The Polygar had betaken himself to a strong-hold, named Kah-Kah, or Carracul, surrounded by thick woods, which they approached on the morning of the 23d. An English officer, with a detachment of the army, was sent to approach by a road on the opposite side, with a hope, either of drawing off some of the enemy's attention, or of finding an opportunity to enter by surprise. In the meantime submissive offers arrived from the Polygar. To guard against any stratagem to amuse, the advance of the troops was not interrupted till the morning of the 23d, when Omdut ul Omrah gave the General notice that peace was concluded, and requested that orders might be sent to stop the detachment. The orders, it seems, were intrusted to the Polygar's valahs; the Polygar's valahs, it is said, used not the requisite diligence; at any rate the sending of the orders was unhappily if not criminally mismanaged; the detachment advanced; found the Polygar reposing upon the security of the treaty, and totally off his guard; with scarcely any resistance it entered the place, and the Polygar was killed while endeavouring to escape at one of the gates. The Nabob, here too, gave a sum of money in redemption of the plunder. And these sums became the subject of immediate animosities and disputes, among

¹ Papers, at Nagpur, p. 1381—1382, and 1385.

the parties by whom pretensions to a share of them were advanced.¹

The settlement of the territory was rendered difficult, by excess of misgovernment. The people of the country, who had facilitated the conquest by remaining at their ploughs, and who expected equal indulgence under one despot as another, were turned out of their lands, and took arms all over the country. "I must repent to you," said the English officer, who was left to support Omdut al Omrah, (these are the words of a letter addressed to the Consul,) "that the settling this country in the manner expected by the Nabob, requires exterminations of a shocking nature. When we are marching, we find all over the country most villages abandoned by the men, there remaining in them only women and children, who, probably if the Nabob persists in this undertaking, must, with other poor innocents, become a sacrifice to their conquest. For, if any of our baggage remains behind, it is usually taken; our parties and stragglers are attacked. This is done by the inhabitants of some village or other. These villages being pointed out to me, I cannot pass the outposts without punishment: and not finding the objects on which my vengeance should fall, I can only determine it by reprisals; which will oblige me to plunder and burn those villages; kill every man in them; and take prisoners the women and children. These are actions which the nature of this war will require: for, having no enemy to encounter, it is only by severe examples of that kind, that we may expect to terminate it, so as to answer the end proposed."²

Complaining, that they were left without any specific instructions by the Court of Directors, that they were commanded generally to support the Nabob in all his pretensions, that they were blamed as not having given him a sufficient support, that they were balked by the Peshpotentiares to support him more than they could believe was either expedient or safe, the Governor and Council alleged that they were led on by that friend and ally from one step to another, without knowing where to stop, and without being able to make those reservations in favour of the Company which the interests of the Company ap-

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1771.

¹ Papers, at supra, pp. 1666—1668, 1667.

² 1764, p. 132.

BOOK V. appeared to require. In this manner had Tanjore been humbled and deuced: in this manner the two Marwaras had been conquered, and delivered up as a donation to the Nabob. It must be allowed, that except for a little time when he first demanded the attack on Tanjore, the Presidency had shown themselves abundantly forward to second, or rather to excite the Nabob's ardour for conquest of the minor states. The Nabob had only one scruple, the fear of their conquering for themselves. The declarations, however, of the Presidency, of the Directors, and of the King's minister plenipotentiary, the interpretations of the treaty of Paris, and especially the recent example in the surrender of the Marwaras, roused up a hope in his Highness that the time was at last arrived when the long-desired possession of Tanjore might be fully acquired.

In a conference with the President about the middle of June, 1773, the Nabob brought complaint, that there was now due from Tanjore about ten lacs of rupees, that the Raja had applied to the Mahattas and to Hyder for a body of troops, and had encouraged the Collieries to ravage part of the Carnatic territory: and intimated his intention of subduing him; all which he desired the President to consider of.¹

After a few days, at another conference, "the Nabob expressed his earnest desire that the expedition should be undertaken; spoke much of his friendship to the Company; and to show his regard for them, was willing, in case of success, to give them ten lacs of pagodas."²

As the question immediately occurred, what, in case the expedition was undertaken, was to be expected from, or done with, their neighbours, Hyder, and the Mahattas; a serious change appeared in the sentiments of the Nabob. A friendship, he said, must be established between him and Hyder; for notwithstanding all that he had done to procure for the Mahattas the benefit of English assistance, "yet he found they were not fair and open towards him at Poona;" and that whether he reduced Tanjore or

¹ Papers, at supra, p. 1187.

² Townshend's Report to the Select Committee, Papers, at supra, p. 1190.

³ The not getting them the assistance from the English, he represented as the cause of their want of friendship, since they believed that owing to his aid and them that "his had got too entire control of the whole English system, and could make them do as he pleased." Ibid.

did not reduce it, they would still come against him when it suited their affairs; that by God's blessing, however, if he and Hyder were joined, they would, with the assistance of the English, keep the Mahometans effectually on the other side of the Elstook."¹

On the 13th of June, the question underwent deliberation in the Select Committee. As to the complaint about the money unpaid, the Committee pass it over as a matter of slight importance. And as to the other complaint, that the Raja was looking to the neighbouring powers for support against the Nabob, of which they had before them no satisfactory proof, they were constrained to confess, that, if it were true, he would not be to blame. "That the Nabob," they say, "has constantly had in view the design of conquering Tanjore, will not admit of a doubt. We are firmly persuaded, that his chief motive for concluding peace with the Raja, at a time when our troops were upon the point of getting possession of the place, arose from his jealousy lest the Company purposed at a convenient opportunity to take the country from him. By that expedition, however, he obtained what he earnestly wished for, namely, the removal of that restraint which he thought himself under, by the Company's guarantee of 1762."

The Committee next record a solemn declaration, that the treaty, which was then concluded, left the Raja at the mercy of the Nabob, and bound, by a sense of self-preservation, to seek for protection against him in every quarter. "We then expressed our firm opinion, that the peace, concluded without the intervention of the Company, would not be considered by the Raja as any security to him; and that he would avail himself of the first opportunity of freeing himself from his apprehensions of the Nabob. The intelligence communicated to us by the Nabob, of the Raja's application to the Mahometans and Hyder Ali for assistance, is, in some measure, confirmed by the advices transmitted to us by Mr. Mestyn from Poonah.² Neither is the conduct of the Raja, in this in-

¹ President's Report to the Select Committee, *Papers*, vol. ix. p. 112.

² The author of the *Essays* of Lord Poughkeiss, p. 416 says, that by the Nabob's people were employed to seduce the Raja's subjects from his quiet letters were discovered, and all sorts of artifice employed to retard the Company's interests. The President are then complaining that the Nabob's

BOOK V. stance, to be wondered at. The apprehensions he before
 CHAP. IV. had, have been increased by the publication of the Nabob's
 1773. intention of reducing him; which has gained credit all
 over the country. He knows that, in our present situa-
 tion, we cannot interfere in the disputes between him and
 the Nabob; that the Nabob did not even allow his vakeel
 to visit the late President. Under these circumstances,
 it is not surprising, that the Raja should endeavour to
 strengthen himself, by every means in his power, to
 enable him to withstand any attempts of the Nabob
 against him.*

That the Presidency had reason to pass over in silence,
 or at least with neglect, the complaints of the Nabob,
 respecting the payment of the Raja's debt, sufficiently ap-
 pears from the statement of the facts. Of fifty lacks,
 exacted as the compensation for peace, twelve lacks and
 a half were paid down. By mortgaging jewels and land, to
 the Dutch at Negapatam, and the Danes at Tranquebar,
 he had contrived to pay the remainder, together with eight
 lacks for the purchase of two years, leaving a balance of
 only ten lacks upon the whole.

Notwithstanding the absence of criminality on the part
 of the Raja, the Presidency resolved that they ought to
 destroy him. "It is evident," they say, "that in the pre-
 sent system,† it is dangerous to have such a power in the
 heart of the province: for, as the Honourable Court have
 been repeatedly advised unless the Company can engage
 the Raja to their interest, by a firm promise of support
 in all his just rights, we look upon it as certain, that,
 should any troubles arise in the Carnatic, whether from
 the French or a country enemy, and present a favourable
 opportunity of freeing himself from his apprehensions of
 the Nabob, he would take part against him, and at such a
 time might be a dangerous enemy in the south. The pro-
 priety and expediency, therefore, of embracing the present

Letters of intelligence state always a set of facts exactly calculated to support
 the point, whatever it is, at which the Nabob bent that moment directing.

* Pagoda, *ut supra*, p. 1011.

† See the Letter from the Dutch to the Nabob (Hist. 1712, Defence of Lord
 Teyn, *ibid.* 84.

‡ By "present system," they mean the orders from England to support the
 Nabob, as absolute sovereign, in all his pretensions; which held their hands
 from interfering to protect the Raja.

opportunity of reducing him entirely, before such an event takes place, are evident."*

Never, I suppose, was the resolution taken to make war upon a lawful sovereign, with the view of "reducing him entirely," that is, stripping him of his dominions, and either putting him and his family to death, or making them prisoners for life, upon a more accommodating principle. We have done the Raja great injury. We have no intention to do him right. This constitutes a full and sufficient reason for going on to his destruction. Such is the doctrine; the practical improvement is obvious. Do you wish a good reason for effecting any body's destruction? First do him an injury sufficiently great, and then if you destroy him, you have, in the law of self-defence, an ample justification!†

In the opinion of the Presidency, no danger attended the operations required for the destruction of the Raja. As to Hyder, he had too much business on his hands, and knew his own interest too well, to make the English just now his enemies on account of the Raja. With regard to the Malabar, they were sure to invade the Carnatic, whenever they could expect to do so with any success; and that would happen neither sooner nor later on account of the reduction of Tanjore."

The next point to consider was, the conditions upon which the Nabob should be accommodated with the destruction of the Raja, and the transfer of his dominions. The first condition was, that the Nabob should advance cash, or good bills, sufficient for the expense of the expedition. The second was, that all sorts of necessaries, excepting military stores, should be amply provided by the Nabob. The third was, that instead of paying for 7,000 sepoya, he should hereafter pay for 10,000. The condition, which the Presidency endeavoured before the first war to obtain, but which they afterwards gave up, that of reserving the disposal of Tanjore to the Court of Directors; and the matter laid down by the Directors, and recognised by the Presidency, in the case of the Maratha, viz. that it was for the interest of the Company to leave the minor chiefs in the Carnatic totally defenceless, as likely to aid the Nabob in those schemes of independence which he

* *Papers, &c. supra*, p. 317b.

† *Ibid.* p. 112.

BOOK V. incessantly chartered; were on this occasion totally neglected.

1772.

The Nabob, in these cases, was accustomed to press his project eagerly, as long as he found the Presidency reluctant or undetermined; as soon as he found them engaged, and warm in the project, to manifest something of indifference or aversion. So it happened, on the present occasion. The Nabob, after several conferences, told the President, "he would not be too pressing upon the expedition's being undertaken, without it suited the Company's affairs." The Presidency, however, were in a very different disposition; they were determined, and impatient, to begin the operations immediately.

The Nabob, without much difficulty, accepted the conditions, on which the Presidency were eager to make for him the conquest of Tanjore; and it was agreed, that no peace should be concluded with the Raja, unless it should be found to be absolutely impossible to effect his destruction. The general was furnished with his instructions on the 31st of July. The Nabob bargained with the troops, by a sum of money, for the plunder of Tanjore, if the place should be taken by storm. And on the 3rd of August the army marched from Trichinopoly.

They encamped, after a skirmish, within a short distance of Tanjore, on the 5th of August. On the 13th, the following letter was received from the Raja. "The friendship and support offered by the English to this country is a matter of universal celebration and respect among all the Mahatta and Ryaspoor nations, as well as others. We have quietly submitted to the hard terms imposed on us by the Nabob; and have given him all that, by those means, he required. Some deficiency happened in the re-

¹ Papers, at page, p. 312, 313. There is a short history in many of the proceedings of the Company's affairs, which it is not possible to bring forward with much exactness in history, and which, except in a very general manner, it is not within the province of history to trace. Such details of conduct as prevent themselves may be submitted for consideration. The Author of the History and management of the East India Company, then when he was very better acquainted with the views of Madras, and who, though he is a prejudiced and unfair, is not a mendacious writer, says, p. 313, that the advice of the Raja was, his sending to borrow money of the Dutch; and had he pursued the plan of borrowing of Madras "with more regularity, and to a much larger extent, the Desert of Madras might have had an interest in establishing, for some time longer, his dominion. But Talla, though not more faithful, was less prudent than his father, Protopa Raja, who had always in regard upon at Madras to negotiate a loan, which he intended to obtain a loan."

values of the mortgaged lands; for the payment of the sums so deficient, as well as the last year's purchase (though the latter had not yet become due) I borrowed of the Scuran; and having engaged with them also for an additional sum, to discharge what was due to the young Nabob and other lower accounts, I took bills for the whole amount, and sent them to the Nabob; who, having protested my bills, has set on foot an expedition against me. Considering that no deviation of conduct can by any means be laid to my charge, and that I have fulfilled my engagements in respect of the payments I agreed to, I am confident you can never consent to this measure. Some offence should surely be proved upon me, before an expedition be undertaken against me: without any show of equity, to wage an unjust war against me, is not consistent with reason. This charitable country is the support of multitudes of people; if you, Sir, will preserve it from destruction, you will be the most good, glorious, and honoured of mankind. I am full of confidence, that you will neither do injustice yourself, nor listen to the tale of the oppressor. I only desire a continuance of that am-

BOOK V.

729

[illegible]

BOOK V. part which this country has formerly experienced from
 CHAP. IX. the English, and you will reap the fame so good an action
 deserves."†

1773.

Ground was broken before Tanjore, late on the evening of the 30th of August; and a party was advanced to a commanding spot within 500 yards of the walls. On the 31st, the engineers had run their parallels to the destined extent, but had not time to erect a redoubt which was intended to secure their left. On the morning of the 1st the enemy called in a considerable party, and attacked the trenches with mastery. They retired upon the black advance of the grenadiers; but not without some loss to the English assailants. On the 27th, in the morning, the batteries were opened. About the same time the Presidency received from Mr. Mestyn, at Pondich, a letter, to say, that a dispute between the Padwa's government, and that of Berar, afforded present occupation to the Nizam, and removed the danger of interruption to the expedition against Tanjore. The approaches were made, and the breach-*og*-batteries opened, early in the morning of the 14th of September. On the 16th, a passage of twelve feet wide was completed across the wet ditch which surrounded the walls; and the breach was so considerable, that the enemy expected the assault by day-light the next morning, when 20,000 fighting men were prepared to defend the breach. This hour being permitted to pass, they expected no further attempt till the evening; but when the sun was in the meridian, and intensely hot, and the garrison had mostly retired to obtain a little refreshment and repose, the English troops were drawn out, without notice, to the assault. The success of the stratagem was complete. The troops entered with scarcely any resistance, or any loss. And the Raja and his family were taken prisoners in the fort.‡

The Dutch had received the seaport town of Nagore

† Papers, at supra, p. 1157. The tone of the Raja's letter is indistinguishable; his assertions with regard to numbers of feet are as much, or rather as much valuable, as those of the Nizam.

‡ Papers, at supra, p. 1159.—1773. In giving an account, the next day, of the capture of the place, the English General writes to the Presidency: "The absence of the Raja is truly pitiable, and His Highness Mestyn's (the Government) is in the most happy, as the place has taken by the English arms, that the Honorable Board will want their assistance with his Highness, that these prisoners may be treated agreeably to the rank they once held in this country." Ibid. p. 1159.

and its dependencies, in assignment for the money which they had lent to the Raja of Tanjore. It was the wish, neither of the English, nor of the Nabob, that they should enjoy the advantage of retaining those possessions. The first pretence made use of was, that assistance had been lent to the Raja against the late expedition. Before the troops withdrew from Tanjore, a letter was written by the Nabob to the Presidency, recording the complaint, and demanding assistance to punish the offenders. It was also necessary to send information of the charge to the Dutch. They stoutly denied the facts; and, as there appeared to have been nothing to prove them, the charge was permitted to drop. Another resource remained. The Dutch had purchased Nagore. Upon this the Presidency gravely and solemnly declared. "As the Raja of Tanjore held his lands of the Nabob in fee, he could not, agreeably to the feudal system, which prevails all over India, alienate any part of this country to any other power, without the consent of his feign lord, the ruler of the Carnatic Paper Coast." Upon this foundation, they felt no scruple in joining with the Nabob to make war upon the Dutch. Yet it is abundantly certain, that such a plea as that of "land held in fee" could hardly enter into the mind of a native Indian, even in the way of imagination and conception. Such a thing as a feudal system or a feign lord, never had a moment's existence in India, nor was ever supposed to have, except by a few pedantic, and half-lettered Englishmen, who knew little more of the feudal system than the name. If this doctrine were true, the English had originally no just title, either to Ceylon or Madras. When they obtained the one from the Subahdar of Bengal, he was the vassal of the Mogul; when they obtained the other from the Nabob of the Carnatic, he was the vassal of Nizam al Mulk, the Subahdar of the Deccan. Besides, the Presidency themselves had, only two years before, declared that no such thing as feudality existed in India; that the only right of one state over another was power; that the stronger naturally exacted tribute of the weaker;

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.
1778.

¹ *Journal of the Governor and Council*, 22d Sept., 1778, Papers, 81 v. 2, p. 173b.—H. This part of the argument was & is here here mis-quoted by the manuscript reproduction, for Robert Halliwell.—Papers, 121b.—H.

BOOK V. but that legal dependence there was certainly none.¹ The
 CHAP. IV. troops advanced. The Dutch made a solemn protest
 1771. against the injustice; but they were not in a condition
 to make effectual resistance; and they prudently retired.
 The Nabob complained of the cold-heartedness and supine-
 ness of his English friends, because they would not support
 him in attacking the ancient possessions of the Dutch. At
 length it was arranged, that the Dutch should be re-im-
 burshed by the Nabob the money which they had advanced
 to the Raja; and that they should give up to the Nabob
 the lands and jewels which they had received in payment
 or in pledge.²

When the former war with Tanjore was projected, the
 Nabob, though he would not consent that the English
 should garrison Tanjore, if taken, yet proposed that he
 himself should place in it a garrison of Europeans. This
 time he would not consent to even so much, but insisted
 upon it, that Tanjore should be garrisoned with his own
 troops.³ The Presidency so far attended to humanity, and
 the suggestion of their own general, as to express their
 wishes to the Nabob for humane treatment of the Raja
 and his family. But they were satisfied with very slight
 evidence of the gratification of these desires. The wretched
 Raja and his mother addressed a letter, each of them, to
 the Nabob; telling him that they were remarkably well
 treated. These letters were shown to the Presidency, and
 the Presidency told the Directors, "We have much satis-
 faction to learn, by letters from the Raja and his mother
 to the Nabob, communicated to us, that they are treated
 with much attention and humanity in their confinement."⁴
 The Nabob could never be at a loss, upon such admirable
 terms as these, for a proof of anything which he could pos-
 sibly desire.

Intelligence of the dethronement of the Raja, and of the
 transfer of his dominions to the Nabob, was not delayed
 by the Company's servants. It was received in London,
 with all the documents and details, on the 28th of March,
 1774. Three weeks elapsed before the departure of the
 last ships of the season: but the Directors made no remark

¹ *Vide supra*, p. 68.

² *Papers of supra*, p. 1112, 1113, 1175, 1201, 1205, 1220, 1261.

³ *Ibid.* p. 1128.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 1220.

upon the revolution in Taryore. Upon so great a change effected in the state of these dominions, without advice or solicitude, the sovereigns, as if they had no opinion to express, that is, were incapable for the moment of executing the functions of government, maintained absolute silence. In the course of the summer, various despatches arrived, describing the subsequent measures to which the transfer of the Taryore kingdom had given rise. No observations were elicited from the Court of Directors.¹ During the winter of 1774, and more than two months of 1775, the same silence was observed; and, if sequessence might be taken for approbation, the actors in India had reason to congratulate themselves upon a favourable construction of their conduct.

The secret history at that time of the East India House, that is, the history of the interests of the individuals, by whom it was governed, even if it could be given upon such evidence as history affords us, which secret history seldom can be, would not, on the present occasion, be of any importance. The only point which deserves our attention, is the general result : that the East India Company is a governing body, so constituted, as neither by what secret

[illegible]

INDEX 8
BIBLIOGRAPHY 101

157

BOOK V. agency in the minds of individuals, as to be incapable of
 CHAP. IV. giving, or capable of withholding to give, for nearly twelve
 months, an opinion on one of the most important
 1774. transactions to which their authority and power could be
 applied.

There was no little division, at that time, in the councils of the East India House. Early in the year 1774, the question was agitated of a successor to the Governor of Fort St. George. The Court of Directors, by a small majority, declared for Mr. Burchard. A Court of Proprietors, called soon after to deliberate upon the subject, reversed their decision, by a small majority, and made choice of Lord Pigot.

This ancient Governor had returned to England about the end of the year 1763; and had been successively raised to the dignities of a baronet, and of an Irish peer.¹ By the weight of his fortune, by his connexion with individuals, and the reputation of his services, he enjoyed a great influence in the Company; and, after a residence of twelve years in England, discovered an inclination, or a wish, to resume the burden of the Presidency at Madras, and to rival the glory of Clive, by introducing the same reforms under the Presidency of Madras, as that illustrious Governor had introduced in Bengal. The decision in the Court of Proprietors gave the ascendancy to his party in the Court of Directors, and the qualification of his ambition was no longer delayed.

Respecting the revolution in Tanjore there was no decision in the mind of Pigot; and no sooner was the ascendancy of his party determined, than it also disappeared in the East India House. The treaty of 1768, which gave the Raja security for his throne, was the act, and a favourite act, of Governor Pigot. The subversion of it became the subject of severe condemnation in the Company's Courts. There was in the transaction, it is not to be doubted, enough to interest the feelings of any man who looked upon it with partial, or even impartial eyes; and to account for the zeal of Lord Pigot upon the most honourable motives. That his favourite delusion, Mootoo Khetra,

¹ He had gone out a soldier to Madras in 1728, and succeeded Mr. Banchett as Governor in 1764, in which appointment he continued until the end of 1768.—W.

with whom he maintained a correspondence in England, had rented lands to a great extent from the Tanjore Raja; that he was offended with the Nabob, who, after appointing him his agent in England, had failed in those remittances which made the place of agent desirable; and that an auction between two princes for the favour of the powerful servants of the Company promised a golden harvest to the relatives and connections of the Directors, were allegations thrown out by the enemies of the new resolutions; allegations which, if they had general surmise, and even general presumptions in their favour, were unsupported by particular facts.¹

On the 12th of April, the very day on which the Court of Proprietors met to choose new Directors, the Court of Directors proceeded at last to declare their decision on the business of Tanjore, and to prescribe the rules of future operation.²

Notwithstanding their ambiguous language, and still more ambiguous conduct, they declared that they had been perfectly uniform in two things; in commanding that no addition should be made to the possessions either of themselves or the Nabob; and in condemning the policy of placing Tanjore under the dominion of that ruler; "more especially," they add, "as they on the spot were of opinion, that, on account of oppressions exercised by the Nabob in his own dominions, and of his inveterate hatred to the King of Tanjore, the Tanjoreans would submit to any power whatever, rather than to the Nabob." First they condemn, though after solemn thanks formerly given to the Governor who had carried it on, the war of 1771; declaring that though it would have been right to call the Raja to account for arrears of tribute, and to interpose between him and the Marattas, it was wholly unjustifiable to make war upon him when he offered to submit to the arbitration of the Company; and still more "on any account or pretence, or under any circumstances, to put the Nabob

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1773.

¹ Hist. and Management of the E. I. C. chap. 48.

² Why, then, should these allegations be repeated? There was quite enough in the nature of the measures to warrant their condemnation, upon established principles.—W.

³ As mentioned in a preceding note, upon the authority of the official narratives, the disputes concerning the decision of the Court had been finally prepared on the 25th March. The decision did not, therefore, come in with the new Directors.—W.

BOOK V. in possession of that Kingdom."¹ They complain, upon
 CHAS. IV. this subject, of their servants, as sending them disingen-
 1778. uously incomplete information, and then taking their
 measures without authority.²

With regard to the second expedition, that in 1772 intended for the complete destruction of the Raja, they declare that it was founded upon pretences which were totally false; 1. as the Raja was not proved to have committed any offence; and, 2. as the destruction of him, instead of adding to the security of the Company, had only increased its dangers. They decree, therefore, that Mr. Wynch, their President, shall be removed from his office; that the members of their council shall be severely reprimanded; and, "unless their zeal for the interest of their employers shall manifest a proper sense of their lenity, that they shall certainly experience more rigorous marks of their resentment."³

After this retrospect of the past, the Directors immediately pen their regulations for the guidance of the future. They regarded two subjects; 1st, the restoration of the Raja of Tanjore; and, 2dly, the management of the Company's own possessions, on the coast of Coromandel; that is, the Northern Circars, and the jaghire lands in the neighbourhood of Madras. "We are convinced," said the Directors, addressing the Council of Madras, "that success must, in a great measure, depend upon the wisdom of your councils, the integrity and firmness of your conduct, and in no small degree, upon the sensible exertion of those peculiar abilities for which your Right Honourable President is so justly and eminently distinguished."

With regard to the King of Tanjore, the Presidency were first to provide security, by a proper guard, for the persons of him and his family; and next, but under certain conditions, to restore him to his dominions, as they existed in 1762. The conditions were, that he should receive a garrison of the Company's troops into the fort of Tanjore; assign lands for their maintenance; pay to the Nabob the pension of 1762: assist him with such troops above as the Presidency shall join in requesting; form no treaty with

¹ General Letter to Port St. George, 12th April, 1775; papers, at supra, p. 146.

² 1782, p. 146-147.

³ 1782, p. 150, 151.

foreign powers, except in concurrence with the English BOOK V.
rulers; and neither directly nor indirectly furnish any CHAP. IV.
assistance to their enemies.

For the better management of the Company's possessions, the Council were directed, "when affairs respecting Tanjore shall have been accommodated and finally adjusted,"¹ to form a committee, consisting of five members of the Council, who should make the circuit of the Northern Circars, and collect information of all those circumstances in the state of the country which government is chiefly interested in knowing; and after this information should be gained, to take the proper steps for letting the lands during a term of years, on principles similar to those on which the lands had been let in Bengal. Respecting the jaghirs, which the Nabob hitherto had rented under the allegation, that the appearance, presented to the people of the country, of the exception of any part of his domains from his immediate jurisdiction, would be injurious to his authority; the Directors declared their dissatisfaction with the present arrangement, their determination to take the lands under their own control, unless the Nabob should submit to their conditions; and they directed their servants in the mountains to let them to him, only from year to year.²

Lord Pigot resumed the office of Governor of Fort St. George on the 11th of December, 1778. "Upon my arrival," says his Lordship, "I found a general reform was necessary in the settlement, to preserve the Company from ruin."³ A "general reform" has many examples; and those, for the most part, very powerful ones. The injunctions of the Directors were to proceed immediately to the restoration of the Raja of Tanjore. It was, however, agreed that the communication should be made with all despatch to the Nabob, to whom it was known that it would be unpleasant in the highest possible degree. There was no expedient to which Oriental artifice could have recourse, which the Nabob left untamed to ward off the blow. He endeavoured to make it appear that he had an undoubted right to the possession of Tanjore; he magnified

¹ General Letter to Fort St. George, 11th April, 1778; papers, *ut supra*, p. 142—153.

² Lord Pigot's Narrative, &c.; Defence of Lord Pigot, p. 55.

BOOK V. the merit of his services and attachment to the Company ;
 CHAP. IV. he enlarged upon the dissatisfaction of the Raja ; he claimed
 1775. the support which the letter of the King of England, brought by Sir John Lindsay, had promised him ; he deprecated the policy adopted by the Company, of doing one thing by their servants in India, and the very reverse by their Directors in England, and declared that he was unable to understand them in this double capacity. He tried the tone of flattery ; he tried that of solicity. He sought to affect their sympathy by reminding them of the many Englishmen to whom he was indebted, and whom, if stripped of Tanjore, he would be less able to pay : and of that confidence in their honour with which he had placed his residence, and that of his family, under the guns of Fort St. George. He offered to place an English garrison in the fort of Tanjore ; and only entreated, that the country might not be taken out of his hands, till the Company, who had proceeded upon partial information, should decide upon what he had to suggest.

The Council availed themselves of his offer to admit an English garrison into the fort of Tanjore ; because it enabled them at once to set the Raja at liberty, and guard his person. But they showed the Nalab that the commands of the Directors were peremptory in regard to the time of the restoration, and left them no liberty to grant the delay for which he applied. It seems to have been the expectation of the principal military officer belonging to the Presidency, Sir Robert Fletcher, that he should be the person by whom the immediate business of restoring the Raja should be performed. But when the President signified his intention of proceeding for that purpose to Tanjore in person, the Council voted unanimously, that the business should be placed in his hands ; and as the crop was on the ground, and the harvest approaching, that no time should be lost in giving possession of the country to the Raja.

Sir Robert Fletcher, however, though he had joined in the vote for sending the President, proposed another for sending along with him two other members, under explicit and particular instructions of the Board : declaring that without this condition he would not have assented to the vote in favour of the President ; that the Board were not

justified in the delegation of undefined and unlimited powers, except in a case of extreme necessity: and that, if this measure were drawn into a precedent, the effect would be, to serve the corrupt interests of individuals at the expense of the public. The proposal was rejected by a majority of the Council; but the President took with him by choice two members of the Council and one of them a person who had voted for the deputation.

Lord Pigot set out on the 30th of March, and arrived at Tanjore on the 8th of April. On the 11th the restoration of the Raja was proclaimed. Instead of employing the troops of the Company to do nothing more than garrison the fort of Tanjore, the President got the Raja to request that they might be employed for the protection of the whole country. And instead of assigning revenue barely to defray their expenses, to save the trouble and dispute which accounts are apt to produce, he offered to give a neat sum to cover all expenses: namely, four lacs of pagodas a year. On the 5th of May, Lord Pigot returned to Madras, and having laid before the Council a copious diary of his proceedings, with all the documents which belonged to them, received a vote of approbation, which, with regard to the general measures, was unanimous.

Mr. Paul Benfield was a servant of the Company in the civil department, and as yet in one of the lowest situations. He had betaken himself to more lucrative functions than the duties of his office; and had become not only a favourite of the Nabob, but the principal agent, in what was at that time one of the first concerns in the settlement, the lending of money.

It appears that Mr. Benfield gave to Lord Pigot a general intimation of certain interests which he held in Tanjore, before the departure of that Lord for the restoration of the Raja, and received from him a general disavowal of any intention to injure his rights. Immediately after the restoration of the Raja was proclaimed, a letter from Mr. Benfield was delivered to Lord Pigot at Tanjore, in which he stated, that for money lent to the Nabob he had assignments upon the revenues of Tanjore, to the amount of 400,000 pagodas, equal to 160,000*l.*; and for money lent to individuals in Tanjore, assignments upon the present

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1776.

BOOK V. CHAP. IV.
1776.

resp to the amount of 180,000 pagodas, equal to 72,000*l.*; making together the immense sum of 224,000*l.* lent by a junior servant of the Company, with a salary of a few hundred pounds a-year, and who was conspicuous, among other things, for keeping the finest carriages and houses at Madras.

Lord Pigot replied, that, in a case like this, he could do nothing more than by the circumstances before the Board. Mr. Benfield expressed dissatisfaction that the powers of government were not immediately exerted to procure him all that he desired; and he wrote to the Council, expressing his confidence that they would afford him "assistance to recover his property, while the Right Honourable President, under their commission, remained in authority over those countries." Certain Members of the Board were for proceeding immediately to consider the claims of Mr. Benfield. The majority, however, decided, that the consideration should be postponed till Lord Pigot's return.

A few days after the return of Lord Pigot to the Board, the application of Mr. Benfield was appointed for the subject of deliberation. Mr. Benfield was called upon for particulars and vouchers; but vouchers Mr. Benfield was unable to produce. The transactions, he said, were registered in the books of the Catcherry; and the Nabob would acknowledge them. As for the books of the Catcherry, they were never produced; and as for the acknowledgment of the Nabob, there were two questions, one, whether the assignments of the Nabob, if the debts were real, gave any right to the revenues of Tanjore, now restored to the Raja; another, whether the whole, demand and acknowledgment, taken together, were not a collusion between the Nabob and Benfield; a stuffed fraud upon the Company and the Raja. For the debts, said to be due from individuals, which, in the specification had dwindled down to 30,000 pagodas, there was nothing to give but the word of Mr. Benfield himself. After due consideration, a majority of the Board came to the following decision: "That the Raja of Tanjore, being put in full possession and management of his country by the Company's express orders, it is the opinion of the Board that it is not in their power to comply with Mr. Benfield's request in any re-

spect, these claims on individuals, which bear the appearance of having no connexion with government, not being sufficiently explained to enable the Board to form an opinion thereon, and the assignments of the Nabob not being advisable."

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1776.

This resolution was passed on the 20th of May. On the 3rd of June Mr. Brooks, one of the majority who had thrown out the claims of Mr. Benfield, entered a minute, in which he stated, that supposing Mr. Benfield to have demanded the assistance of the Council, he had voted against him; if he had then, as now, understood that he only requested their assistance, he would have voted for him; he, therefore, moved, that the Board should reconsider their vote on the claims of Mr. Benfield; and give his opinion, that the crop on the ground, at the time of the restoration of the Raja, was by the Company meant to belong to the Nabob. The vote for reconsideration was supported by the majority. On the 12th of June, the subject being resumed, a motion was made by Lord Pigot, that the vote of the 20th of May should be confirmed; it was negatived by a majority of seven to five. On the following day Lord Pigot was proceeding to move that "all the claims of Mr. Benfield were private and not public concerns," when a member of the Council claimed a right to priority. The claim of the member was founded upon the notice which he had given the preceding day of his intention to put certain motions. The claim of Lord Pigot was founded upon the custom of the Presidency, corroborated by convenience, that the President should possess the initiation of business. The claims were put to the vote, when the question was decided in favour of the member; and he moved, that the crop sown during the time of the Nabob's possession be declared the Nabob's property, his assignments on it, therefore, good; and that the Raja should be instructed to respect and to restore, if they had been disturbed, the pledges in coin which were held by Mr. Benfield. When all this was voted, the question of the President, whether the claims of Mr. Benfield were private or public, was finally considered. The majority thought them, "so far as they regard Mr. Benfield, private claims; so far as they regard the Nabob's assignments to Mr. Benfield, public."

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1775.

The following point was agitated next. On the 25th of June, the President opened a proposal for establishing a factory at Tanjore. A motion to this effect was rejected by the majority on the 8th of July. As he could not obtain a factory, the President supposed that a resident would be useful. He moved that Mr. Russell, a member of the Council, and a closely connected friend of his own, should be appointed resident at Tanjore; and this was carried without much opposition.

Tanjore was the principal military station in the Carnatic, as a frontier fortress, in the line of invasion both to Hyder and the Mahometans; it was, therefore, provided with the greatest number of troops, and regularly, as the post of honour, assigned to the officer second in command. Colonel Stuart, the officer second in command, thought proper to consider Tanjore, where a small number only of troops were required, as at this time the military station of principal importance in the province; he, therefore, claimed it as his right, and that claim the majority sustained.

Though liberty had been restored to the Raja, and his rights proclaimed, much was yet to be done to put the administration of the country fully in his hands. The struggle between the President and the majority in the Council now was, whether Colonel Stuart, who would manage the business agreeably to the views of the majority, or Mr. Russell, who would manage it agreeably to the views of the President, should have the opportunity of placing the administration in the hands of the Raja.

Mr. Russell was one of the gentlemen named by the Court of Directors to form one of the Committees of Circuit to explore the Circars; and this Committee was directed to proceed upon its mission, as soon as the final settlement of affairs in Tanjore should be effected. The majority laid hold of this circumstance; and voted, as well for the immediate departure of the Committee to the northern Circars, as that of Colonel Stuart to his command in Tanjore. The President insisted, that neither was there any necessity for precipitating the departure of the Committee, nor was the business of Tanjore settled; that the Raja, who believed that the interests which had threatened him were now triumphant, and those which

rendered him overthrown, was in a state of apprehension bordering upon despair. He proposed that, for the termination of this unfortunate struggle, two members of the Board, who were stationed at the out-stillaries, and were not involved in the dispute, should be summoned to attend. This proposition was rejected. The President offered to be satisfied, if Mr. Russell was allowed to go to Tanjore for only a few days, to preserve the appearance of consistency in the proceedings of the Council, and to quiet the alarms of the Raja. This too was rejected.

Hitherto the proceedings of both parties, whatever name they may deserve in point of wisdom or virtue, were regular in point of form. Only one alternative now remained for Lord Pigot; the majority was either to be obeyed, or their authority was to be resisted. Lord Pigot resolved to resist, and the method which he pursued was as follows:

He asserted that the President was an integral part of the Council; that it was not competent to perform any acts of government without him; and that he had a right to withhold his concurrence from any propositions which the majority might urge. This was pretty nearly the same doctrine which had suggested itself to Mr. Hastings in Bengal, but the practical application was somewhat different.

On the 19th of August, it was moved that a copy of instructions for Colonel Stuart, prepared by the commanding officer, should be taken into consideration. The President declared that he would not put the question. The objection presented a question of importance; and the majority resolved to adjourn. The following day, the Council assembled, and the same motion was made. The President declared that he would not allow the question to be agitated at the Board. The majority, nevertheless, approved of the instructions, and prepared the draught of a letter to the officer at Tanjore, directing him to deliver over the command of the garrison to Colonel Stuart. The President declared that he would sign neither; affirmed that without his signature they could have no authority, and warned his opponents to desist. The result of the majority were yet embarrassed, and they adjourned the Council for two days. On the 22nd of August, the day

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.
—
3798.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1776.

on which they first assembled, the majority produced a minute, in which they deny that the concurrence of the President is necessary to constitute an act of government; affirm that the vote of the majority constitutes an act of government; and that it tends to subvert the constitution, for the President to refuse either to put a question, or to carry into execution the decisions of the majority. The President proposed, that questions of so much importance should be left to the decision of their honourable masters; and that here, till their pleasure should be known, both parties should allow the matter to rest.

This, too, was not agreeable to the wishes of the majority. They came to a resolution, that, as the President would not sign the instructions to Colonel Stuart, and the letter to the officer at Tanjore, a letter should be written to the Secretary, directing him to sign them in the name of the Council, and transmit them as authentic instruments of government to the parties addressed.

The letter was written, and approved by all the gentlemen of the majority. They began to sign it in order, and two of them had already written their names, when Lord Pigot took, or snatched it out of the hand of the man who held it. He then took a paper out of his pocket, and said he had a charge to present against two members of the Board, and named the two who had just signed the letter which he had snatched. The accusation was, that by signing orders to the Secretary to give instructions to Colonel Stuart, they had been guilty of an act subversive of the authority of government, and tending to introduce anarchy. By the standing orders of the Company, any member of the Council, against whom a charge was preferred, was not allowed to deliberate or vote on any of the questions relating to the charge. When the two accused members were excluded, the President had a majority by his own casting vote. It was therefore voted to suspend the members in question, and then the President had a permanent majority. After the vote of suspension, the Council

I It would appear from the account, that Lord Pigot had been prepared with the charge, in anticipation of what would happen; and a particular instance of the insurrection, noticed by Mr. Pigot, one of the majority, to Mr. Dumas, in London, that while the letter was being written, the President retired from the Council to his own apartment, and after a short interval returned. It was in this interval that he prepared his charge. Great Papers, No. 181.—W.

adjourned to the following day which was the 53rd. The gentlemen of the former majority forbore to attend; but they sent by a public notary a protest, in which, besides denouncing the principal act of the following day, they, as the majority of the Council, declare themselves the governing body, and claim the obedience of the settlement. This protest was sent by the same agency to the commanders of his Majesty's troops, and to all persons holding any authority at Madras. In consequence of what he deemed so great an outrage, Lord Pigot summoned the Council again to meet at four o'clock, when they passed a vote, annulling the whole of the measures who had signed the protest, and ordered Sir Robert Fletcher, the commanding officer, to be put under arrest, and tried by a Court martial.

The opponents were not behind in violence. They speedily assembled, declared themselves a Council vested with all the powers of government, and resolved to arrest the person of Lord Pigot, and confer the command of the army, Sir Robert Fletcher being ill, on Colonel Stuart.¹ The task of performing the arrest of Lord Pigot was devolved on the Colonel, who, by acquiescence, had accepted from him the command of the army. The greater part of the next day, the 24th, the Colonel passed in company, or in business, with his Lordship; breakfasted with him as well as dined; and having accepted an invitation to sup at his house, and made his arrangement to arrest him by the way, was in the carriage of Lord Pigot along with him, when it was surrounded and stopped by the troops.

As the point, for which all this confusion was created, was the extremely minute one, whether Mr. Russell should or should not go for a few days to Tanjore, it is not easy to believe, that something of importance did not remain at the bottom, which it was not the interest of the parties to disclose. One thing is certain, that the parties, and they had the best means of information, cast the most odious imputations upon one another, and charged the most con-

¹ In answering afterwards the question of the parties, a question was raised about the time of the resolution to arrest Lord Pigot. It appeared on three occasions before the witnesses of Lord Pigot, on supposing that either of the two troops, and granting the arrest of Sir Robert Fletcher. That the witnesses of the parties, who were present on England for the imprisonment of Lord Pigot, and whose witnesses were not contradicted, affirmed, that the English, individually witness and subscribe for it, that from the nature of the error, and that it is clear, and not at all, that it is clear at which the resolution of the majority was taken.

They proceeded to the further violence of suspending all those members of the Council, who had voted with the President; but it does not appear that any harshness attended his confinement, or that he was not indulged with every freedom, consistent with the means necessary to prevent his resuming his place in the government.

When intelligence was brought to England of the violent act of the Council of Madras, it excited among the members of the Company, and still more in the nation at large, both surprise and indignation. In the Court of Directors, the party who defended, or at any rate attempted to apologise for the authors of the late revolution, were nearly equal to the party by whom they were condemned. But in a Court of Proprietors held on the 22d of March, 1777, a resolution was passed by a majority of 382 to 140, in which it was recommended to the Court of Directors to take the most effectual measures for restoring Lord Pigot to the full exercise of his authority, and for requiring into the conduct of the principal actors in his impeachment. In consequence of this proceeding, it was, on the 11th of April, carried by a rising vote in the Court of Directors, that Lord Pigot and his friends should be restored to the situations from which they had been improperly removed; that seven members of the Council, including the Commander in Chief, who were declared to have subverted the government by a military force, should be suspended from the service, and not restored without the immediate act of the Directors. But a vote of censure was at the same time passed on Lord Pigot, whose conduct in several instances was pronounced worthy of blame. The means were not yet exhausted of defeating this turn of affairs. Not only were impeachments accumulated, and placed in the way; but a fresh set of resolutions were brought forward, importing the recall of both parties, as the only mode of accomplishing that fundamental investigation which the importance of the occasion required. These propositions, in favour of which the ministers were supposed to have exerted all their influence, were voted by a majority of 414 to 317, in a General Court on the 6th of May. The attention of Parliament was also attracted. Governor Johnston, who was distinguished for the part which he had taken in discussions relative to Indian

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1777

BOOK V.
CHAPTER.
1777.

affairs, moved, on the 22nd of the same month, a series of resolutions, highly approving the conduct of Pigot, and the measures which had been pursued for his restoration, while they condemned the proceedings of his enemies, and the motion for his recall. Almost all the questions of the English policy, relating to the affairs of the Carnatic, underwent discussion in a long and animated debate; which was closed by a vote of no more, notwithstanding ministerial influence, then ninety to sixty seven, against the resolutions.

After these proceedings, a commission was prepared under the Company's seal, bearing date the 16 of June 1777, by which Lord Pigot was restored to his office; but he was at the same time directed, within one week after the despatch of the first ship, which, subsequent to the date of his restoration, should proceed from Madras, to deliver over the government to his successor; and either by that ship, or the first that should follow, to take his passage to England. The members of the Council who had concurred in displacing Lord Pigot were recalled; and the military officers, who had been chiefly instrumental in executing the arrest and confinement, were ordered to be tried by courts martial on the spot. Till inquiry should be made into the conduct of both parties in the recent scenes, when it would be seen which of the actions might deserve, and which might not deserve to be removed from the service, the Directors thought proper to form a temporary government; in which Sir Thomas Rushdell, after the departure of Lord Pigot, was to succeed to the chair John Whitehill to be second in council; and Major General Hester Mordaunt, Commander of the Forces, to be third, without the power of any further advancement.^a

^a Nothing was ever made of the enquiry. In October, 1780, the Government of Madras informed the Council that they found themselves with a lot of disturbing information on which deposition could be placed. An investigation had been pursued, having persons to depose on each side; but the basis of the corruption of the parties' hands had been thrown. Appearances to the Duke and the Marquis was considered imprudent, as they were too late, to make any thing of the demands of their friends. That of the officers by Court Martial was held to be illegal, as no military officers had been examined; they had offered to be the rulers of the supreme court of law. The chief civil officers were removed to the office reserved to English Court and Council; even the others except being again into the service. Colonel Grant afterwards returned and the army, and the military were employed at the siege of Pondicherry. Another the public events that have passed, all under investigation with respect to the IV.

Before these orders were received in India, Lord Pigot had passed beyond the reach of honour or disgrace. His constitution, worn out by age, and the operation of a hostile climate, sunk under the inactivity of his situation, and the painful feelings which preyed upon himself, after a confinement of somewhat more than eight months. Mr. Wichehill reached Madras on the 21st of August, 1777, and being the senior in council, acted as President and Governor till the 8th of February following, when Sir Thomas Rumbold arrived.*

Once more the subject was taken up by the House of Commons. On the 16th of April, 1778, Admiral Pigot, the brother of the deceased Governor, began the discussion with a history of the transactions which had led to the deposition of Lord Pigot, and with the heaviest charges against the actors in that scene. After which he moved a series of resolutions, affirming the principal facts; affirming also that orders had been given to hold courts-martial for the trial of the principal military officers engaged in the crime, and directing an address to his Majesty for the prosecution, by the Attorney-General, of four of the members of the Council, who had returned to England. The resolutions gave rise to considerable debate; but were finally adopted. Proceedings in the courts of law were immediately commenced; and on the 10th of December the four members were tried for a misdemeanour, before a special jury; and found guilty. When brought up for judgment, a fine of 1000*l.* was imposed upon each. To men of their fortunes, this was a punishment hardly to be felt. Such is the difference, in the minds of English judges, between the crime of deposing the head of a government abroad, and that of writing a censure upon one of the instruments of government at home.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1777.

* Second Report of the Committee of Secretaries, 1781; and Parliamentary History, 1777, 1778, 1780, State of India relative to Mysore, printed for Cadell, 1778; *Parliamentary History*, printed for Cadell, 1777; Lord Pigot's Narrative, &c. &c. State of Mr. Dalrymple, &c. &c. Address of Lord Pigot, drawn up by Mr. Trenchard; Case of the President and Council, fully stated, &c. &c. 1778; Proceedings against George Bogle and others (in Bogle's State Trials, vol. 1, 2); and State of the East India Company; &c. &c. printed by the Company of Merchants, and the East India Company. The two last, both by the agents of the Nabob, were published by Cadell, in 1777. The last Memoirs of Anandea, in a series of letters to a friend, during his year's residence in different parts of India, three of which were spent in the service of the Nabob of Arcot. By Philip Barker Wichehill, Esq. 7*th* 1777-78.

* Parliamentary History, vol. 28.; Bogle's State Trials, vol. 201.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1772.

When the Northern Circars were first delivered into the hands of the Company, it was judged expedient to govern the country for a time in the manner which was already established. The Circars of Rajamundry, Ellore, and Goudapilly, were consigned, under a lease of three years, to a native named Husein Ali Khan, who had previously governed them under the Nizam, with the state and authority of a viceroy. The remaining Circar of Cissacole was placed under a similar administration, but in the hands of a separate deputy.

A change was introduced in 1773. Administration by the agency of natives was discontinued, and the Circars were placed under the charge of Provincial Chiefs and Councils, a title and form which at that period the commercial factories were made to assume. Under the Chief and Council, formerly the Factory, of Masulipatam, were placed the districts of Goudapilly, Rajamundry, and Ellore. The Chief and Council of Visagapatam received in charge the southern parts of Cissacole; and at Ganjam, where the factory had been discontinued, a new establishment was made of a chief and council for those affairs of the country which could be most conveniently ruled from that as a centre. To these provincial boards, the financial, judicial, and, in short, the whole civil and political administration of the country, was consigned.

The disappointment in their expectations of pecuniary supply from the Northern Circars, as from their other dominions, and the sense which they entertained of the defects of the existing administration, had recommended to the Court of Directors the formation of the Committee of Council. This Committee were directed, by personal inspection, and inquiry upon the spot, to ascertain with all possible exactness, the produce, the population, and manufactures of the country; the extent and sources of the revenue; the mode and expense of its collection; the state of administration of justice; how far the financial and judicial regulations which had been introduced in Bengal were applicable in the Circars; what was the condition of the forts; and the circumstances of the Zemindars or Rajas, what the military force of each; the expenses both of his army and household; and the means which he possessed of defraying them. The Directors

declared it to be their intention to let the lands, after the expiration of the present leases, for a term of years, as in Bengal; not, however, to deprive the hereditary Zemindars of their incomes; but leave them an option, either to take the lands which had belonged to them, under an equitable valuation, or to retire upon a pension. They agreed, at the same time, the design of taking the military power into their own hands, and of preventing the Zemindars from maintaining those bodies of troops, with which they were perpetually enabled to endanger the peace and security of the state.

Within a few days after the deposition of Lord Pigot, the new Governor and Council drew up the instructions of the Committee, and sent them to the discharge of their duties. They had made some progress in their inquiries; when Sir Thomas Rumbold took the reins of government at Madras, in February, 1778¹.

In Council, on the 24th of March, the Governor represented, that on account of the diminution in the number of members, it was now inconvenient, if not impossible, to spare a sufficient number from the Council to form the Committee; that the Committee was attended with very great expense; that all the ends which were proposed to be served by it might be still more effectually accomplished if the Zemindars were sent for, the desired information obtained from the Zemindars, and the jagannabundy or schedule of rent, settled with them at the seat of government; that by this expedient the Zemindars would be made to feel more distinctly their dependance upon the government, both for punishment and protection; that integrity, and the pursuit of private, at the expense of public interests, which might be expected in the Circars, would be prevented at Madras; and that an infinite amount of time would be saved. For these reasons he moved, that the Committee of Circars should be suspended, and that in future the annual rent of the districts should be settled at the Presidency, to which the Zemindars should, for that purpose, be ordered to repair. The Council acquiesced in his reasons, and without further deliberation the measure was decreed.

¹ *Fifth Report of the Committee of the House of Commons, 1812, Second Report, Committee of Secretaries, 1786. App. B. 122.*

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1778.

As soon as this intelligence reached the Zemindars they were thrown into the greatest consternation. It was expressly urged by the provincial councils on the spot, that the Zemindars were in general poor, and hardly able to support their families with any appearance of dignity; that many of them were altogether unable to defray the expense of a distant journey, and of a residence for any considerable time at the seat of government; that the greater part of them were in debt, and in arrears to the Company; that they must borrow money, to enable them to undertake the journey, and still further incapacitate themselves for fulfilling their engagements; that their absence would greatly augment the confusion of the country, obstructing both the collection of the revenue, and the preparation of the investment; and that some of them laboured under the weight of so many years, and so many bodily infirmities, as to render the journey wholly impracticable.¹

The President and Council persevered in their original design; and a considerable number of Zemindars were brought to Madras. Of the circumstances which followed, it is necessary that a few should be pointed out. In every case, the Governor alone negotiated with the Zemindars, and regulated their payments: in no case did he lay the grounds of his treaty before the Council: in every case the Council, without inquiry, acquiesced in his decision. Of all the Zemindars in the Northern Circars, the most important was Visamm Bha, the Raja of Vinnagarum, whose territory had the extent of a considerable kingdom, and whose power had hitherto held the Company in awe. The character of the Raja was voluptuousness and sloth; but along with this he was mild and equitable. Settem Bha, his brother, was a man who possessed in a high degree the talents and virtues of a Hindu. He was simple, patient, full of application, intrepid, scrupulous, strict at

¹ Of thirty-one Zemindars summoned to Madras, thirteen did not obey the summons, nor was their presence enforced. One died who came to Madras; and the sickness of the others and distress which the crisis created, and on which much depended, so that the arrangement would, in some degree, be frustrated from the influence of the provincial authorities, and deprived them of the valuable services, or persons, which they admitted they were at the point of receiving. The exact one at the Presidemy were probably more moderate than those in the provinces. The settlements made with them were not unreasonably very trifling. Minutes of Evidence in the case of Sir J. Barfield, p. 308, et seq. 1787.

no strictly in the pursuit of his ends, and was stained with the infamy of numerous crimes. Sittum RAO had so encroached upon the faculty and weakness of his brother as to have transferred to himself the principal power in the province. The yoke, however, which he had placed upon the neck of the Raja was galling, and sustained with great uneasiness. Jaggermut RAO, a connexion of the family, united by marriage with the Raja, who had superintended the details of government, as Dewan, or financial minister, and was universally respected as a man of understanding and virtue, had been recently deprived of his office, through the machinations of Sittum RAO.¹ The points which required adjustment between Viziam RAO and the Company had suggested a war, or afforded a pretext, for calling him to the Presidency before Sir Thomas Bumbold arrived. Against this order he concentrated, on the ground of his poverty, and of the detriment to his affairs—which absence would induce. He offered to settle with the Council at Vissapatnam for any reasonable tribute or rent, and complained of his brother Sittum RAO, whom he described as engaged in machinations for his ruin. Sittum had obeyed the very first summons to repair to Madras, and had negotiated successfully for the lease of one principal division of the lands. He carried another point of still greater importance; which was to remove from the Presidency the appointment of Dewan to the Raja. To this regulation the Raja manifested the greatest aversion. The President addressed him in the following words: "We are convinced that it is a measure which your own welfare and the interest of the Company render indispensably necessary. But should you continue obstinately to withstand the pressing instances that have repeatedly been made to you by the Board, collectively as well as separately, we shall be under the necessity of taking such resolutions as will in all probability be extremely painful to you, but which, being once passed, can

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1778.

4

¹ The characters given of both these persons are corroborated by the evidence in correspondence related. Sittum's story, as we have already seen, are both authentic. They were both men of ability, and equally so of integrity. They were both competitors for the control of Viziam, and the management of the Madrasah; and both equally conspicuous in taking advantage of every favorable opportunity to provide for their own interests. If any preference might be claimed for either, it seems to have been due to Sittum.—V.

BOOK V. never be recalled." To this Viceroy Râ made the following answer: "I shall consider myself henceforward as divested of all power and consequence whatever, seeing that the Board urge me to do that which is contrary to my fixed determination, and that the result of it is to be the loss of my country." The canon which was urged by the President for this solitary proceeding was, the necessity of having a man of abilities to preserve the order of the country, and secure the revenues. The Court of Directors, however, say, in their general letter to the Presidency of Madras, dated the 10th of January, 1781, "Our surprise and concern were great, on observing the very inferior treatment which the ancient Raja of Vissanagaram received at the Presidency; when, deaf to his representations and entreaties, you, in the most arbitrary and unaccountable manner, appointed his ambitious and intriguing brother, Sittaram Râ, Dewan of the Circar, and thereby put him in possession of the revenues of his elder brother, who had just informed you that he sought his ruin: for however necessary it might be to adopt measures for securing payment of the Company's tribute, no circumstance, except actual and avowed resistance of the Company's authority, could warrant such treatment of the Raja."¹ And in one of the resolutions which was moved in the House of Commons by Mr. Dundas, afterwards Lord Melville, on the 25th of April, 1782, it was declared, "That the Governor and majority of the Council of Fort St. George did, by violence and harsh treatment, compel Viceroy Râ, the Raja of Vissanagaram, to employ Sittaram Râ as the Dewan or Manager of his Zemindary, in the room of Jaggersant, a man of probity and good character; that the compulsive measures made use of towards the Raja, and the gross ill-treatment which he received at the Presidency, were humiliating, unjust, and cruel in themselves, and highly derogatory to the interests of the East India Company, and to the honour of the British nation."

Nor was this the only particular in which the Presidency and Council contributed to promote the interest and gratify the ambition of Sittaram Râ. They not only prevailed upon the Raja to be reconciled to his brother; they

¹ Second Report, Committee of Secretory, 1781; Appendix, No. 103.

confirmed his adoption of that brother's son; and "agreed," say the Secret Committee of the House of Commons, "that all under-leases should for the future be made in the adopted Raja's name; that his name should be used in all acts of government; and that Sittaram Rao, his father, who was in reality to enjoy the power, should be accepted of by the Board as a security for this young man."¹

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1798.

In the opinion of the Directors, even this was not all. They accused the Presidency of under-selling the lands by a corrupt connivance with Sittaram Rao. "The Report," they said, "of the Committee of Circuit, and the positive sentence of Sittaram Rao, warned us in asserting that more than double the amount of the tribute for which you have agreed, might and ought to have been obtained for the Company. We are in possession," they add, "of one fact, which, so far as it extends, seems to convey an idea, that the Zemindars have been abused, and their money misapplied at the Presidency."

The Directors added to the following fact; that Mr. Redhead, private Secretary to Sir Thomas Rumbold, the Governor, had actually received from Sittaram Rao a bond for one lac of rupees, on condition of his services in procuring for the donor the Deanship of the Zemindary, a reconciliation with his brother, a confirmation of his son's adoption, the Zemindary of Anapilly, and the Fort of Vinnangarum; advantages, the whole of which, Sittaram Rao obtained; and corruption, of which though made known to the President and Council by the proceedings of a court of justice, they afforded to the Court of Directors no information.²

Another fact was: that to the same Mr. Redhead, as

¹ Second Report, Committee of Secret, 1791, p. 15. "M. de Warren was ambitious, his adoption of his nephew was to afford a liberty to him to leave the Council of Madras, and to return to France as it is said. That the transaction thus between the brothers, however coloured, was fraudulent, and prejudicial to good affairs, was indubitably given by its result. It was effected wholly, 1795. The Order of Veng-pook, Mr. Lumsden, wrote June, 1796, to Mr. A., that, despite, that having thus put on, the brothers lived in perfect harmony, without any dispute; that the revenues had improved and were regularly paid; and that they could not have been so fixed as all of the brothers had been at Madras. "Whatever, therefore, the mismanagement may have been, this transaction did not shew the company lost sight of it.—M."

² See Letter of 15th January, 1791, quoted above.

³ Third Report, Committee of Secret, 1791, p. 15, 16. Twelfth Resolution of Mr. Dundas, moved in the House of Commons, 25th April, 1792.

BOOK V. appeared by a codicil to his will, Amur ul Omra, son of
 CHAP. IV. the Nubeh, had an order from his father to pay a lac of
 rupees.

1778.

Another fact was: that two lacs and one thousand rupees had been transmitted to Sitarama Bha, while at Madras; of which money, though he was greatly in arrears, no part was paid to the Company.

It further appeared: that according to one of the checks decided by the Company upon the corruption of their servants, if Sir Thomas Rumbold possessed in India any money on loan, or merchandise on hand, at the time of entering upon his office, he was by his covenant bound, before he proceeded to recover the money, or dispose of the goods, to deliver to the Board a particular account of such property upon oath: that upon an accurate examination of the records of the Council during the whole of Sir Thomas Rumbold's administration, no proceedings to that effect could be found: that Sir Thomas Rumbold, nevertheless, had remitted to Europe, between the 6th of February, the day of his arrival at Madras, and the beginning of August in the same year, the sum of 45,000*l.* and, during the two subsequent years, a further sum of 110,000*l.*, the whole amounting to 164,000*l.*; although the annual amount of his salary and emoluments did not exceed 20,000*l.*

Sir Thomas opposed the evidence of corruption which these transactions imported, by asserting, that he had property in India at the time of his return, sufficient to account for the remittances which he afterwards made. The evidence which he produced consisted in certain papers and books of account, which exhibited, upon the face of them, sums to a great amount. And one of the witnesses, examined before the Secret Committee of the House of Commons, stated his having heard in conversation from Sir Thomas Rumbold, that he had in Bengal, at the time of his last arrival in India, about 60,000*l.*; part in Company's cash, part in bonds, and mortgages at interest, on some of which three or four years' interest was due.¹

¹ Secret Report, at pages, p. 31, 32.—*W.* These particulars are loosely and inaccurately stated. It was proved by the evidence and admissions of Sir Thomas, Sir T. Rumbold's Attorney in Bengal, that at the time when Sir Thomas quitted Bengal in 1778, the property belonging to him was 981,261 rupees, exclusive of interest, valued in 1810*l.* and bearing interest at 4 in 10 per cent.

The lands or taxes in the Chocoma were let, some for ten years, some for five.¹ The pagers about Malaga was re-let to the Nabob, not for one, but for three years. And in no case was any satisfactory enquiry performed.

The Directors, conspiring that their orders, and the interests of the Company, had been equally disregarded, and that while the dignity and feelings of the Remouder were violated, the rights of the immediate cultivators were left without protection, pronounced upon the whole of these proceedings their strongest condemnation.

In the agreements formed with the Sahabdar, or Nizam, respecting the five Northern Circars, in 1767 and 1768, it was arranged, that Guntour, which was one of them, should be granted in jaghirs to Baidat Jung, his brother : to be enjoyed by that Prince during his life, or so long as the Sahabdar should be satisfied with his conduct,² and upon expiration of the interest of Baidat Jung, to revert to the Company. About the latter end of the year 1774, the Governor and Council were influenced by letters from the chief of Ma-ulaputram, that a body of French troops, under the command of M. Lally, were retained in the service of Baidat Jung, and received reinforcements and stores by the port of Hoogally. The mention of a French force in the service of a native prince was sure to kindle the jealousy of the English. The Presidency of Madras held the affair of sufficient importance to communicate with the Supreme Council of Bengal on the propriety of using

which became well founded, went to other schemes in the beginning of 1793, at which time the amount of interest raised thereon is £11,000. There seems no other property in the name (then as now). The reason for its withdrawal from the name of the society is because 1792 and 1793, as previously said, is supposed to be a plan to let Thomas Marshall & Co. have it, and from the 1st of August and before that time (and 1793 was, therefore, it is believed, the foundation laid thereon). That said property had a capital of £100,000, as was proved by accounts, but a very few of it were paid in. There is, then, the balance of the account, which was, the agents in fact, £1,000,000, as was said. This is to be added after there have been the account of the money making a total of something more than £1,000,000. It is now concluded that the £1,000,000 is a very small sum. There will be some a month or two, to be necessary, not, in addition, the large amount of the foundation is England. Remarks of Graham, Esq., at 1802.—37.

²² They were hit for five years. The only case in which a leave of two years was granted was to Bernard Williams for political, or, depending on one, and that was granted by the British Government some time prior to the Russian Revolution.

I like so long as the Submarine should be collected, but until by Trade
 Financing with the Company. See the Treaty in Minutes of November, p.
 21-22.

BOOK V.
CHAP. II.

1778

measures to procure the removal of the French from the territories of Basant Jung: and reserved the authority of that Board, not only to himself, with Basant Jung, upon their immediate discharge; but to prepare a body of troops for marching to his frontiers, and to threaten him, that "they would take possession of his country, and negotiate with the Nizam, even by an entire renunciation, of the revenue, for the ransom of it to the Company." It was deemed advisable to treat with the Nizam, as principal in the treaty of 1768, and a party to every agreement between the Company and Basant Jung: and they desired his co-operation for compelling his brother, either first to disengage the Europeans from his service, and trust to the English the defence of Guntoor, which was their own; or, secondly, to let that Circle to them at a rent determined by reasonable valuation. The Nizam replied in friendly terms; declaring that he had sent a person of distinction to procure the removal of the French from the service of his brother: and that "every article of the treaty should remain fixed to a hair's breadth." From the date of these transactions, which extended to the beginning of the year 1779, though several representations had been received of the continuance of the French in the territory of Basant Jung, no ulterior measures were adopted by the Board until the 10th of July, 1778, when the President and Select Committee entered a minute, expressing a conviction of danger from the presence, in such a situation, of such a body of men. A negotiation, through the medium of the Nabob, without the intervention of the Nizam, was commenced with Basant Jung. That prince was now alarmed with the prospect presented by the probable designs of Hyder Ali, and well disposed to quiet his apprehensions by the benefit of English protection. On the 30th of November, the President presented to the Board a proposal, tendered by Basant Jung, in which that Prince agreed to cede the Guntoor District for a certain annual payment, to disengage the French from his service, and to accept the engagement of the English to afford him troops for the defence of his country. On the 27th of January, 1779, when the treaty was concluded with Basant Jung, it was thought expedient to send to the court of the Nizam a resident; who should ascertain as far as possible the

views of that Prince, and his connections with the Indian powers or the French, obviate any unfavourable impressions which he might have received; and transmit any business to which the relations of the two states might give birth. And on the 19th of April a force, under General Harper, was ordered to proceed to the protection of the territory of Basdar Jung.

In the contest with the Mahrattas, in which, at the Presidency of Bengal and Bombay, the English were engaged, the Nizam had expressed a desire to remain neutral, though he had formerly declared his hatred of Ragoba, and his connection by treaty with Fardis Purlana, the infant Peshwa, that is, with the prevailing party of the Poona Council: and though an alliance with the Berar government had been attempted by the Supreme Council, on the condition of recovering for that government some countries which had been wrested from it by the Sahadur of the Deccan. When Mr Holland, who was sent as resident by the Presidency of Madras, arrived at Hyderabad, the capital of the Nizam, on the 6th of April, he was received with every mark of respect, and with the strongest assurances of a desire to cultivate the friendship of the English. But when, at his audience, the audience proceeded to explain the transactions, which, without the participation of the Nizam, had taken place between the Company and his brother, the painful emotions of his Highness were visible: he read over the articles of the treaty of 1765; affirmed that it was violated by the conduct of the Presidency; disavowed the right of the English to interfere in the concerns of his family; declared that, if the treaty was to be regarded, the troops which, without his leave, were about to march into the country, possessed by Basdar Jung, a dependant of the Sahab, ought to be stopped; if the treaty was not to be regarded, he should be constrained to oppose them. To the apology urged by Mr. Holland, that the probability of an immediate attack by Hyder Ali left not sufficient time for consulting him; the Nizam replied that Hyder had no immediate intention to molest his brother, but was meditating a speedy attack upon the Carnatic, to be conducted, like the former invasion of that province, by plundering and burning, while he avoided a battle. The Nizam was jealous of the presence of a British

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1779.

BOOK V. force with Baulat Jung, who, with such assistance, he
 CHAP. IV. doubted not, would soon aspire at independence. The
 French troops he had taken into his service, immediately
 1772. after they were disbanded by his brother; but he assured
 the British resident that he had adopted this expedient
 solely to prevent them from passing into the service of
 Hyder or the Mahometans; and described them as of little
 value, the wreck of the army of Bussy, augmented by per-
 sons of all nations. This was a contingency, which, in
 their eagerness to see the French discharged by Baulat
 Jung, the Presidency had somewhat overlooked. It was,
 no doubt, true, as they alleged, that had the Nizam con-
 sented the friendship of the English, he would have
 ordered the French troops to the coast, whence, with other
 prisoners, they might have been sent on their passage to
 Europe.

In the Select Committee, on the 5th of June, it was
 proposed by the Governor, and agreed, that the *Portucal*,
 or tribute, of five lacs of rupees, which the Company were
 bound by their treaty to pay, as compensation, for posses-
 sion of the Northern Circars, the Nizam should be solicited
 to remit. The payment of it had already been suspended
 for two years, partly on the pretence that the French
 troops were not disbanded, partly on account of the ex-
 hausted state of their finances. When this proposal was
 announced by Mr. Holland to the Nizam, he became highly
 agitated; and declared his conviction that the English no
 longer meant to observe the treaty, for which reason he
 also must prepare for war.

Mr. Holland, who had received instructions to communi-
 cate with the Supreme Council, conveyed intelligence
 of these transactions to Bengal, by sending, on the 3rd of
 September, copies of the letters which had passed between
 him and the Presidency of Madras. On the 22th of Oc-
 tober, the subject was taken into consideration at Cal-
 cutta, when the proceedings of the Madras Presidency, in
 forming a treaty with Baulat Jung, without the inter-
 position of his immediate sovereign, the Company's ally,
 and in withholding the payment, and proposing the aboli-
 tion of the portucal, underwent the most severe con-
 demnation, as tending to impeach the character of the
 English for justice and faith, and to raise them up a for-

midable energy, when they were already exposed to unusual difficulties and dangers. It was agreed, that the time demanded the interference of the Superior Board; and a letter was written on the 1st of November, 1779, to assure the Nizam that the intentions of the English government were truly pacific, notwithstanding the interpretation which he put upon the proceedings of the Council at Madras. Mr. Holland was directed to suspend his negotiations till he should receive further instructions from his own Presidency. Letters were also written to that Presidency, acquainting them, in terms steadily inoffensive and mild, with the aberrations which it appeared to the Supreme Council that they had made from the line of propriety and prudence. The Nizam declared the highest satisfaction with the friendly assurances which the Supreme Council had expressed. But these interferences excited the highest indignation and resentment in the Council of Madras. On the 30th of December a minute was ordered by Sir Thomas Barnard, the President, in which he treats the courses which had been passed on their conduct as undeserved, and his language unbecoming; denies the right of the Supreme Council thus to interfere in the transactions of another Presidency, and argues that their controlling power extended to the conclusion alone of a treaty, not to the intermediate negotiation; he turns the attack upon the Bengal Presidency, enters into a severe investigation of the policy and conduct of the Mibhatta war, which in every particular he condemns; that it was which had alienated the mind of the Subahdar, not the regulation with his brother, or the proposed marriage of the peshwah, the rejection of a peshwah offended not the conscience of the Bengal Presidency, when themselves were the guests, the unfortunate Emperor of India the sufferer, and when it was a peshwah stipulated and secured by treaty for the most important grants. In terms of urgency the same import the letter was couched, in which the Presidency of Madras returned an answer to that of Bengal along with which they transmitted the minute of their President.

The Presidency of Madras had not only taken Guntoor on lease from Baidar Jung, they had also transferred it, on a lease of ten years, to the Nabob of Arcot, though

BOOK V.

CHAP. IV.

1779.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IV.

1779.

well aware how little the Directors were pleased with his mode of conduct, either in their jaghire or in his own dominions.

The measure of their offences, in the eyes of the Directors, was now sufficiently full. In their letter of the 10th of January, 1781, after passing the severest censure upon the abolition of the Committee of Council, and the proceedings with the Zemledars of the four Northern Circars, on the treaty with Raneet Jung, the transactions with the Nizam, and the loss of Cuddoor to the Nabob, they dismiss from their service Sir Thomas Rumbold, President, John Hill and Peter Perring, Esquires, Members of their Council of Fort St. George; deprive of their seat in council Mr. Smith and Mr. Johnson; and express their strongest displeasure against the commander of their forces, Sir Hector Munro.¹

CHAPTER V.

War with the French—Pondicherry taken—War with Hyder Ali—Friendship unprepared—Colonel Baillie's Detachment cut off—Supreme Council suspend the Governor of Fort St. George, and send Sir Eyre Coote to Madras—Hyder takes Arcot, and overruns the greater Part of the Country—Lord Macartney, Governor of Fort St. George—Negapatnam and Trincomalee taken from the Dutch—Treaty between the Nabob of Arcot and Supreme Council—Arrangement of the Nabob's Revenue—Tellicherry invested—Great Armaments sent from both England and France—Disaster of Colonel Brathwaite's Detachment in Tanjore—Madras reduced to a State of Famine—Death of Hyder Ali—Tippoo withdraws the Mysorean Army from the Carnatic—Operations and Fate of General Matthews on the Coast of Malabar—Siege of Mangalore—The General at Madras, refusing to obey the Civil Authority, is arrested and sent to Europe—French and English suc-

¹ These transactions are minutely detailed in the Second and Third Reports of the Committee of Secretaries, 1780, in the appendices to which the official documents are to be found.—N.

The author does not appear to have been in possession of the Minutes of the Revenue, which was produced in publication of the Fall of Paim and Pondichy, introduced by Mr. Dandies.—W.

pend Hostilities in consequence of Intelligence of the Peace in Europe—Operations of Colonel Fullerton in Ceylon—Peace with Tippoo—Declaration of Superior Council to Presidency of Madras.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1778.

WAR with the French, instead of being, as formerly, the most alarming to the English of all sources of danger in India, now held a very inferior station among the great objects which occupied their attention. In the beginning of July, 1778, intelligence was received in Bengal, which, though somewhat premature, was acted upon as certain, that war had commenced between England and France. Without waiting for a formal notification of this event, which might be only delayed till the French had made themselves strong, it was resolved by a stroke, decisive in their present defenceless situation, to take possession of the whole of the French settlements in India. With regard to minor places the attempt was easy; and Chandernagore, with the factories at Moudipatane and Carical, surrendered without resistance. Pondicherry was the object of importance, and it was resolved to lose no time in taking measures for its reduction. Instructions were sent to Madras, and reached it with unusual expedition. Major-General Sir Hector Munro, who commanded the Madras army, took post on an elevated ground, called the Red Hills, distant about a league from Pondicherry, on the 8th of August, and on the 9th summoned the place to surrender. But his preparations were still so backward, that it was the 11th of August before he took possession of the board-hedge, within cannon-shot of the town, and ground was not broken till the 6th of September. It was broken in two places, with a view to carry on attacks upon both sides of the town at once.

The British squadron, consisting of one ship of sixty guns, one of twenty-eight, one of twenty, a ship of war, and an East Indiaman, sailed from Madras, toward the end of July, under the command of Sir Edward Vernon, with a view to block up Pondicherry by sea. This squadron reached the scene of action about the time when Sir Hector Munro encamped on the Red Hills and summoned the fort. The French squadron, under M. Trogdilly, consisting of one ship of sixty-four guns, one of thirty-six,

BOOK V
CHAP. V.

1778.

one of thirty-two, and two East Indiamen armed for war, sailed immediately, and prepared for action. The two squadrons met and engaged on the 10th of August. The battle raged with great fury for the space of seventy-four minutes, when the three minor ships of the French squadron quitted the action, and in fifteen minutes after were followed by the rest. The English ships, which, as usually happened in engagements with the French, had suffered chiefly in their rigging, were unable to pursue the French, which, had suffered chiefly, in their hulls. The French squadron reached Pondicherry the same night. Sailing badly, and opposed by the winds and the current, it was the 20th before the English recovered their station. Early on the morning of the 21st, the French squadron was perceived under easy sail, standing out of Pondicherry road. During the day the alternate failure and opposition of the winds prevented the squadrons from closing; and towards night the English commander stood in for Pondicherry road, and cast anchor, expecting that the enemy, to whom it was an object of so much importance to keep open the communication of Pondicherry by sea, would proceed in the same direction, and commence the action on the following morning. M. Troujelly sailed himself of the night. His squadron was out of sight before the morning, and was no more heard of upon the coast.

The garrison of Pondicherry was commanded by M. Bolescombe, a man whom this abandonment was not sufficient to dismay. Notwithstanding the total destruction which the works of Pondicherry had sustained in the former war, its fortifications had been restored with great diligence, and it was defended by a garrison who availed themselves of all its advantages. The English opened their batteries on the 18th of September, with the fire of twenty-eight cannon and twenty-seven mortars, and carried on their approaches with unrelenting vigour; but the vigilance, activity, and enterprise of the garrison, compelled them to caution, and, together with the rains, which fell in torrents, retarded their operations. Towards the middle of October, having pushed a gallery on the south side into the ditch of the fort, having made a breach in one of the bastions, destroyed the floors of the two shot were adjacent, and prepared a bridge of boats for

passing the ditch,; having also destroyed the face of the bastion on the opposite side of the town, and constructed a float for passing the ditch, they resolved to make the assault in three places at once, on the south side, on the north side, and towards the sea, where the enemy had run out a stockade into the water. All the marines, and 300 seamen, were landed from the ships. On the day first appointed for the assault, so much rain unexpectedly fell, as to swell the water in the ditch, blow up the gallery on the southern side, and damage the boats belonging to the bridge. The loss was diligently and speedily repaired. But M. Bellecombe, who had accomplished all that an able governor could perform, to retard the fall of the place, resolved not to throw away the lives of the gallant men who had secured his orders, and the day before the intended assault proposed a capitulation. The English, by the generosity of their terms, and the liberality of their whole procedure, showed their high sense of the honour and gallantry of the enemy whom they had subdued. The garrison were allowed to march out with all the honours of war; and, at the request of M. Bellecombe, the regiment of Pondicherry was complimented with its colours. After a delay of some months the fortifications were destroyed.

The French now retained in India nothing but Mahé, a small fort and settlement on the coast of Malabar. On the 17th of November, the question of its reduction was agitated in the Council, when the pride of driving the French entirely out of India enhanced the apparent advantage of the conquest. The difficulties were not insurmountable: the march of the troops over land, from one side of India to the other, was long and hazardous: the disposition of the native chiefs, through the territory of whom it would be necessary to pass, was not in all cases guaranteed to be friendly: the construction of Europeans would be apt to fail, under the difficulties of the march: there was not shipping sufficient to convey the expedition by sea: it was at the same time apprehended that Hyder Ali would view the enterprise with jealousy and dissatisfaction, and not regarded as impossible that he would directly oppose it. The importance, however, of having no such talents as those of Frenchmen to cope with in

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1748.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1779.

India, and of not leaving to them a place to which either troops or stores could be sent, though both Hyder and the Mahdrattas had very convenient places with which they would have gladly accommodated them, appeared of sufficient magnitude to induce the Presidency to leave all dangers in undertaking an expedition against Mahé. Towards the end of December, it was planned, that the European portion of the expedition should be conveyed by sea; that the Sepoys should march over land; that they should rendezvous at Anjengo, and Colonel Brothwaite receive the command. On the 4th of February intelligence was received at Madras, of the disaster sustained by the army of Beshag, on its march to Ponné. The danger to which this event might expose the expedition, now on its way to Mahé, underwent deliberation in the Council; but the confession of weakness, which would be implied in the recall of the troops, and the supposed importance of accomplishing the object in view, decided the question in favour of perseverance. Intelligence of the resolution of Hyder to resist the attack produced a hesitation;¹ and the importance was discussed of gaining the friendship of that powerful chief by recommending the enterprise; but after a short suspension, the design was resumed, and Colonel Brothwaite was instructed to anticipate resistance by velocity of completion. The expedition encountered far less difficulty than there was reason to expect: no opposition was made to the march: the fleet and the troops arrived safely at the place of rendezvous; and Mahé, which was strongly situated, but totally destitute of supplies, surrendered on the 15th of March before a cannon was fired. It was occupied by the English till the 29th of November, when, Colonel Brothwaite's detachment being ordered to Surat to reinforce General Goddard, the fort was blown up.²

Before Colonel Brothwaite was enabled to comply with his orders, and embark for Surat, he received a requisition from the chief and factory at Tellicherry for the assist-

¹ A formal communication was made by Mr. Vabool to the Madras Government, that he would oppose an attack upon Mahé, or would retaliate by sending troops into the Carnatic. First Report Committee of Secrecy, p. 21.—W.

² First and Second Reports of the Committee of Secrecy, also the *Asiatic Register* for 1779 and 1781.

ance of the whole detachment. That settlement had drawn upon itself the resentment of Hyder by protecting a Nair chief who had incurred his displeasure. By the influence of Hyder, a number of the surrounding chiefs were incited to attack the settlement, which was closely pressed, at the time of the evacuation of Mâlé. Not conceiving that he could be justified in leaving Tellicherry in its perilous situation, Colonel Bussywille moved with his detachment to its support. In consequence of the detention of these troops, the Council at Madras resolved to send another detachment to the assistance of Goddard, which was embarked in the months of January and February, 1780.¹

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1780.

In 1774, the division among the Mahratta chiefs afforded to Hyder an opportunity, which he dexterously and vigorously improved, of turning the tide in his affairs. He recovered speedily the territory which he had lost. He diligently employed the interval of repose which succeeded, in restoring order to his country, improving his resources, augmenting the number, and improving the discipline of his troops. His power soon appeared to be rapidly on the increase; and afforded alarm to the English, who, by their evasion of the treaty of 1708, were conscious of the hatred they had incurred, and were now jealous of a connection between him and the French. He continued to extend his dominions, and increase his power, with little interruption, till the latter end of the year 1777, when the Mahrattas and Nizam Ali combined to oppose him. The Mahrattas, under Herry Pandit and Panerum, penetrated into the Delaghat country, with an army of 20,000 men; but upon the approach of Hyder, who hastened to oppose them, they retreated into the district of Adon, where they came to an engagement on the 5th of January, 1778, and sustained a defeat.

Though Hyder was deeply exasperated against the Presidency of Madras for their continued evasion of treaty, and refusal of assistance, he was induced by the state of affairs to make a fresh proposal in 1778. Harassed, by the hostilities of the French government, he had been well pleased to support a pretender in the person of Ragoba; the English were now involved not only in dispute with

¹ First Report, of troops, p. 85.

BOOK V. the Poornah ministers, but in actual operations for the reinstatement of that ejected chief; and in the beginning of July, 1778, Hyder, through his resident at Madras, made a new overture towards an alliance with the English, offering his assistance to establish Hagerum Rao in the office of Peshwa; and requiring only a supply of arms and military stores for which he would pay, and a body of troops whose expenses he would defray. The opinion of the Presidency appears to have been, that such an arrangement might be useful, more particularly to prevent the formation of a connection between Hyder and the French: they even acknowledged their belief, that had not the treaty of 1769 been ended, Hyder never would have sought other allies than themselves. The Supreme Council, to whom reference was made, approved in general of an alliance with Hyder; but being at that time anxious to form a connection with the Rajs of Berar, they directed a modification of the terms in regard to Hagera, whose cause, they said, was supported, not as an end, but a means now deemed subordinate to the successful issue of the negotiation with Moodjee.

A friendly intercourse subsisted between Hyder and the French. He had been supplied by them with arms and military stores. A number of adventurers of that nation commanded and disciplined his troops; and they were united by a common hatred of the English power. A desire to save appearances, however, constrained Hyder to congratulate the English upon the recapture of Pondicherry; but, reserving the design of attacking Malé he gave early intimation of the resentment with which he would regard any such attempt. Malé was situated in the territory of a petty prince on the western coast, who with the other petty princes, his neighbours, were rendered tributary to Hyder, and ranked among his dependants. The merchants of various nations, it was declared by Hyder, had settlements, and performed traffic in his dominions; and all of them, as if they were subjects of his own, he would resolutely defend. To avert his animosity and prevent a rupture, which the dread of his power, and, above all, his apprehended union with the French, clothed in considerable terrors, there was sent to his presence, in January, 1778, a person, who, though empowered to declare

the resolution of attacking Mahr, should assure Hyder of the desire which the Presidency felt to study his inclinations, and to cultivate his friendship. The messenger was received with but little respect, and the mission of the Carnatic was threatened as the retaliation for interfering with Mahr.¹ At that particular moment, Hyder was engaged in the conquests of Goets, of Carnah, and Cutquah, the former belonging to the Mahetta chieftain. Mural Jee, the two last to their respective Nabobs, dependants of the Subahdar, and therefore was hindered from taking effectual measures to defeat the expedition against Mahr. But the Presidency were now convinced of his decided aversion; and were informed of his intention to make peace with the Mahettas, for enabling him the more completely to carry into execution his designs against the English. Their thoughts were called to the necessity of preparation; and they saw nothing but dangers and difficulties in their path. The Nabob, as he informed them, and as they knew well without his information, was destitute of money; and as destitute of troops, on whom, either for numbers or quality, any reliance could be placed. Their own treasury was impoverished; and if the cavalry of Hyder should enter the country, neither could the resources be collected, nor provisions be procured. More alive than they to the sense of danger, the Nabob urged the necessity of making peace with Hyder, by stopping the expedition to Mahr; or, on the other hand, of making terms with the Mahettas and the Subahdar. So far from attempting to constitute either Hyder or the Subahdar, the Presidency formed with Rumbut Jung the arrangement

¹ A correspondence has been here made, probably between the British and personal emissaries, dated that took place between the two dispatches. In January 1784, an emissary visited Hyder. "I did not talk, and he from him I, without, at present, could not find out his art, and consulting the secretary, I addressed him. He did not say anything but in the past, for Thomas Munro Esq. had been visiting with the Company, engaged the celebrated Munro, Schwartz, to go privately to Hyder, and negotiate his real intentions, the Governor despatching the preservation of them from Hyder's own hands, as from the effects of the Subah. He was sent off on his mission in July, 1779, arrived in Bangalore in August, was by and by treated with his share, and made the best of a better than him in the 21st of Aug. which he delivered some time in October, as he arrived at that month, the price of his was sent a messenger to the Company. In February, 1784, a second messenger was sent to Hyder, on the part of the Company, as the first of all was with the British, which were still under review. Much the same was furnished publicly to the British of the disposition and purposes of Hyder. First Report of Select Committee, &c. Wilson's Guide of India, &c. 1811. Life of Schwartz, &c. 1841, &c.

BOOK V. which has been already described, respecting the Carloor
CHAP. V. Circle and military assistance, and which, in the highest
 1762. degree, alarmed and exasperated both. The detachments
 which under Colonel Harper were sent to the assistance of
 Baniat Jung attempted to proceed to Arkat, through a
 part of Golapah, which Hyder had lately seized. His
 troops harried the passers; and the detachment, afraid
 of being surrounded, was obliged to march back and wait
 for subsequent orders. Hyder not only assured Baniat
 Jung, by writing, that he would not permit the English
 whom he described as the most faithless and usurping of
 all mankind, to establish themselves in a place so con-
 tiguous to his country, and so important as Guntour; but
 in the month of November he sent a body of troops into
 the territory of that Prince, took possession of the open
 country, and joined with Nizam Ali his brother in threat-
 ening him with instant ruin, unless he broke off all cor-
 respondence with the English. In this emergency, Baniat
 Jung was constrained to forbid the march of the English
 detachment; and to request the restoration of Guntour, as
 the only means of pacifying his brother and Hyder, and
 securing his fate. The question respecting the Circle
 came under deliberation of the Council on the 30th of De-
 cember, when the decree was passed that it should not be
 restored. Though its importance was considerable, be-
 cause situated as it was between the territories of the
 Nabob, or, more properly speaking, of the English, in the
 Carnatic, and the four Northern Circars, it completed the
 communication between their northern and southern pos-
 sessions, and, by placing in their hands the port of Hoos-
 sully, deprived Nizam Ali of all connexion with the sea,
 reduced him to the condition of a merely inland power,
 and in particular closed the channel by which French sup-
 plies could easily reach him; yet the embarrassments
 created in the Council, by the bargain they had concluded
 with the Nabob, for a ten years' lease of that Circle, con-
 tributed not less, it would appear, than all other induc-
 ements, to the resolution which they formed.

Under the apprehensions which the resentment and pre-
 parations of Hyder inspired, the Presidency, at the end of
 October, had presented to the Supreme Council the pros-
 pect of a rupture with that chieftain, the dangerous mag-

affairs of his power, and their want of resources; had pressed upon them the necessity of forming a peace with the Mahrattas, so in that event Hyder would be restrained by his fears; they had also written in similar terms to General Goddard at Barcheg. Soon after, when they were informed of the probability that hostilities would be renewed with the Mahrattas, they reiterated the statement of their apprehensions; and concluded that, destitute as they were of resources for all active operations, they could only collect their troops as much as possible, and wait to see what the resolutions of the Supreme Board would enable them to undertake.

Before the end of November, the Nabob, whose intelligence respecting the proceedings of the Indian powers was in general unerringly good, informed the Governor, that a treaty had been formed between Hyder and the Mahrattas, to which Nizam Ali had acceded, for a system of combined hostilities against the English. Though, in his answer to the Nabob, the Governor appeared to discredit the intelligence, it was not long before he was satisfied of its truth; and in the letter, which, on the 21st of December, the Select Committee addressed to the Supreme Board, they represented the treaty between Hyder and the Mahrattas, as an undoubted fact. Still they were not so much impressed with a sense of imminent danger, as to be deterred from sending a body of troops to the assistance of Goddard, in lieu of those which were detained at Tellicherry; being in daily expectation of a regiment from Europe; conceiving themselves sufficiently strong to cover the principal garrisons, and deeming it vain, without cavalry, to attempt to protect the open country against the invasion of a vast body of horse. In the month of January, 1783, the President wrote to the Court of Directors, that, notwithstanding the alarm to which they had been held by the hostile appearances of Hyder and the Nizam, and notwithstanding the provocation which the support of Ragoba had given both to the Mahrattas and the Nizam, there was still a prospect of tranquillity; and in the following month, he reported, in still stronger terms, a similar assurance.¹ Till the month of June, no

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1783.

¹ The President, in the early part of 1783, was Sir Thomas Pakenham; he quitted India, on the score of ill health, in April, and with satisfaction,

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1786.

measures were pursued which had a reference to the war ; and even then it was only commanded that Colonel Harper's detachment, which had been transferred to the command of Colonel Duple, should cross the Ristna, to be more in readiness, " in case of any disturbance in the Carnatic." On the 15th of June intelligence was received from the officer at Vellore, that Hyder had begun his march from Seringapatam, and that a great army was already collected at Bangalore. On the 18th of the same month, the Select Committee of Fort St. George declared, by letter to the Supreme Board, that Hyder had received from the French islands a great quantity of military stores ; that his army, which he had been rapidly increasing for two years past, was now equipped for immediate service ; that a part of it was already advanced to the borders of the Carnatic ; and that intelligence had been received of his being actually employed in clearing the road to some of the principal passes.

While the affairs of the Presidency were approaching to their present situation, a division had existed not only in the Council, but in the Select Committee itself. The President, however, and the General had combined ; and they retained a majority in both. In contemplation of the resentment of Hyder, and the progress of his power, the party, the views of which were apt to discord with those of the leading members of the government, had strongly urged upon them, at various times, the necessity of making preparations against the invasion with which they were threatened by Hyder, and of which they had received intimation from various quarters. If the resources of the Nizam and the presidency combined were unequal to the

which, after the information, we had received, and after the strong precautions in violation of which he had been the author, were immediately withdrawn. His former manner became, " It is only and in particular respecting that the whole of the Carnatic and the Company's military possessions are at present unprotected, in the period being fully anticipated by the unwarlike state of affairs with respect to the Nizam, and the measures recommended by the Council of the Board from across the country to Genl. B. However well it pleased Hyder to try to give disturbance, neither he nor his Nizam have as yet thought proper to put any of their troops into motion, and thus the arrival of the fleet with the English troops, I think there is the greatest prospect that this part of India will remain quiet, especially if the Government have constantly been taking any measures that may be likely to bring on trouble." *Extracts from the Council, p. 420.* And thus, after he had visited Hyder's resources by the conquest of Dindur, the violence of his territory by the unexpected march through it of Colonel Harper's detachment, and the capture of Bidar in defiance of his attacks.—W.

maintenance of an army sufficient for the protection of the open country, it behoved them at least to assemble the troops; which, scattered as they were in petty garrisons over a great extent of country, could not, in case of an emergency, be collected without a lapse of time; and of which the practice would become hazardous, and perhaps impracticable, if the country were pervaded by Hyder's hordes. The majority, indeed, had expressed their opinion of the necessity of having the troops collected in a body, and ready to act, previously to invasion. But they had not yet become persuaded that the danger was sufficiently imminent to render it necessary that preparation should be made.

On the 21st of July, information was brought from the commander at Ambass, that Hyder and his two sons, with the principal part of his army, had come through the pass, and that his artillery was drawn up in the road to Chaugura. This intelligence, though it was confirmed from several quarters, was treated with slight regard by the party in power: and on the 23rd, when Lord Macleod represented to the Governor, "That perhaps the report of Hyder's invasion might be true, and that he thought at all events they ought to take measures to oppose him; the Governor answered, What can we do? We have no money. But added, We mean however, to assemble an army, and you are to command it." The next day brought undoubted intelligence, that Porto Nera, on the coast, and Conjeeveram, not fifty miles from the capital had been plundered by the enemy.

The wing, with which Snyder had arrived, was not here.

1 On the 19th inst., two of the Select Committee, Messrs. Johnson and Smith, as well as a third, urging the termination of the charter, and the passage of a free navigation, and a similar measure is introduced on the 17th inst. The following day, Mr. T. Smith and Mr. Henry Moore, Esq., by the direction of the House on President, it is supposed, was that the objection is opposed a large number of members, and that there is no chance of its becoming law. Four days after the latter occasion, Spurr was in the Senate. The history of the bill is furnished us by the members of each side, and of the bill is marked with the names of the members of the Senate, p. 100, and First Report, p. 74. Says that, says the Report of the Select Committee, the bill is that a bill for the purpose of the Senate, with a powerful army, was treated by the people in power with much care and respect. It was not till Congress, it is fully willing from the capital, was placed by the country, that they could be taken to the city, it is the danger of their situation. — 20

¹ Lord Macleod was the commanding officer of the European command which had duly received, *see* the extract of his letter to the Secretary of State, annexed to the first Report of the Soviet Commission, p. 41 and 44.

BOOK V. than 100,000 strong: of his infantry, 20,000 were formed
 CHAP. V. into regular battalions, and mostly commanded by Europeans. His cavalry amounted to 20,000, of which 2,000 were Abyssinian horse, and constantly attended upon his person; 10,000 were Carnatic cavalry, well disciplined, of which one half had belonged to the Nuboh, and after having been trained by English officers, had either deserted or been disbanded for want of ability to pay them. He had 100 pieces of cannon managed by Europeans, and natives who had been trained by the English for the Nuboh. And Noreimer Lally, who had left the service of the Subahdar for that of Hyder, was present with his corps of Frenchmen or other Europeans, to the amount of about 400 men; and had a principal share in planning and conducting the operations of the army.

The arrival of Hyder, and the rapidity with which his cavalry overrun the country, and spread ruin and desolation in a circle of many miles round Madras, filled the Carnatic immediately with terror and dismay. The people fled from the open country to the woods, and the mountains; their homes were set on fire; the fields were left uncultivated, or the crops destroyed. Alarm succeeded alarm. Intelligence poured in from all quarters, that one place after another was assailed; till every part of the Carnatic frontier appeared to be entered, and even the Northern Circars exposed to a similar fate.

On the 24th of July, the Select Committee assembled in deliberation. The object of greatest urgency was, to call the troops together, and form an army in the field. The European regiment at Pondicherry, that of Voloss, the battalion of Europeans, and the four battalions of sepoy stationed at Pondicherry, the battalion of sepoy, and the grenadiers of the European Battalion at Madras, the battalion at Trichinopoly, and the artillery at the mount, received orders to be in readiness to march. Absent officers were summoned to join their corps; and all things necessary for an army in the field were ordered to be immediately prepared. Letters were sent to the other Presidencies and settlements. The Governor-General and Council were importuned for money; and informed, that, if the Presidency were assured of pecuniary means, and not embarrassed by their ignorance of the state of affairs

between the Dergal government and the Mahometans, they would produce an attack on the possessions of Hyder on the western coast, by assistance sent to the detachment at Tellicherry, and the co-operation of his Majesty's fleet.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1782.

Colonel Baillie, who commanded the detachment in Guzerat, consisting of about 150 Europeans, infantry and artillery, and upwards of 2000 sepoys, was instructed to operate a diversion, by attacking Cudapah, or some of the other possessions of Hyder. This step was vehemently opposed as counselled by the opposing party; as sure, they said, to fail in detaching from his principal object any part of the attention or forces of Hyder; and sure to enfeeble their defence at home, by the absence of so important a part of their force, which ought to be directed to march without a moment's delay by the safest route to Madras. As an additional reason for persisting in their original orders, the Governor and his majority alleged their doubts of being able to procure provisions for a greater number of troops than the marching orders already embraced. But on the 31st of July, when a letter was received from Colonel Baillie, representing the difficulties he experienced in finding subsistence for his troops, or in detaching the detachments absolutely necessary for his march, they altered their instructions, and directed him to proceed towards the Presidency, taking such a route as might offer a chance of intercepting some of the enemy's convoys.

By the majority, in which both the Governor and the General were comprised, it was resolved, that the troops should assemble, and the army should be formed at a place near Conjeeveram, where they would be nearer to the stores of provisions hid up by the Nabob in the forts, and prepared to yield a ready support to the garrisons which the enemy might assault. To constitute the majority of the Governor, it so happened, that the voice of the General was requisite; and if he departed to take the command of the army, that majority would be lost. On the ground that his councils at the Presidency were of more importance at this moment, than his presence with the army, it was moved and voted that he should not depart; and that the command of the army should be intrusted to

BOOK V. Lord Macleod. When the plan of operations, however, and in particular that part of it which consisted in assembling the army at Congovernam, was communicated to that officer, he represented the danger with which, now that the country was invaded, the separate detachments would march to a place so distant and exposed; preferred the security of forming a position in the neighbourhood of Madras, and of not taking the field till an army should be assembled sufficient at least to cope with the principal bodies of the enemy's horse; and declared his aversion to adopt a responsibility in the execution of plans of which his judgment did not approve. These observations appear to have persuaded the General, who insisted upon the advantage of assembling close to the scene of action, for the purpose of protecting the forts; and instead of acknowledging the difficulty of uniting the forces near Congovernam, he ventured to pledge himself to the Committee for carrying that measure into effect. Upon this, it became a matter of necessity, that he should leave his seat in the Select Committee; but to preserve its majority to the party to which he belonged, a new expedient was devised. On the allegation, that his plans had no chance of support, and that his reputation, neither as an officer nor a man, was safe, if the messaging power were to pass into the hands of the opposite party, it was, previous to his departure, proposed, and what was thus proposed, the majority which he helped to constitute had pre-ordained to decree, that a person whose he named should be appointed as an acting member of the Committee till his return. It naturally followed, that such proceedings should be severely criticised by the opposite party; and one member of the Council excited so much resentment by the superiority of his remarks, that the majority, first replied to him with greater intemperance than that which they condemned; then suspended him from his seat at the Board; and lastly the General wrote him a challenge.

On the 2nd of August, while preparations were making, and the army was not yet assembled, a project was adopted for sending a strong detachment towards the passes, with a view to intercept the enemy's conveyance. Colonel Cosby was the officer chosen to command the expedition; and a force was provided for him, out of the troops stationed at Tri-

Chingelpet and Tanjore, strengthened by two regiments of the Nabob's cavalry from Tanjore, which joined the detachment at Trichinopoly on the 27th of August. Several causes of reticulation operated on the expedition; but the grand impediment arose from the disaffection of the inhabitants. The sort of partnership sovereignty, which the Nabob and the Company had established in the Carnatic, has hitherto been extremely oppressive to the people, and had completely succeeded in alienating their minds. Though Hyder was carrying devastation over the country, he was less devoted as a destroyer, than hailed as a deliverer. While Colonel Cooby found himself in the greatest distress for intelligence, which by no exertion he was able to procure; every motion of his own was promptly communicated to Hyder by the people of the country. He was disappointed and betrayed, even by the district officers of the Nabob. As he advanced, his march became so much harassed by parties of the enemy's horse, that all hope of any successful operation against the country was wholly cut off; and the danger which surrounded the detachment made it necessary to think of nothing but the means of re-joining it with the army. A total want of intelligence reduced Colonel Cooby to mere conjecture in choosing his route; and he fell in with the army by accident, as it was retreating before Hyder, on the 15th of September near Chingelpet.

Not only every day brought fresh intelligence of the conquest and devastation effected by Hyder; Madras itself, on the 10th of August, was thrown into alarm. A party of the enemy's horse committed ravages as near as St. Thomas's Mount, and the inhabitants of the open towns began to take flight.

On the 14th of August, the General was obliged to report, that the place of rendezvous, which he had promised

¹ Captain Order, in his official letter, dated Chicago, 15 September, 1898, page 1, "There is no doubt that this age has, by some means, directly affected the whole race, but, especially in the increasing number of cases, the signs of my marching have. Thus I was communicated from village to village, all the way to Titikamaka, from whence messages were sent to Ayden, and he in message according from Titikamaka, the country being extremely windy, this has been several times tried upon by means of the Indians, and they reported, it appears, from different villages, to Order's Auxiliary. Some of these, in my reports, were being orders and notes from this." Final Report, 21 pages, Appendix, 22, 3.

BOOK V. in recommending, was wise; the want of bullocks to carry provisions rendering the march impracticable. On his recommendation, it was therefore agreed, that the troops should meet at St. Thomas's Mount; and there wait till eight days' provisions, and bullocks to carry it, could be procured.

1768.

Colonel Borthwick, after sending away from Pondicherry all the French officers capable of service, and taking an oath of fidelity from the principal Frenchmen who remained, commenced his march. He arrived at Carungdy on the 15th of August, and found it guarded by only a petty officer of the Nabab, and twenty sepoy. They would have surrendered it, he was well assured, on the very first summons; and had it not by a singular oversight, as it commanded the only road by which Borthwick could proceed, been neglected by the enemy, who had a large body of horses in its neighbourhood, the most serious consequences might have ensued. The country through which he passed after leaving Carungdy would have rendered it so difficult for him to escape, if attacked by the enemy, that he formed a very contemptible opinion either of Hyder's military skill, or his means of offence, when he allowed so favourable an opportunity to be lost. On the 18th, after a hazardous and fatiguing march, Colonel Borthwick arrived at Chinglypet, when he received orders to join the army at the Mount.

After various speculations and reports respecting the plan of hostilities which Hyder would pursue, uncertainty was at last removed, by his marching towards Arcot, and taking ground before it on the 21st of August. The danger of that place excited no little interest and alarm. It was not only the capital of the province, but contained the principal portion of the very defective stores which the Nabab had provided; and afforded to Hyder a situation, highly convenient, both for the accommodation of his troops, and for spreading his operations over the province. From every quarter alarming intelligence arrived. The troops of Hyder were expected in the Circar of Gan-
toor, which had neither forts nor soldiers sufficient to oppose them, and where the Zemindars were disaffected to the Company and in correspondence with the enemy. An army of Mahrattas from Benar had marched into

Cuttack, and brought into imminent danger the defenceless state of the Northern Circars. A body of Hydar's troops had united with the Nairs, and having driven the Company's troops from the island of Durampatnam, threatened Tellicherry, with all the British possessions on the coast of Malabar. The enemy had appeared on the frontier of Madras, and the admiral of the fleet communicated to the President and Select Committee, intelligence which he had received from Europe, and on which he ruled, that a French naval and military force might soon be expected in India.

While pressed by dangers thus extraordinary both in number and degree, the Presidency found their treasury empty; they had endeavoured to borrow money upon the Company's bonds with little effect, the loans of the Nabob bearing a better interest; they made urgent applications to the Nabob for pecuniary and other supplies, and received from him a deplorable picture of his own poverty and necessities, of the wretched and unproductive condition of the whole country, and the oppressive load of his debts, principally, he said, produced by the money which he had expended and lost in the conquest of Tanjore. To a similar application made to the Raja of Tanjore, the Raja replied, with a truth not liable to dispute, that from the total exhaustion of his country by the recent conquest, and by the oppressive administration of the Nabob for several years, he was wholly incapable of furnishing any considerable supplies. By desertion for want of pay, or disbanding for want of ability to pay, the Nabob's army was greatly reduced. Even that reduced army was mutinous from the length of its service, and a source of apprehension rather than of hope.

On the 25th of August, the General left the Presidency, and joined the army which was encamped at St. Thomas's Mount. Of cavalry, there was one regiment, belonging to the Nabob, but commanded by English officers, and it refused to march unless it received its arrears. The men were deprived of their ammunition and arms; and about fifty-six of them only consented to serve. The rest of the army consisted of the King's 73rd regiment, one battalion of the Company's European troops, with the grenadiers of

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1782.

BOOK V. another, five battalions of sepoys, a company of marksmen, two troops of cavalry, and a large train of artillery, amounting, officers included, to 4300.¹ With the utmost difficulty, as much rice had been provided as would serve the troops for eight days; the sepoys were obliged to be loaded with four days' supply; and the utmost efforts barely sufficed to procure bullocks to carry the remainder. The General, notwithstanding, insisted upon leading his march with a number of heavy cannon; of which, as he had no fortifications to attack, the use did not appear to be very remarkable. On the 28th, the army left the Mount, and, after a march of four days, reached the camp near Conjevaram. During the two last days, the rain had fallen with great violence, had broken the roads, and rendered the march, especially with heavy artillery, slow and fatiguing. The enemy's cruelty had passed upon them in great numbers, and wounded and taken some of the men. The agent of the Nizam, who accompanied the army, and on whom the General depended to procure both provisions and intelligence, informed him, that he had no power for procuring either the one or the other; and his only remaining resource was in the paddy in the fields about Conjevaram.

It had been concerted, that the detachment of Colonel Baillie should reach Conjevaram on the day after the arrival of General Munro and the army.² But on the 31st, a letter from Baillie gave information that he had been stopped about five miles north from Tripassore by a small river which the rains had swollen. On the same day, it was reported by some deserters that Hyder had left Arcot, was crossing the river Palar, and marching with his whole army towards Conjevaram. On the 3rd of September, the same day on which Baillie crossed the river by which he had been impeded, the enemy encamped at five miles' distance in front of the army near Conjevaram. The continuance of the rains, and the necessity of collecting the rice in the fields, and beating it for themselves out of the husk, greatly incumbered and harassed the troops. On the

¹ 14th European Infantry, 500 artillery, 1000 sepoys, thirty-two 54-pounders, four heavy cannons, and five mortars.

² The junction might have been effected at Madras, without difficulty or danger, on the 25th or 26th, and it is clear that the main army should not have advanced until the junction had been effected. Vol. II, p. 140.—W.

8th, the enemy moved his camp to the north-east; upon which the English advanced to a high ground about two miles upon the road towards Ballie and Tripunroo, having the enemy at a distance of about two miles upon their left. While this movement was performing, Hyder had sent forward his son Tippee Sub with a large body of the flower of his army to cut off the English detachment with Colonel Baillie, who had now advanced to Perundumra, distant from the main army about fifteen miles. Baillie made a disposition to resist a prodigious superiority of force; sustained a severe conflict of several hours; and at last repelled the assaults. By a letter on the 8th, he informed Munro, that upon a review after the battle he found the movements, requisite for joining him, beyond the powers of his detachment; and intimated the necessity, that the General should push forward with the main body of the army. The General now found himself pressed by dangers, to whatever quarter he turned. All his provisions consisted in a small quantity of paddy which he had been able to collect in a pagoda. If he moved, the enemy would occupy his ground, and cut him off from the means of subsistence. With the concurrence of his principal officers, he adopted an expedient, of which the danger was scarcely, perhaps, less formidable, than of still further dividing his little army, by sending a strong detachment, which, joining Baillie, might enable him to proceed. About nine o'clock in the evening of the 8th, Colonel Fletcher marched with the flank companies of the 73rd regiment, two companies of European grenadiers, one company of sepoy muckoon, and ten companies of sepoy grenadiers. The field pieces, which the General proposed to send with the detachment, Colonel Fletcher declined, as calculated to impede his march. The men left even their knapsacks, and marched with only two days' provisions. Being joined by this detachment, Baillie was instructed to move in the evening of the 9th, and march the whole of the night. On that night the tents of the main army were struck, and the men lay on their arms. About 12 o'clock some cannon and musketry were heard; but they presently ceased, and all was still. A little before daybreak, a heavy firing of cannon and musketry was heard at a distance. It was soon perceived that the enemy's army had moved. The General gave orders to march by the right in the

MOORE V.
CHAP. V.
1799.

BOOK V. direction of the firing. After proceeding about four miles, CHAP. V. he ordered guns to be fired, as a signal of his approach; and after a mile and a half, he repeated the signal. A great smoke was suddenly perceived, and the firing ceased. Supposing that Baillie had repulsed the enemy, the General led the army back into the road, in hopes to meet him. After marching about two miles, he met a wounded sepooy, who had escaped from the fight, and told him that Colonel Baillie was entirely defeated. The General concluded that the safety of the army depended upon its returning to Conjeeravaram, where it arrived about six in the evening, and where the arrival of more wounded sepoys confirmed the report of the disaster.

While the English General was placed in so complete an ignorance of the proceedings of the enemy, Hyder had intelligence of every transaction of the English camp: he was correctly informed of the route of Colonel Fletcher, the number and quality of his troops, the time of their march, and even the circumstances of leaving their guns behind. He sent a strong detachment to intercept them. But the sagacity of Fletcher suggesting suspicion of his guides, he altered his route, and, by cover of night, evaded the danger. The junction of the two detachments, after the defeat by Baillie, of so large a portion of the enemy a few days before, struck alarm into the Mysorean camp. Even the European officers in the service of Hyder regarded the junction as a masterly stroke of generalship, intended for the immediate attack of his army both in front and rear. Lally himself repaired to Hyder, and entreated him to save his army from destruction by a timely retreat. The resolution of Hyder was shaken, till two of his spies arriving, assured him, not only that the English army at Conjeeravaram was not in motion, but that it was making no preparation to that effect. To his European officers this intelligence appeared so perfectly incredible, that they concluded the spies to be sold, and entreated Hyder not to incur his ruin by confiding in their report. Hyder immediately formed his plan. A difficult part of the road was embanked with concealed cannon; and large bodies of the best part of his infantry were placed in ambush on either side; a cloud of irregular cavalry were employed to engage the attention of the English main army in the direction of Conjeeravaram, while Hyder

with the main body of his army, lay in wait to watch the attack.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1798

Colonel Fletcher joined with his detachment at half-an-hour after six in the morning of the 5th. They reposed during the day ; and after the parade in the evening, Colonel Baillie gave orders to be in readiness to march. Between eight and nine o'clock, the men moved off toward the left, by way of Subakverum. The enemy began immediately to discharge their rockets ; but, from the vigilance of the flanking parties, did little execution. A little after ten o'clock, several guns opened on the rear. The detachment countermarched, and formed in line with the front toward Perumilacurum. The enemy keeping up an incessant, though not very destructive fire, and discovering no inclination to advance, Colonel Baillie ordered his men to fire to the right, and march into an avenue, which they had passed a few minutes before. The enemy's cannon began to do great execution ; when Baillie detached a captain with five companies of Sepoys, to storm their guns. Though a water-course, which happened at that time to be unfordable, prevented this detachment from performing the service on which they were commanded, the intelligence of their march, which was immediately communicated to the enemy, threw their camp into alarm ; their guns were heard drawing off toward the English front, and their noise and irregular firing resembled those of an army under a sudden and dangerous attack. A strong conviction of the necessity of preserving every portion of the British army, with which the mighty host of the enemy was to be withstood, suggested, in all probability, both to Colonel Baillie and to the General, a caution which otherwise they would not have observed. For what other reason Colonel Baillie forbore to try the effect of an attack during the apparent confusion of the enemy ; or, for what reason, unless a hope of being supported by the General with an attack on the opposite side, he did not, when the firing ceased, endeavour to proceed, but remained in his position till morning, it is not easy to divine. During the night, Tipoo, who had commanded only a detachment of the army in the preceding attack, had an opportunity of drawing his cannon to a strong post on the road, by which the English were obliged to pass ; and of sending to his

BOOK V. farther advice, on which he immediately acted, of the ad-
 CHAP. V. vantage of supporting the attack with the whole of his
 1780. army. At five o'clock in the morning, Colonel Baillie's
 detachment began to advance. A few minutes after six,
 two guns opened on their rear; and large bodies of horse
 appeared on their flanks. Four guns, which began to do
 considerable execution on their flanks, were successfully
 stormed; and the Pagoda of Conjeeveram, the object of
 their hopes, and the termination of their perils and labour,
 began to appear; when they were informed that the whole
 host of Hyder was approaching. "Very well," said Baillie,
 "we shall be prepared to receive them." And presently
 after, upwards of sixty pieces of cannon, with an immense
 quantity of rockets, began to play upon this little army.
 Great confusion was produced among the numerous fol-
 lowers of the camp, who were driven in upon the line; and
 Hyder's numerous cavalry, supported by his regular in-
 fantry, and his European corps, bore upon every point of
 attack. Nothing ever exceeded the audacious and deter-
 mination with which this handful of men sustained the
 fury of their enemies. No effort could break their order;
 while Sepoys, as well as Europeans, repeatedly presented
 and recovered arms, with as much coolness and regularity,
 as if they had been exhibiting on a parade. Every attack
 of the enemy was repulsed with vast slaughter. Their
 courage began to abate; and even Hyder himself was per-
 plexed. A movement executed by Colonel Baillie to the
 right, apparently with a view to attack the enemy's guns,
 increased the terrors of Hyder; and he consulted Lally on
 the propriety of a retreat. Lally replied, that as the main
 army of the English was probably advancing upon his
 rear, no expedient remained but to break through the
 detachment. When the heroic bravery of this little band
 presented so fair a prospect of baffling the host of their
 assailants, two of their tumbrils blew up; which not only
 made a large opening in both lines, but at once deprived
 them of ammunition, and overturned and disabled their
 guns. Their fire was now in a great measure silenced, and
 their lines were no longer entire; yet so great was the awe
 which they inspired, that the enemy durst not immedi-
 ately close. Past half after seven, when the tumbrils
 blew up, they remained exposed to the fire of the cannon

and rockets, losing great numbers of officers and men, till nine o'clock, when Hyder, with his whole army, came round the right flank. The cavalry charged in separate columns, while bodies of infantry, interspersed between them, poured in volleys of musketry with dreadful effect. After the sepoy were almost all destroyed, Colonel Baillie, though severely wounded, rallied the Europeans who survived. Forming a square, and gaining a little momentum, without ammunition, and almost all wounded, the officers fighting with their swords, and the men with their bayonets, they resisted and repelled thirteen attacks, many of the men when desperately wounded deducing to receive quarter, and raising themselves from the ground to receive the enemy on their bayonets. Though not more than 460 men, they still desired to be led on, and to cut their way through the enemy. But Baillie, despairing now of being relieved by Munro, and wishing, no doubt, to spare the lives of the brave men who surrounded him, deemed it better to hold up a flag of truce. The enemy at first treated this with contempt. After a few minutes, the men were ordered to lay down their arms; with intimation that quarter would be given. Yet they had no sooner surrendered, than the savages rushed upon them with unbridled fury; and, had it not been for the great exertions of Lally, Purocha, and other French officers, who implored for mercy, not a man of them probably would have been spared. The gallant Fletcher was among those who lay on the field of battle. About 500 Europeans were taken prisoners, reserved to the horrors of a captivity more terrible than death. The inhuman treatment which they received was deplored and mitigated by the French officers in the service of Hyder, with a generosity which did honour to European education. "No gun," says an eye-witness, and a participator of their kindness, "can do justice to the humanity of these gentlemen,

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
—
1798.

* See "A Narrative of the Captivity and Sufferings of the Officers, Indians, and Sepoys, who fell into the hands of Hyder Ali, after the Battle of Changanaray, September 26, 1792, by an officer of Colonel Baillie's Detachment." It forms a general volume of the work entitled, "Memoirs of the late War in India," published by Murray, in 1793. It is indeed nothing but a great set of lies, I have had the advantage of perusing the account of the same action in the second volume (not yet published) of "British History, &c. by Colonel F. Hall." The account in the first is taken from the Journal of one eye-witness; Colonel F. Hall gives us account from that of another, much less fit to credit to

BOOK V. without whose assistance, many of our officers must
 CHAP. V. have perished: but their merit will live for ever un-
 1783. belained in the hearts of all who felt or witnessed their
 beneficence."

Hyder withdrew to Daman, a place about six miles from the scene of action, and the next day returned to his camp, where he had left the tents standing, and baggage unmoved, when he marched to the attack of the unfortunate Baillie. He had acted, during the whole of these operations, under the greatest apprehension of the march of Munné upon his rear. And had not that General been deterred, through his total want of intelligence, and his deficiency in the means of subsistence, from marching to the support of Baillie; had he fallen upon the rear of the essay while the detachment was maintaining its heroic resistance in front, it is probable that the army of Hyder would have sustained a total defeat. On returning to Coonoor, the General found that the provisions, which he had been so unwilling to expose, amounted to barely one day's rice for the troops. Concluding that he should be immediately surrounded by Hyder's cavalry, and cut off from all means of providing any further supply, he began at three o'clock the next morning to retreat to Chingleput, after throwing into a tank the heavy guns and stores which he could not remove. Hyder, informed of all the motions of the English army, sent a body of not less than 8000 horse, who harassed continually their flanks and rear, wounded some of the men, and cut off several vehicles of baggage. Through several difficulties, they reached,

the detachment and its commander. According to the authority of Colonel Walker, a series of military blunders, and not much of moral deterioration, marked the conduct of the leader, who in battle confusion and panic appeared among the men. "Which amount are we to be here?" "Why, that that which good is believed, it is easy to see, provided that man conducted his ordinary men, that they were not that horse." "The accounts are not so compatible than the author thinks them." Colonel Walker speaks of no panic amongst the men, and of confusion, till after the explosion of the powder: his description is exactly applicable to their courage and conduct as that of the best. Both accounts agree as to one circumstance of the catastrophe, the unnecessary loss made by the men, in neglecting to fire as they first opened the enemy, and retreating in position until day-break. And the time thus wasted here employed in pursuing the march, he must, by the morning, have been reached in the main body, that their co-operation could no longer have been perceived, and Hyder could have declared himself a defeat, or have compelled precipitately to retire. There was no want of courage, but a sad deficiency of military judgment and decision.—W.

about eleven at night, a river, within a mile and a half of Chingliput, so deep, that the rear of the army passed only at three o'clock on the following morning. At this place the General expected to find a stock of provisions: but, with all his endeavours, could hardly procure partly for a day. Fortunately for Colonel Oakey, as he was about to make a forced march to Dergavaram, he met with one of the fugitive sepoys from Colonel Baillie's camp, upon whose intelligence he proceeded to Chingliput, and, though considerably harassed by the enemy on his march, joined the army in safety on the morning of the 12th. Leaving the sick, and part of the baggage, at Chingliput, the whole army, at six o'clock on the morning of the 13th, began their march for the Mount, at which they arrived in the afternoon of the following day. Nothing could exceed the consternation and alarm of the Presidency, which now trembled even for Madras; and desperate as it was not only of provisions, but supplies of every kind, if Hyder had followed the English with his usual impetuosity, and with his whole army assailed the place, it is hard to tell how nearly, if not completely, he might have involved the Christian interests of the nation in ruin.¹

On the 8th of September, the supreme Council in Bengal had deliberated upon the situation of the Presidency of Madras, and the propriety of adding to their pecuniary resources; but as the Supreme Council were still uncertain as to the reality of Hyder's invasion, or the success of the Presidency in raising money, it was agreed, that proceedings should be delayed till further intelligence.

The Supreme Council were highly dissatisfied with the Governor and Council of Fort St. George, who had not only passed the severest strictures on their policy, but, in the business with Nizam Ali, the Schahdar, had acted contrary to their declared inclinations, and even commands. The Madras Presidency, offended with the interference of the Supreme Council in their negotiation with the Schahdar, and with their own error, Mr. Holland, as

¹ For the original documents which, in this instance, see First Essay, of pages, with its Appendix. In "Memoirs of the late War in Asia," v. 150-200 besides the confidential transactions, is a narrative of the transactions of Baillie's detachment, from the information of an officer who followed to it. The Journal Register for 1784, contains a terrible account, chiefly drawn from the Parliamentary Reports.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1782.

an instrument in that interference, resolved that he should be recalled. The Supreme Council, being made acquainted with that resolution by Mr. Holland, and apprehending a greater embarrassment of the mind of the Nizam by an abrupt conclusion of the correspondence with the Company, came to an opinion, on the 14th of February, 1782, that advantage would arise from appointing a person to represent themselves at the Nizam's court : and to obviate the appearance of dissension between the Presidencies, they made application to the Governor and Council of Madras, whose servant Mr. Holland more immediately was, for their permission to vest that gentleman with the office ; and in the meantime directed him to remain with the Nizam till the answer of the Presidency was obtained. The offended minds of the Presidency, not satisfied with the recall of Mr. Holland, which had not produced an immediate effect, suspended him from their service. The Supreme Council, now freed from their delinquency in employing the services of another Presidency, appointed Mr. Holland immediately to represent them at the court of the Subahdar. They transmitted also their commands to the Governor and Council of Madras, under date the 12th of June, 1780, to make restitution of the Circle of Coimbatour. No step, however, had as yet been taken in the execution of that measure by the government of Madras ; and this the Governor-General represented, as a conduct which demanded the most serious consideration, and the decided interposition of the Sovereign Board.¹

On the 30th, however, of the same month of September, when intelligence had arrived not only of the actual invasion of Hyder, but of the discomfiture of Ballie, and the retreat of the army to the vicinity of Madras, with the poverty and helplessness of the Presidency, and the general havoc of the province by a barbarous foe, the Governor-General, regarding only the means of recovering the blow, and meeting the exigency with a clear judgment and a resolute mind, proposed, that all the faculties of their government should be exerted, to re-establish the power of the Company on the coast. He moved that the sum of fifteen lacs of rupees, and a large detachment of European

¹ Second Report of the Committee of Secretaries.

infantry and artillery, should immediately be sent to the relief of Madras: he also moved that Sir Eyre Coote should be requested to take upon himself, as alone sufficient, the task of recovering the honour and authority of the British arms; and recommended that an offer of peace should be made without delay to the Malabatta states. Upon the joint consideration, first, of the indignity and dangers of the British government; secondly, of the probability of mismanagement on the part of the government of Madras; and, lastly, of the resources which that government still possessed. Mr. Francis objected to the magnitude of the supply, and would have sent only half of the money and none of the troops, while peace, he said, should be concluded with the Malabattas on any terms which they would accept. It was agreed that Sir Eyre Coote, and not the government of Madras, in whom confidence could not be wisely reposed, should have the sole power over the money which was supplied; it was resolved, that the strong measure should be taken of suspending the Governor of Fort St. George, for his neglect of their commands in not restoring the Circuit of Tanjore; and on the 13th of October, Sir Eyre Coote sailed from Calcutta, with a battalion of European infantry, consisting of 320 men; two companies of artillery, consisting of 200 men, with their complement of 600 lascars, and between forty and fifty gentleman volunteers. The prejudices of the Sepoys rendered it hazardous to attempt to send them by sea; and till the waters abated, which in the rainy season covered the low lands on the coast, it was not practicable for them to proceed by land. The intention, indeed, was entertained of sending by land four or five battalions in the course of the next or the ensuing month; but to that proceeding another difficulty was opposed. Moolajee Ponda, the Begum of Berar, after showing a great readiness to meet the proposal of an alliance with the English, had afterwards temporized; and, though he afforded Colonel Goddard a safe passage through his dominions, declined all co-operation by means of his troops, and even evaded a renewal of the negotiation. When the disaffection of Nizam Ali towards the English was increased, that chieftain united his councils with the French rulers, and with Hyder Ali, for the means of

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1388.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1789.

qualifying his resentments; and they joined in threatening the Regent of Berar, if he afforded assistance to the English. The Regent distracted his means of resistance, and dared not to form the interdicted conjunction. The Nizam and the French chiefs even insisted that he should send an army to invade and ravage Berar, and he was afraid to resist the command; so he had no intention, however, to bring upon himself the resentment of the English, he communicated to the Governor-General intelligence of the constraint under which he acted; and, though he sent into Cuttack an army of 30,000 horse, under his son Chimnaje Baula, he promised to contrive, by means of delay, that it should not reach the borders of Berar, till the season of action was over, and the rains began. When it did arrive, which was early in June, 1780, it was in such distress for want of provisions, as to find a necessity of applying to the Bengal government for aid. The policy of preserving, if possible, the relations of amity with the state of Berar, as well as the motive of making a valuable return for the accommodations afforded to Colonel Goddard on his march, disposed the government to comply with its request. The army of Chimnaje Baula was in want of money no less than provisions; and on the 21st of September, an urgent request was tendered for a pecuniary accommodation, which the Governor-General privately, and without communication with his Council, in part supplied; at the same time intimating, that it depended upon the recall of that army from Cuttack, or its junction with the troops of the Company, to enable him to propose a public gratuity better proportioned to its wants. It might, in these circumstances, be presumed, that Chimnaje Baula would not hinder an English detachment to pass through Cuttack for Madras; but evil intentions on his part were still possible; on that of Nizam Ali something more than possible; the hazard of a march by the countries which they occupied was therefore proportionally great.¹

Sir Eyre Coote, with a passage fortunately expedited, landed at Madras on the 5th of November, and took his seat in Council on the 7th. He had been appointed bearer

¹ First Report, at supra, and Appendix, No. 17; *Second Report*, 4th ed. p. 39, and Appendix, No. 24—26.

BOOK V.
CHAP. I.
—
CIB.

of the decree by which the Supreme Council suspended the Governor of Fort St. George ; and this document he now produced. The Governor not only denied the competence of the Supreme Board to exercise the authority which they now assumed ; but declared their decision precipitate and unjust, as contumacious appearing in his conduct to merit the punishment, which they arrogated to themselves unwarrantably the power to inflict. The majority of the Council, however, recognized the suspension ; and the senior member of the Council succeeded to the chair.

During the interval between the retreat of Sir Hector Munro to the Mount, and the arrival of the Commander-in-Chief with the Bengal supplies, the Presidency at Madras had in vain importuned the Nabob for munitions which he had not to bestow. They appointed Colonel Braithwaite to the command in Tanjore ; and recommended that a body of cavalry should be raised in that country, demanded the assistance of the Raja for that purpose, as well as for provisions to the troops. They made restitution at last of the Gustour Circar ; and at the same time sent a letter to the Nizam, in which they advertised him of the compliance they had yielded to his desires ; made apology for delay in paying the pecuniary, and promised regularity, when the removal of the present troubles should place it more in their power. Partly the poverty and weakness of this Prince, partly his jealousy of Hyder, and partly the assurances which he had received from the Superior Government in Bengal had as yet retained him inactive during the war which he had been eager to execute. The situation of the Northern Circars was calculated to tempt his ambition. The troops, with the exception of garrisons for the three principal places, were all recalled ; but the Sepehs in the Gustour Circar refused to proceed by sea, and were obliged to be left at Oragola, while a mutiny was the effect of an attempt to embark those at Masulipatam and Vingapatam. At the first of these places, order was restored by the address of the commanding officer. At Vingapatam, however, they killed several of their officers, plundered the place, and went off, accompanied by five companies of the first Circar battalion. Apprehensions were entertained, that the

BOOK V. Sepoys of the neighbouring Circar would follow their example; and that the Zemindars would deem the opportunity favourable to draw their necks out of the yoke. Sitteram Râo, who had been vested with so great a power by the favour of Governor Randel, stood aloof in a manner which had the appearance of design. But Visernâ Râo, his brother, who had just grounds of complaint, zealously exerted himself to suppress and intercept the mutineers, who at last hid down their arms, with part of their plunder, and dispersed.

Immediately after the battle of Conjevorum, Hyder marched to renew the siege of Arcot, defended by about 150 Europeans, and a garrison of the Nabob's troops. In the service of the Nabob, there was hardly found a man that was faithful to his trust. Discord prevailed between the officers of the Nabob and those of the Company, during the whole of the siege. The approaches of Hyder were carried on with a skill resembling that of the best engineers, and his artillery was so well served as to dismount repeatedly the English guns upon the batteries. After a siege of six weeks, the town which surrounded the fort was taken on the 31st of October, by assault; but the fort was strong, and still might have defended itself for a considerable time. The favour with which Hyder found his cause regarded by the people, he took care to improve, by the protection which he afforded to the inhabitants of Arcot, and the treatment of his prisoners: the applause of his generosity easily passed from the people without the fort to the people within: with the Nabob's officers he probably corresponded; the native troops almost all deserted; and the fort capitulated on the 3rd of November. The officer who commanded the fort, on the part of the Nabob, he took immediately into his service and confidence. Many other of the Nabob's garrisons had surrendered, with little or no resistance, generally upon the summons of Hyder's horse; and though an excuse was furnished, by the condition in which they found themselves with respect to the means of defence, nothing less than general treachery and disaffection seemed sufficient to account for the facility with which every place was given up. Hyder immediately supplied the forts with garrisons, repaired the works, and laid in

provisions and stores. He proceeded with great expedition to put Arest into the best possible state of defence. Every avenue which led to it from Madras, and from Madras to the forts which the Nabob or the English still retained, was occupied by large detachments of his horse, and when need was, even by infantry, and fortified posts. By this means, the channel of communication, not only for supply, but even for intelligence, was almost wholly cut off.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1780.

Not deficient, either in the virtues which inspire affection, or in those which command respect, Sir Eyre Coote, as he was somewhat disposed to enlarge in praise of himself, so was somewhat apt to indulge in complaint of others. In the letters, which after his arrival in the Carnatic he addressed to the Directors and the Ministers of the King, he drew a picture in the darkest colours, not only of the weak and distressed condition into which the country was brought, but of the negligence and insolvency, if not the corruption and guilt, of those servants of the Company, under whose management such misfortunes had arisen. It was, however, much more easy to point out what it was desirable should have been performed, than, with the defective revenue of the Presidency, to have performed it.¹ That Presidency had repeatedly represented both to the Supreme Council and to the Directors, their utter insolvency, through want of money, to make any military exertion; and by both had been left to struggle with their necessities. It was the poverty of the Carnatic, and the unwillingness of all parties to act as if they believed in that poverty, much more, it is probable, than the negligence or corruption of the government, which produced the danger by which all were now alarmed.²

¹ See the Fourth Report of the Committee of January, p. 5, where it appears to have been distinctly ascertained, by the Governor and Council, on the 20th January, 1780, that their resources were unequal even to their present necessities, much more to make any preparations for war.

² If the poverty of the Carnatic Presidency was the consequence of mismanagement and corruption, it only aggravated their culpability. The resolutions of the Council were collectively, or protested against the profligacy of the Nabob, the incapacity of his European adherents, and the ignorance or venality of the Company's servants, to have surrounded the Presidency in a general impotence, if not hostility, to its neighbours. At any rate, the knowledge of such insupportable conduct, raised as the complaints uttered by, should have deterred the Government from proceeding headlong, from a breach of their engagements with Hyder Ali, from disregarding his displeasure, and violating his territory, and from injuring and offending the

leader he was confident would prevail, and nothing was, therefore, more desirable than to bring Hyder to a general action. On the 17th of January, 1781, the army, under the command of General Coote, marched from the encampment at the Mount. Hyder was struck with awe by the arrival of the new commander and the reinforcements from Bengal. So far from opposing the passage of the Palar, he abandoned Wandiwash with precipitation, as soon as the army approached.* But this success was counterbalanced by the fall of the important fortress of Arcot, which commanded one of the passes into the Carnatic. From Wandiwash the army was on its march towards Trinacoli, when intelligence was received by express, that a French fleet had arrived. This was an event by which attention was roused. The direction of the march was immediately changed; and the army, after a few days, encamped on the Red hills of Pondicherry, with its front toward Arcot.

After the reduction of Pondicherry, the inhabitants had been treated with uncommon forbearance and generosity. The fortifications alone were destroyed. The people were allowed to trade under the protection of the English; and the officers to remain on their posts. Even upon the return of Hyder, when it was entirely evacuated by the English troops, the officers alone were sent to Madras. The flattering prospect of being speedily reinforced by their countrymen, of seeing themselves change places with the English, and of contributing something to the recovery in India of the glory and power of their country, tempted the Frenchmen of Pondicherry to forget the favours which they had received. They applied violence to the English residents, collected *sapoys*; and hid in provisions at Carraigoly. Sir Eyre Coote made haste to disarm the inhabitants, to remove the provisions from Carraigoly, and to destroy the boats. The French fleet, consisting of seven

* Wandiwash was not besieged by Hyder at this time in person. The commander of the camp was one of his generals, the *Bakhshi*, the fleet was composed of 1 vessel of war, and a number of the *Sapoys* only. The extraordinary courage, presence of mind, and military talents of Lord Clive, are described with the most striking circumstances, and with extraordinary high coloured colours of war, by Col. Wallis, in 1781, in a plan of Madras, &c. &c. Hyder at this period was engaged on the coast of Yellora, which was threatened with successful assault by Gen. Lang; and the failure of an attempt to carry off stores, on the 11th of January, as well as the movements of the English General, induced Hyder to raise the siege. Vol. II.—9.

BOOK V. large ships, and four frigates, lay at anchor off Pondicherry. The English army was closely followed by large bodies of the enemy's horse; and on the 8th of February

CHAP. V.

1781.

Hyder passed at the head of his army, within cannon-shot of the English camp: marching, as was supposed, directly to Cuddalore. The English drums beat to arms; and while the enemy proceeded on one of the two roads which lead towards Cuddalore, the English marched parallel with them on the other, and encamped on the 9th with their right towards the ruins of Fort St. David, and their left towards Cuddalore. So feeble were the resources of the English General, that he was already reduced to a few days' provisions; and eager for a battle, as the most probable means of obtaining relief. He moved the army on the 10th from the cover of the guns of Cuddalore, leaving the tents standing, and placed himself in order of battle. He informed the men, as he rode along the line, that the very day he wished for was arrived; and that they would be able in a few hours to reap the fruit of their labours. The English remained for three successive days offering battle to the enemy, which he was too cunning to accept; and on the fourth returned to their camp, with a great increase of their sick, their provisions almost exhausted, the cattle on which their movements depended dying for want of forage, Hyder in possession of the surrounding country, and an enemy's fleet upon the coast. The deepness of the gloom was a little dispelled by the sudden departure of that fleet, which, being greatly in want of water and other necessaries, and afraid of the English squadron which was shortly expected back from the opposite coast, set sail on the 13th of February, and proceeded to the Isle of France.

The inability, in the English army, to move, for want of provisions and equipments, and the policy of Hyder to avoid the hazards of a battle, prevented all operations of importance during several months. In the meantime Hyder reduced the fortress of Thilagar; his cavalry overrun and plundered the open country of Tanjore; and Tip-poo Saib, with a large division of his army, laid siege to Wanderswah.

On the 14th of June the fleet returned with a reinforcement of troops from Bombay. While absent on the

Western coast, Sir Edward Hughes had attacked the ships of Hyder, in his own ports of Calicut and Mangalore; and destroyed the rudiments of that maritime power which it was one of the favourite objects of his ambition to erect.

BOOK V.
CHAP. II.
1784.

The want of bullocks, which were the draught cattle of the army, rendered the movement even of the English artillery heavy and slow. In hopes of being now supplied with provisions by sea, while they remained upon the coast, the English proceeded to Porto Novo on the 19th of June, not only to put a stop to the ravages of the enemy in Tanjore and the neighbouring districts, but to yield protection to Trichinopoly, against which, it was evident, that Hyder was preparing to march. On the 18th, General Caste in person conducted a large detachment to the assault of the fortified Pagoda of Chilianbram; where he was repulsed with very considerable loss. This event, which the English regarded as a heavy misfortune, produced the most favourable results. At a time when they could by no means venture to carry their operations from the vicinity of the sea: when their imbecility was becoming dangerously visible: and when they might have been soon cooped up within the walls of Madras, this disaster sufficiently elevated Hyder, whose army had increased with the progress of his arms, to hazard a battle for the sake of preventing the advance of the English towards Trichinopoly; which, as holding in check the southern countries, was regarded by him as an object of great importance, and against which he was proportionally desirous that his operations should not be disturbed. He was dissuaded, it is said, but in vain, from this rash design, by the presence of his eldest son; and advancing on the only road by which the English could proceed to Calicut, he took up an advantageous position, which he fortified with redoubts, while the English were obtaining a few days' provisions landed insensibly through the surf. Early in the morning of the 1st of July, the English army broke up the camp at Porto Novo, and commenced their march with the sea at a little distance on their right. To the other difficulties under which the English General laboured, was added a want of intelligence, partly from deficient arrangements, but chiefly, it is probable, from the

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1762.

disaffection of the people of the country, and the diffusion of Hyder's name, who seldom allowed a spy to return. After a march of about an hour, the opening of an extensive prospect discovered a large body of cavalry drawn up on the plain. It was necessary to detach from the English army, small as it was, a considerable body of troops for the protection, from the enemy's irregular horse, of the baggage and the multitudinous followers of an Indian camp. The General formed the army in two lines, and advanced in order of battle. A heavy cannonade was opened on the cavalry which occupied the road before them. This dispersed the cavalry, and exposed to view a line of redoubts, commanding the road, and the enemy beheld that line, extending on the right and left to a greater distance on the plain than the eye could command. The troops were ordered to halt; and the principal officers were summoned to council. The difficulties were almost insurmountable: the sea enclosed them on the right: impassable sand-banks on the left. to advance directly upon the fire of so many batteries exposed the army to a dreadful slaughter, if not extermination. and four days' provisions, which the men carried upon their backs, constituted the whole of their means of subsistence. While the Council deliberated, an officer, walking to a little distance, discovered a road cut through the sand-hills. It was afterwards found to have been made by Hyder the preceding night, with a view to enable him, when the English should be storming the batteries in front, to throw them into confusion by falling on their flank; when his horse would rush from behind the batteries and complete their destruction. The army fled off into the newly-discovered road, the sepoys unharassing the wretched men, and drawing the artillery more quickly themselves. Hyder perceived the failure of his stratagem, evacuated his works, and moved exactly parallel with the English army: which, after passing the sand-banks, turned and faced the enemy. A pause ensued, during which the General seemed irresolute, and some officers counselled a retreat.^a Several of the men fell under the fire of the

^a Both Walker and Mordaunt ascribe this pause to an irresolution in the General, but to the necessity of waiting until his second army was in position. Mordaunt's account is particularly valuable, as he was present. — The General rode along

enemy's guns, which had been removed with great expedition from the batteries, and placed in the line. The second line of the English army was commanded to occupy some heights in the rear. Hyder, soon aware of the importance of this position, sent a division of his army to dislodge them. The first line of the English, led by Sir Hector Munro, now went forward to the attack; and at the same time another division of the enemy endeavoured to penetrate between the two lines, and attack the General in the rear. For six hours, during which the contest lasted, every part of the English army was engaged to the utmost limit of exertion. The second line upon the heights, skilfully and bravely commanded by General Stuart, not only repelled the several attacks which were made to force them from their advantageous ground, but successfully resisted the attempt which was made to penetrate between the lines, and rendered it impossible for the enemy to aim a stroke at the baggage towards the sea. The first line was thus left with undivided attention to maintain their arduous conflict with the main body of Hyder's army; where their admirable perseverance at last prevailed, and driving before them progressively, infantry, cavalry, artillery, they finally precipitated the enemy into a disorderly retreat. Had the English possessed cavalry, and other means of active pursuit, they might have deprived Hyder of his artillery and stores, and possibly reduced him to the necessity of evacuating the province. Their loss did not exceed 400 men; and not one officer of rank was either killed or wounded. The enemy's principal loss was sustained in the first attack upon the line on the heights, the strength of which they mistook, and advanced with too much confidence of success. In the rest of the battle, they fought chiefly at a distance, and with their artillery, which was skilfully served. The consequences of this victory were highly important. Hyder abandoned his design upon the southern provinces. Tippee raised the

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1791.

the first [of the first line] encompassing over, and to reserve their fire till they were ordered to join with A., for only to shoot for ammunicions from the second line. An hour or more from General Stuart told him that he had taken possession of the sand-belt, he immediately gave orders to advance, and to open all the guns. The day was so heavy that nothing could stand before it. Life of Munro, 43. See also a detailed account of the action, in FRANK, II. 308.—W.

BOOK V. *siege of Wandersnah ; and both retired with the whole of*
 CHAP. V. *their army to the neighbourhood of Arcot.*

1781.

The body of native troops, which it had been resolved by the government of Bengal to send by land to the assistance of Madras, was long detained by the negotiations, carried on as well with the Serar government, as with Chinnajee, the Commander of the army in Orissa. The distress of that Commander for money to pay his troops, and the proposal of gratuity of thirteen, with a loan of ten, lakhs of rupees, though distrust of the English power, now violently shaken, made his father shy, induced Chinnajee to engage for a safe passage to the troops. The detachment was placed under the command of Colonel Pearce ; and about the end of March arrived at Goujam, where it was long detained by the violence of an infectious disease. This, together with a great desertion among the sepoys, materially weakened the battalions ; and their junction was not effected with Uesta, who had returned to Madras, before the beginning of August.

The object which most immediately engaged the desires of the English was the recovery of Arcot. As the want of provision was the grand impediment to that enterprise, and as the enemy were reported to have laid in great stores at Tripassero, the siege of that place was undertaken, in hopes to supply the army for the siege of Arcot. But Tripassero, though it surrendered after a few days' resistance, was found to contain a small supply of provisions, and the advanced parties of Hyder's army, who was in full march to its relief, appeared in sight, before the English troops had taken full possession of the works. Hyder fell back a few miles to what he reckoned a lucky spot, a strong position on the very ground where he had defeated Baillie. And the English General, eager for another battle, which might relieve him from his difficulties, came in sight of the enemy about eight o'clock on the morning of the 27th. The position of Hyder gave him great advantages, while his guns bore upon the approaching army, and the advance was rendered peculiarly difficult by a number of water-courses cutting the ground. The second line of the English army, consisting of two brigades, were directed to occupy a situation of some strength on the left, while the first line, consisting of three brigades,

formed in line of six or eight columns, which they were commanded to storm. No sooner had they pushed through some intervening underwood, than they found the guns removed from the front, and beginning to fire upon both their flanks; while at the same instant a tremendous cannonade opened on the second line. Sir Hector Munro, who commanded the first line, was ordered to join the second, which could hardly maintain its ground. The two lines having closed, and presenting the same front, were commanded to advance on the enemy's artillery. The intervening ground was not only difficult, but impracticable; where the army stood, some protection was derived from a long avenue of trees. This was observed by the whole line; and Sir Hector Munro pointed it out to the General. "You talk to me, Sir, when you should be doing your duty." The army accordingly advanced; the men began to drop very fast; and grew impatient. A tumult blew up, the second in the course of the day. At an insupportable difficulty, the army came to a stand, and impatiently waited for orders. None arrived. Sir Hector Munro, seated silently by the only tree that was in the plain, refused to issue a single command. The battalions, opening for the purpose of giving way to the enemy's shot, had fallen into clusters, and become many. The second line broke into great confusion. Two hours did the army remain in this perilous situation, in which, had they been vigorously charged by the enemy's cavalry, they could scarcely have avoided a total defeat. It is probable that Hyder's experience had rendered it difficult for him to conceive that the English were in a state of confusion. Night advancing, he ordered his guns to be drawn off, and the English returned to the strong ground which the second line originally occupied. A conference was held among the principal officers, when the impossibility of remaining, and the danger of advancing, being apparent to all, one gentleman, in expressing his sentiments, made use of the word *retreat*. The general immediately assent, he had never retreated in his life. He added, that he would permit the army to fall back. Spies came in with intelligence that Hyder was preparing to attack the English army between midnight and break of day. The troops in consequence were ordered to pass the night under arms

BOOK V
CHAP. V.
1781.

BOOK V. in front of the camp. The report was false, artfully given
CHAP. V. out by Hyder, to cover his intention of removing in the
night, to a place more secure from surprise. The next
1781. day the English buried their dead, and collected the
wounded; when, being masters of the field of battle, they
fixed the guns in token of victory. They now marched
back to Tripunore; when Hyder, calling the march a
retreat, proclaimed a victory, with all the pomp of war, to
the nations of India.¹

The English suffered considerably more in this than in
the previous action; and the army less. Of the privates
not less than 800 were lost to the service.² Several offi-
cers of distinction were wounded, and some were killed.

Affairs were now in great extremity. The moment
seemed approaching when the army would be constrained
to quit the field for want of provisions. Madras itself was
threatened with famine. The fort of Vellore was so
exhausted of provisions, that it could not hold out beyond
a short time longer; and the fate of the Carnatic in a
great measure depended on the fort of Vellore. The
greatest exertions were made to enable the army to march
to its relief. Madras was for that purpose actually
exhausted of the means of subsistence. The enemy were
encamped at the pass of Shallegur on the road to Vellore;
to which the English came up on the 27th of September.
A strong body was detached, in order to occupy a rising

¹ The description of this action in the text, is taken, chiefly from authori-
ties indisputable to Sir Egmont Clarke, and is at least accurate. The account
given by General Welles is much more incorrect, both for the military details,
those worthy of notice. Murray's army was so small, but victorious. "The
position of Hyder was such, that a disaster could not have been imagined.
Besides five villages, which the enemy had occupied, the ground about their
front, and on three sides, was obstructed at every distance by deep ditches
and water-courses; their centre, third from our batteries, sat in a gulch of
dark, which had been formed from the hollowing of the rocks, and the main
body of their army lay behind them. The elephants became ground about
18 inches, and remained with little addition on the ascent. As we found it
almost impossible to advance upon the ramp, as the cannon could not be
brought without much loss and labour, with the tanks placed in front,
The enemy moved as we advanced, and always found cover in the ditches and
behind the tanks. They were forced back three or four times in great hurry
sending a short time in possession of some ground, but did in great hurry
and confusion, two sides of the camp." *Ann. i. 42.* That his army was small
from a total rout by the difficulty of getting at it, was probably discovered by
Hyder from the report of having fought a drawn battle. Such, according to
Welles, is related in the Mysorean accounts; not a victory, as in our text
Welles, *ib. 42.*

² The English army lost no more than 400 killed, wounded, and missing.
officers included. Welles. Our loss was about 800. Murray, *ib.*

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1781.

ground to the left of the enemy's encampment, while the main army advanced in a single line upon their front. Hyder, from his former experience, had concluded that Sir Eyre Coote would keep the whole of his troops together; and had only provided against a direct movement on his line. His good sense made him resolve not to change the disposition of his rude and unwieldy mass in the face of an enemy; and his only effort was to draw it out of the field. He endeavored to alarm the detached portion of the English army with a feint; while, after a short firing, his guns were hurried off. His horse during these operations stood the fire of the English cannon, and suffered severely. Before he could extricate himself, and before night came to his aid, he had sustained a considerable loss, with the power of inflicting only a trifling injury in return.¹

The English were in no condition to press upon the foe. In the minor operations which succeeded, as in the whole course of the war, one of the most remarkable circumstances was the extraordinary promptitude and circumspection of Hyder's intelligence, who had notice of almost every attempt, even to surprise the smallest convoy, and in this important respect, the no less remarkable deficiency of the English. On the 10th of October, the General removed his camp to the neighbourhood of Palgatt, where he obtained a quantity of rice. With this he afforded Welarc a temporary supply; and was ever encouraged to undertake the siege of Chivara. That place, not being provided for defence, capitulated in two days; while Hyder, obliged to humour his army, was unable to obstruct these operations. The month of November was now

¹ The accounts of White and Munro are much more particular and clear than that of the first. Hyder was taken unperceived, and had not struck his tents when the head of the British line appeared before his encampment; and his only object in the battle of Alforat, was to draw the enemy within the bow of his guns. "The accounts thus far contained in a circle," "He desired his best horse (the fiery yellow one) would run under these heavy leaders to attack on every part of our wing at the same time. They considered it a full gallop (if they were not well as much as possible, some being thrown and others run), the greater part either killed or fled, and those that persisted in retreating, were dispersed by a shower of musketry, except a few who thought it wiser to push through the intervals between the battalions and their guns, than to ride back through the close fire of the artillery. but most of them were killed by parties in the rear. This attack enabled Hyder to save his guns. Except the report with the artillery, every man in the Mysorean army shifted for himself. The loss of the camp was estimated at 1000, that of the English fell short of a hundred."—*W.*

BOOK V. arrived, and every thing announced the falling of the
CHAP. V. monsoon floods, when the rising of the rivers, and the
softening of the roads, would make the return of the
English army extremely difficult; so far, too, from
1781, being supplied with subsistence, the army continued in
a state of want; yet the General lingered where he was,
apparently absorbed in his own chagrin. He was sum-
moned from his reverie about the middle of the month,
by intelligence of an attack upon Palipott and Tripascore.¹
The rains fell upon him during his march: in the space of
a few days the roads became so deep, that one elephant,
three camels, a great number of bullocks, carriages, and
horses, were left miserably entangled in the mud: and
the Fokier was just fordable when he passed it on the 21st.
On his approach, however, the enemy abandoned both
Palipott and Tripascore: and after encamping a few days
on the Cocacore plain, where Tripascore, he placed the
troops in cantonments; having lost one-third of the force
with which, after his junction with Colonel Pearson, he
marched in August from the Mount.²

At the Presidency, changes of more than ordinary im-
portance had taken place during this campaign. The state
of affairs in the Carnatic having greatly alarmed the Com-

¹ There was no great delay in the movements of the British host. Outpost was taken only on the 11th December, and on the 14th the army marched to seize the camp of Tripascore.—W.

² For the materials of this war with Hydrabad, up to the present date, the most important sources are the *India Gazette*, British Reports of the *Commissary of Revenue*, in 1781. Of the military transactions, narratives of considerable value are to be found in the *Asiatic Magazine*, *Edinburgh's India Magazine*, and the publications of the *Moniteur of the Year* in Asia. For part of this campaign, see also Warren's *Essays*, *Life*, &c. &c. In the pages of Colonel Warren, I have now much to refer, not having had the opportunity of late to avail myself of his papers, although I had material reason to be extremely obliged. Where my facts stand upon the authority of public records, I mention, in the few instances in which we differ, that I apprehend to be quite more exactly than he. To my other authorities I should have preferred him; though it is a grievous defect, that, as far as nearly tells us the source from which he derives his information: and though I repose no great confidence in the vague accounts, and still more vague details, in which he has so often indulged.—M.

Colonel Warren explains in his preface the authorities he employs, and the reasons why more precise references is not given. He writes from private documents, and from the official records of the Madras Government. To those a particular reference would have been of no use, as they are not generally accessible. Of the more and slender aids which they are cited, we have every reason to entertain a favourable belief, and the remarks and catalogues which afford our notes, are apparently so all drawn judiciously, although they may be usually, less so. As a military history of a very important period of our transactions in India, Col. Warren's *South of India* is a work of the highest general utility.—W.

pany in England, misfortune pointed resentment against the men under whose superintendence it had arrived; and according to the usual process of shallow thought, a change of rulers, it was concluded, would produce a change of results. So much of misconduct having been imputed to the servants of the Company, a party appeared to be forming itself, even among the Directors and Proprietors, who called for an extension of the field of choice and represented it as rather an advantage, that the chief governors in India should not be selected from the servants of the Company. It necessarily followed that a party arose who contended with equal zeal that by the Company's servants the stations of greatest power and trust in India ought exclusively to be filled. At a Court of Proprietors, held on the 30th. of November, 1783, Mr. Listerdale moved, "That it be recommended to the Court of Directors to appoint forthwith a Governor of Madras, and that it be earnestly recommended to them to appoint one of their own servants to fill that vacancy." It was on the other hand contended, that the *fitest* man, not a man of any particular class or order, ought always to be sought for the places on which the interests of the community principally depended; and that integrity, unshaken by the example of plunder and corruption, a character to lose, and consequently one to save, by shunning the officers of former governors, were to be considered as the strict qualifications in their new Governors of Madras. The Court adjourned without proceeding to a ballot; but on the 23rd. of the same month the question was renewed. Lord Macartney, who had recently gained reputation by negotiating a commercial treaty with Russia, was pointed out as the choice of the Company; the advantages of a liberal education, of political experience, acknowledged talents and honour, were placed in the strongest point of view by the one party; the benefits of local knowledge, and of the motives to zeal, to industry, fidelity, and the acquisition of knowledge afforded to the whole line of the Company's servants, by the high prices of the principal stations in the government of India, were amply displayed by the opposite party: and, on a division, it was decided by a majority of seventy-nine to sixty, that new men should be eligible to the office of Governors in India. The

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

BOOK V. Court of Directors were guided by similar views; and on
 CHAP. V. the 14th of December, Lord Macartney was appointed
 Governor and President of Fort St. George. After a passage of four months, he landed at Madras on the 23rd of June, 1781, and then first obtained intelligence that the country was invaded.

He came to his office, when it, undoubtedly, was filled with difficulties of an extraordinary kind. The presence of a new Governor, and of a Governor of a new description, as change itself under pain, is excited a good, raised in some degree the spirits of the people. By advantage of the hopes which were thus inspired, he was enabled to borrow considerable sums of money. Having carried out intelligence of the war with the Dutch, and particular instructions to make acquisition of such of their settlements as were placed within his reach, he was eager to signalize his arrival by the performance of conquests, which acquired an air of importance, from the use, as supports, of which they might prove to Hyder, or the French. Within a week of his arrival, Sadras was summoned and yielded without resistance. Palicat was a place of greater strength, with a corps in its neighbourhood of Hyder's army. The garrison of Fort St. George was so extremely reduced, as to be ill prepared to afford a detachment. But Lord Macartney placed himself at the head of the militia; and Palicat, on condition of security to private property, was induced to surrender.

Of the association, which was usually made to the Princes of India, of the arrival of a new Governor, Lord Macartney conceived that advantage might be taken, aided by the recent battle of Porto Novo, and the expectation of troops from Europe, to obtain the attention of Hyder to an offer of peace. With the concurrence of the General and Admiral, an overture was transmitted, to which the following answer was returned, characteristic of some of the country and the man: "The Governors and Sindars who enter into treaties, after one or two years, return to Europe, and their acts and deeds become of no effect; and fresh Governors and Sindars introduce new conversations. Prior to your coming, when the Governor and Council of Madras had departed from their treaty of alliance and friendship, I sent my vakeel to confer with

them, and to ask the reason for such a breach of faith; the answer given was, that they who made these conditions were gone to Europe. You write that you have come with the sanction of the King and Company to settle all matters; which gives me great happiness. You, Sir, are a man of wisdom, and comprehend all things. Whatever you may judge proper and best, that you will do. You mention that troops have arrived, and are daily arriving, from Europe: of this I have not a doubt. I depend upon the favour of God for my success." Nor was it with Hyder alone, that the new Governor interposed his good offices for the attainment of peace. A letter signed by him, by Sir Edward Hughes, and Sir Eyre Coote, the commanders of the sea and land forces, and by Mr. Macpherson, a Member of the Supreme Council, was addressed to the Nabob, in which they offered themselves as guarantors of any treaty of peace which might be contracted between them and the Governor-General and Council of Bengal: and declared their willingness to assent to the restoration of General, Salsette, and Bombay.

The principal stronghold of the Dutch, on the Coromandel coast, was Negapatam, near the southern boundary of Tanjore. This, Lord Macartney was desirous of adding to the rest of the conquests from the Dutch, immediately after his arrival, but was overruled by the opinion of the Commander-in-Chief, who represented the importance of recovering Arcot, in the first instance, and of marching afterwards to the attack of Negapatam. The President was eager to avail himself of the assistance of the fleet and marines, in his design against Negapatam — assistance, without which, the object could hardly be accomplished, and which could only be obtained while the season permitted shipping to remain upon the coast. Though the General had been disappointed in his hopes of being able to attempt the recovery of Arcot, he continued in the north-western part of the province, apparently disposed neither to make the attack of Negapatam, nor to spare for that enterprise any portion of his troops. To Lord Macartney the attainment of the object did not appear to be hopeless without him. The inclination, however, of a design to make the attempt, brought

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1782.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1781.

back from the General an eager renunciation of all responsibility in the exploit, a pretty confident prediction of disappointment, and, from disappointment, of consequences deplorable and ruinous. The President declared that, convinced as he was of the propriety, and hence obligation of the enterprise, he would not shrink from the responsibility. To avoid interference with the General, not a man was taken from his army. Colonel Bailliville, who commanded in Tanjore, and in whom the President comprehended that he found not all the slowness which could have been desired, was directed, with his troops, to aid in the attack. The choice of a leader, too, was involved in difficulties. After the effort received by Sir Hector Munro, in the battle of the 27th of August, he retired as soon as possible from the army commanded by General Cooke, under whom he served not again, and remained at the Presidency mending his health. It was to him that, in addition, the command of the expedition belonged; but Mr. Baillie, with whom he had the violent dispute, was now a member of the Select Committee; and he refused to serve under orders or directions in which that gentleman should have any concern. The scruples of the General met a contrast in the liberality of the Committee, who readily consented that he should receive his instructions from the President alone; and the President, with the Admiral of the fleet, was empowered to form what ever arrangements the enterprise should require. On the 21st of October, the women and marines were landed from the ships; on the 30th, the lines and redoubts were attacked and carried; on the 3rd of November, ground was opened against the north face of the fort, and the approaches were pushed on with great rapidity; the Governor was summoned on the 6th, after a battery of ten eighteen pounders was ready to open within three hundred paces of the walls; he refused to surrender; but, on the 13th, after making two desperate sallies, and after one of the bastions had suffered from a formidable breaching-battery, he offered to accept, and received, terms of honourable capitulation. The number of troops who surrendered was 6001—considerably greater than that of the besieging army. A large quantity of warlike stores, together with a double investment of goods—no ships having

arrived from Holland for the increment of that of the preceding year—was found in the place. With Negapatam, the whole of the Dutch settlements on that coast fell into the hands of the English; and the troops of Hyder began immediately to evacuate the forts which they had occupied in the kingdom of Tanjore. A body of 800 men were put on board the fleet, which sailed from Negapatam on the end of January, and proceeded to the attack of Trincomalee, a celebrated Dutch settlement on the island of Ceylon. It arrived before the place on the 4th, and on the 11th the host of the two forts which defended Trincomalee was taken by storm.*

The deplorable indigence of the Presidency; the feebleness of military operations unsupported by funds; the power of the enemy, and the discoloured prospect of supplies from Bengal, presented to the eyes of Lord Macartney a scene of difficulties, from which it was hardly possible to discover any source of relief. Participating in the general opinion to believe that the Nabob was no less embarrassed than the Company, and representing to that chief how great the interest which he, no less than the Company, had, in the acquisition of so dangerous a common foe, the President, at an early period of his administration, received the importunities of the government on the subject of a pecuniary supply. The Bengal government, by their letters, had already given a sanction to strong measures of coercion; declaring that, while every part of the Nabob's dominions, except the part retained by the English troops, was in the hands of a foreign power, and could only be wrested from it by their exertions, the Nabob could no longer be looked upon as the proprietor of the country; and that such a combination of circumstances not only justified, but required, the immediate assignment of all his revenues, to defray the expenses of the war. The President, expressing his desire to avoid this extremity, offered to accept a few lacs of pagodas as a temporary supply. This promise upon the inability of

* South Account of the Public Lab. of the East of Meerutty, by John Baskin, F.R.S. &c. 4to—1782; Annual Register for 1782.—H. Some interesting particulars of the capture of Fort Dondra, are given in the Memoirs of a Field Officer (Colonel Pears) on the Indian Land of the East India Service, who was present on a subsequent occasion.—H.

† Letter of Gov.-Gen. and Council, Feb. 26, 1781.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1792.

the Nabob, drew from him language of assent and confirmation; and when importunately urged, he at last declared, that his future contributions were defined, by a treaty which he had just concluded with the government of Bengal. The declaration, though it justly surprised the President and Council of Madras, was not at variance with the fact. The Nabob, who had tried the effect of an agency in England, both on the legislative and executive branches of the government, was advised to make trial of the same expedient on the controlling Board in India; and in March, 1791, he sent, on a commission to Calcutta, his deputy or treasurer, together with Mr. Joseph Sullivan, a servant of the Company, whom, without the consent of the Presidency, he had appointed his agent. The object of the Nabob was to obtain a clear recognition of his being the hereditary sovereign of the Carnatic, not subject to any interference on the part of the Company in the affairs of his government; a promise of exemption from all pecuniary demands, beyond the expense of ten battalions of troops, to be employed in his service; an admission of his right to name his successor, in pursuance of his wish to disinherit his eldest, in favour of his second son; a promise to add, by conquest, certain districts possessed by Hyder to his dominions, and to restore to him the kingdom of Tanjore; and, finally, the assistance of the Company, in forming a settlement with his European creditors.

To this embassy, the rulers of Bengal afforded a cordial reception. For the independence of the government of the Carnatic Prince, they undertook, in general terms: his requisitions, respecting the ten battalions, and the limit of his pecuniary contributions, was approved: his right to appoint his successor they recognised as already admitted: the conquest of certain districts possessed by Hyder, they declared to be as desirable on account of the Company's as the Nabob's interest: the restoration of Tanjore, they informed him, was not placed within the limits of their authority: with regard to his European creditors, they proposed, that after the addition to the principal sum, of all interest due to the 31st of November, 1791; and after a deduction of one-fourth from all the debts which might have been transferred from the original

creditors, by purchase or otherwise, Company's bonds, with the usual interest, should be granted, and paid, according to a proportion which might be fixed, out of the assigned revenues. And upon these conditions, it was proposed, but not without his own consent, that the Nabob should make over all the revenues of his country, during the war, to the Company; that his agents, in conjunction with persons appointed by the Presidency of Fort St. George, should perform the collections, and that as much only should be retained by the Nabob as was necessary for the disbursements of his family and government. Not only was this agreement translated to Madras, with instructions to consider it as possessing the validity of a treaty; but M. Sullivan returned with acknowledgments, as minister from the Governor-General and Council of Bengal at the Court of the Nabob.

Nothing is more pregnant with mischief than ill-wooded and indefinite laws; and the best legislatures have, as yet, displayed but little of the art of rendering the language of their enactments unambiguous and certain. We have already contemplated the disputes with the Presidency of Bombay, occasioned by the loose and imperfect phraseology of the law which conferred the power of control upon the Presidency of Bengal. In that instance, the Directors were even rebuked by their masters for carrying their pretensions beyond the intent of the Company, and that of the law, but on the present occasion they pushed their interference into the most immediate and important concerns of the Madras government; inveighed from their service and obedience the servants of that Presidency; and set up an agency of their own at Madras, which implied the suppression of the chief powers of the Governor and Council. Though the character of Lord Macartney was tinged with vanity as well as ambition, he possessed great temper and urbanity, and the Governor and Council of Madras, instead of treating this new assumption of power on the part of the Bengal government as an injury, expressed only their apprehensions that they were not free to divest themselves of powers, with which their employers had intrusted them, and for the exercise of which they would hold them responsible. They remarked, that they were therefore at liberty to consider the scheme of

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1783.

arrangements, which had been transmitted to them by the Supreme Board, as only materials to aid, not as constraints to supersede their judgment. The words, they observed, in which the Supreme Council had appeared to sanction the independence of the Nabob, as independence which they had received the express and repeated commands of the company to prevent, were so strictly ambiguous, as, in fact, to evade the question, and were inconsistent only in so far as they tended to sustain the pretensions of their troublesome associate; but as, in the government of the country, there were certain departments in which it was assumed as necessary that the Company's government should take a share, and yet those departments and that share remained totally undefined, the vagueness and ambiguity of the words of the Supreme Board left the Madras Presidency, if bound to obey, without any rule to guide their proceedings. The article which regarded the two battalions of troops appeared, they said, to them, to convey a power over their marches and operations, which the Court of Directors had ever been most anxious to withhold. The Nabob had requested the power of employing these troops in settling his country. The answer of the Presidency is worthy of record: "We wish to know what is meant by this article, before we form any judgment as to its propriety: we know not how troops can be properly said to contribute to the settlement of a country; if it be meant that he should have the Company's forces to enable him to punish or extirpate any of his tributaries, and if it be proper to lend our forces for such a purpose, should we not plainly say so, without reserve or ambiguity?" If the Nabob was to have the troops, in all cases, upon his simple requisition, "he might soon," they said, "require, what he has hitherto in vain solicited from the Court of Directors, — the means of attacking, contrary to their express commands, the principal tributary Rajas who claim and depend upon the protection both of the Crown and the Company." If he was only to be assisted in those cases which the President and Council should approve, the clause, though void of meaning, was not exempt from mischief, as it tended to raise "a claim, which, being undefined, would be measured only by the wishes of the claimant." The right of the Nabob to nominate a suc-

censor, or to infringe the rule of primogeniture, they declined to assent; but affirmed their total ignorance of any such extension of that right as the Governor General and Council appeared to assume. That the mode which was proposed for collecting the revenues, by the agents of the Nabob and of the Company in conjunction, was calculated to produce dissensions between the different parties, and to afford the agents of the Nabob a pretence for defalcations, alleging obstructions from the Company's servants, experience, they said, most fully evinced. Whether the defect proceeded from the want of intention on the part of the Nabob, or from his inability to ensure the obedience of his collectors, it had, through them, been found impossible to obtain the revenues. With regard to the arrangements in behalf of the creditors of the Nabob, they were unwilling to wear the appearance of opposing either the will of the superior Board, or the interest of the creditors; but they professed themselves ignorant, whether the creditors would regard the arrangement as advantageous, or the Directors would be pleased to find the Company pledged for bonds to so great an amount.

On the point, however, of the assignment, the situation of affairs, and the sanction of the Bengal government, appeared to the President and Council sufficient authority for urging the Nabob forcibly to concur with their views. With much negotiation it was at last arranged; that the revenues of all the dominions of the Nabob should be transferred to the Company for a period of five years at least; that of the proceeds one-sixth part should be reserved for the private expenses of himself and his family, the remainder being placed to his account, that the collectors should all be appointed by the President, and that the Nabob should not interfere. By this deed, which bore date the 2nd of December, 1761, the inconveniences of a double government, which by its very nature engendered discordance, negligence, rapacity, and profusion, were at last got rid of; though yet the misery and weakness to which they had contributed could not immediately be removed.*

* This is evidently the main object of the agreement projected, not assumed, viz. the debt, by the government of Bengal. In the reply of Hastings to the objections of the government of Madras, he first apologises for the trans-

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1782.

It was not one spring alone of dissension which distracted the government of Madras. The species of independent authority which had been conferred upon the General, produced many of the evils of a double government in the Presidency itself. The General had a susceptibility of temper, which, heightened by the infirmities of old age, by flattery, by the difficulties of his situation, and his want of success, made him take offence, with the levity and hastiness of a child. The civil authority, deprived, in a period of war, of all share in the military arrangements, found the business of government withdrawn from their hands, and themselves degraded into a capacity little superior to that of agents for supplying the wants of the army. The visible loss of authority, by weakening their influence, diminished their resources; and persons were even discouraged from referring there by loans. A situation like this was ill calculated to please a man of Lord Macartney's rank and pretensions. Aware of the uneasiness which it was probable he would feel, it was natural for the General to view him with suspicion from the moment when he arrived. The mutual desire to save appearances, preserved an uninterrupted intercourse of civilities, till Lord Macartney discovered his design of attempting the conquest of Negapatam against the advice and without the co-operation of the General. From that moment the General gave way to his spirit of dissatisfaction and complaint; refused to attend the consultations of the Select Committee; quarrelled with every measure that was proposed; and even wrote to the Governor-General and Council that he suffered from interference with his authority, and, unless he were vested with power

derived by the character of Lord Macartney's pretensions. "I beg, Lordship," he says, "will not ask, why we thought our intervention on this occasion necessary, and why we did not rather take the recommendation of the Presidency of Pondicherry, which was the regular instrument of the French king's participation in the government of the Carnatic; but I will suppose the contrary. I ought properly to answer it by another. Why did the Company withdraw their confidence from the King's Deputy, to bestow it on your Lordship?" he also declares, "that had he known of Lord Macartney's nomination, he should have referred the Matter to his government. He says the consequences of the agreement as being taken out of the instrument of Bengal, and having been dated by them; but he says there only on the 20th, 17th, 18th, and 19th articles, the two first standing upon the withdrawal of the assistance of the Carnatic and Tanjore, and their appearance in the progress of the war, and the two last proposing the recommendation of the Madras's forces, and arrangement with the creditors. The whole matter was, however, left finally to the decision of the Madras Presidency.—*25.*

totally independent, that he would resign the command. Beside the loss of their authority and the destruction of their power over even the sources of supply, the evil antipathies heightened, that they possessed no control over the expenditure of the army, and that, from the total disregard of economy, in which, notwithstanding the ruinous poverty of the government, the General indulged, that expenditure was enormously great. It nevertheless appears, that Lord Maunslony, aware of the importance not only of united efforts, but of the rank and influence of Ustia, entertained not an idea of withdrawing from him any portion of that authority with which he had been intrusted; and strove to preserve his good humour by studied forbearance and courtesy.¹

The army had not been many days in cantonments, when they expected to repose during the remainder of the season, when the fall of Chittoor was announced at Madras, and intelligence was received, that for want of provisions Vellore would not be able to hold out beyond the 15th of January. No action was to be spared for the preservation of this important place. The treasury was drained to the last pagoda, to afford some pay to the army, which was deeply in arrears. But the exorbitant demands for equipment and conveyance were the principal source of difficulty and alarm. To carry the necessaries of thirty-five days for twelve or fourteen thousand fighting-men, the estimate of the Quartermaster was 21,000 bullocks. Not to speak of the money wanted for the purchase, so great a number could not be procured; nor was it easy to conceive how protection could be afforded from Hyder's horse to a herd of so many bullocks: the march of 21,000 bullocks would of necessity form. The number of bullocks now on store was 8000. With these and 3000 mules, or porters, whom he could prize, it appeared to the President that the army might convey what was absolutely neces-

¹ "In a letter to a private friend, at the time, Sir Lockhart says, "I never reflect on my long experience & ask myself, as I do before, in fact, I never lose like a soldier, and I never lose like a child; but I do all this I have a man who will regard the fact, and cannot be in doubt. And I am truly grieved at heart to see a man of his military reputation, at the time of this, so easily misled by a man who ought to have been better, and from a great public character, to have taken the basic movement of private malignity and deep political animosity. All, however, has been, and shall be, good business and conducted by me as far as I can." Extract of a letter to Sir. Macpherson, dated Fort St George.

BOOK V.

CHAPTER VI.

1781.

Army; and the urgency of the case made the General disposed to waive his moral objections. Though with broken health, he joined the army on the 2nd of January; but on the 5th he suffered a violent apoplectic attack, and the army halted at Tripancoor. On the following day, he was so far revived as to insist upon accompanying the army, which he ordered to march. They were within sight of Vellore on the 10th, and dragging their guns through a morass, which Hyder had suddenly formed by letting out the waters of a tank, when his army was seen advancing on the rear. Before the enemy arrived, the English had crossed the morass; when Hyder contented himself with a distant cannonade, and next day the supply was conducted safely to Vellore. As the army was returning, Hyder, on the 13th, again presented himself on the opposite side of the morass, but withdrew after a distant cannonade. On the evening of the 12th, the enemy's camp was seen at a distance; and a variety of movements took place on both sides on the following day: after mutual challenges, however, and a discharge of artillery, the contenders separated, and the English pursued their march to the Mount. The General expressed a desire of making a voyage to Bengal for the benefit of his health, but allowed himself to be persuaded to alter his design.¹

After the capture of Mâhé, the Madras detachment remained at Tellicherry, besieged by Hyder's tributary *Saïcs*. Early in May, 1781, beleagueringly demanded for the defence of the Carnatic, the detachment was relieved by Major Abingdon, who arrived with a force from Bombay. One of Hyder's principal generals, with a detachment from his army which greatly outnumbered the garrison, now carried on a vigorous attack. The utmost efforts of the besieged were incessantly demanded to counteract the operations of the enemy; and the commander was under the necessity of applying to Bombay, both for provisions and troops. The answer declared the inability of the Presidency to make any further provision for the defence of Tellicherry, and the resolution to which they had been reluctantly brought of giving it up. The military notions of disproof, and the still more important considerations of the cruel sacrifice

¹ Bayley's *Life of Lord Macartney*, 2. 129—137; Wylie's *Historical Sketches*, 2d. edit.; *Memoirs of the late War in Asia*, 2. 221—224.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1781.

which would lose, he made of the lives and fortunes of the people in the place, as well as the doubtful possibility of withdrawing the troops, induced Major Abingdon to conceal the contents of the letter, and to resist a strong remonstrance against the orders which he had received. It produced the desired effect, and a packet was immediately despatched from Bombay to secure him of speedy support. The arrival of his reinforcements deterred this enterprising officer no longer to confine himself to operations of defence. Every thing being prepared for a sally, upon the signal of the clock striking twelve, the troops got under arms, on the night of the 7th of January, and at once, in profound silence, began to march. After passing a deep morass, and escaping the notice of the enemy's pickets, they stormed an advanced battery at break of day, and forming the line, moved rapidly towards the camp, when the enemy fled to the utmost confusion, and their leader was wounded and taken. Master now of the surrounding country, Major Abingdon turned his thoughts to the re-establishment, in their respective districts, of the various chiefs whom Hyder had either rendered tributary or compelled to fly. Having, after this, demolished the enemy's works, and improved the defenses of the settlement, he marched towards Calcut. On the 11th of February, he took post within two hundred yards of the walls, and the next day a shell having fortunately blown up a part of the grand magazine, the garrison, exposed to an assault, immediately surrendered.

The hostilities of the French and English Governments, not contented with Europe and America as a field, at last invaded the two remaining quarters of the globe. A squadron of five ships of the line and seven frigates, under the conduct of M. de Suffren, together with a body of land forces, was prepared at Brest in the beginning of 1781; and sailed in company with the great fleet bound to the West Indies, under Count de Grasse, at the latter end of March. At the same period, a secret expedition, with which for some time rumour had been busy, was prepared in England. The state of the Spanish colonies in South America, and the rich prizes which they appeared to contain, had pointed them out as the destined object to the public eye. But the war with Holland, and the

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1762.

importance of the conflict now raging in India, communicated a different direction to the views of ministers: and the acquisition of the Cape of Good Hope, with the essential support of the war in India, became the end, for the accomplishment of which the enterprise was planned. One ship of seventy-four guns, one of sixty-four, three of fifty, several frigates, a bomb vessel, a fire-ship and seven sloops of war composed the squadron; of which Commodore Johnstone, with a reputation for decision and boldness, received the command. A land force, consisting of three new regiments of 1000 men each, was placed under the conduct of General Macleane, who had purchased fame in the action at St. Lucia with d'Estaing. On the 13th of March, in company with the grand fleet destined for the relief of Gibraltar, the armament sailed from St. Helen's, and, including several outward-bound East Indiamen, with store-vessels and transports, amounted to upwards of forty sail. The secret, however, of this expedition had not been so vigilantly guarded as to escape the sagacity of the Dutch and the French. The armament under Suffren was ultimately destined to reinforce the squadron now at the Isle of France; and to oppose the English fleet in the Indian sea. But the particular instructions of that officer were, in the first instance, to follow, and counteract the expedition of Johnstone, and above all, his design upon the Cape of Good Hope. For the sake of water and fresh provisions, the English squadron put into Praya Bay in St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verde Islands; and having no expectation of an enemy, cast their anchors at chance or convenience directed. A considerable proportion both of men and of officers, partly for business, partly for pleasure, were permitted to go on shore; and the decks were speedily crowded with water-masks, live stock, and other incumbrances. On the 18th of April, after nine o'clock in the morning, a strange fleet, suspected to be French, was seen coming round the eastern point of the harbour; and Suffren, separating from the convoy with his five sail of the line, soon penetrated to the centre of the English fleet. The utmost despatch was employed in getting the men and officers on board, and preparing the ships for action. The French ship, the *Hannibal*, of seventy four

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1781.

guns, led the van, and coming as close to the English ships as she was able, dropped her anchors with a resolution which excited a burst of applause from the British tars. She was followed by the ship of Suffrein, of equal force. Another of sixty-four guns anchored at her stern. And the two other ships, of sixty-four guns each, ranged through the fleet, firing on either side as they proceeded along. The ships being extremely near, and the guns being played with unusual fury, much destruction was effected in a little time. After the abatement of the first surprise, several of the Indians brought their guns to bear upon the enemy with good effect. Within an hour, the French ships at anchor had suffered so terribly, that the last of the three, having lost her captain, cut her cables and began to withdraw. Thus deserted a stern, and dequailing of success, Suffrein followed her example, and gave the signal to retreat; the *Hospital* alone remained, a mark to every ship the guns of which could be made to bear upon her; and displayed a resolution, which may be compared with the noblest examples of naval heroism. She had lost her foremast and bowsprit; her cable was either cut or shot away; in the effort of heaving more sail to get out of the fire, her main and mizen masts went overboard, and she remained, as it were, a ball upon the water. Sustaining the weight of a dreadful fire, to which, enfeebled as she was, her returns were slow and ineffectual, she yet joined the rest of the ships at the mouth of the bay, and, being towed off, created jury-masts, and proceeded with the fleet. An attempt on the part of the English to pursue was totally ineffectual. They sustained not any considerable loss, notwithstanding the closeness of the action, and the crowded situation of the ships. Their own steady and determined bravery counteracted the effects of surprise, and baffled the well-concerted scheme of the enemy. They remained to rest and provide till the end of May, and on approaching the Cape ascertained that Suffrein had arrived before them. Though previous to the arrival of Suffrein, that settlement, then supposed of great importance, was not in a

1 That *Fort Praya*, belonging to the Portuguese, was a several harbours, but before 1781 the only one of the French, though the English observed the possibility of reaching their fire and anchored.

BOOK V. condition to have offered any considerable resistance to
 CHAP. V. the land and naval force under Meadows and Johnstone;
 it was now accounted vain to make on it any attempt.
 1782. While the French fleet lay at anchor in False Bay, it ap-
 peared not to the Commanders impossible to make prize
 of a fleet of Dutch East Indiamen, in Saldanha Bay. Suc-
 cess depended on being able, by surprise and celerity, to
 prevent them from being run ashore and burnt. The end
 was partly completely attained; 14, out of five ships, four
 were captured. The Commanders in his own ship, with the
 prizes and most of the frigates, returned to Sasepo; the
 rest, together with the troops, proceeded to India. Saf-
 frain, leaving a sufficient garrison for the protection of the
 Cape, sailed for the Island of Mauritius; where he en-
 countered the French fleet to the east of the line, one fifty
 gun ship, and several frigates. The English, on the 2nd
 of September, stopped at the Island of Jamma, to land
 and recover the sick, who now amounted to a third part
 both of the seamen and soldiers. They left the island on
 the 24th of the same month; were becalmed from the
 11th of October to the 6th of November; at 260 leagues
 distant from Bombay, they were carried, by the shifting
 of the monsoons, to the coast of Arabia Felix; on the
 26th of November anchored in Morabet Bay; on the 6th
 of December, the principal ships of war, having on board
 General Meadows and Colonel Fullerton with the chief
 part of the troops, proceeded in quest of Admiral Hughes;
 the remaining ships and transports with part of two
 regiments, under the command of Colonel Humberston
 Mordaunt, left Morabet on the 2th; and arrived at Bom-
 bay on the 22nd of January, 1782.

The Colonel remained only six days at Bombay, when
 he re-embarked the men, and set sail for Madras. On the
 6th of February, at Anjengo, in the dominions of the King
 of Travancore, alarming intelligence reached him from the
 Coromandel coast, that Hyder Ali had overrun the whole
 of the Carnatic with an immense army; that he threat-
 ened Tanjore, Maravar, Madras, and Tinivelly with de-
 struction; that he circumvented and cut off two British
 armies; that disension, inexperience, and pusillanimity
 resigned at Madras; and that Fort St. George itself was
 invaded and endangered. To these statements was added

Intelligence that the French fleet were at this time to assemble off Point de Galle, and that measures for them had for some time been forming at Cochin and other parts in Ceylon. He called a Council of War; when he came to the determination, as consequence chiefly of the intelligence respecting the French fleet, rather to attempt a diversion on the Malabar side of Hyder's dominions, than to incur the chances of delay and danger attached to the voyage round to Madras. He landed his troops, amounting to scarcely a thousand men, at Calicut, on the 18th of February, where he joined Major Abingdon, and an senior officer assumed the command. He immediately took the field; proceeded into Hyder's territories; drove before him the army which was left for the protection of these parts; and took several forts; when, the monsoon approaching, he returned to Calicut, and placed his little army in cantonments in the month of May.

The French fleet, with a body of land forces, forming part of the armament which, under Bussy, was destined to reinforce the influence of the French in India, left the islands a considerable time after the English sailed for Java, and, the Admiral dying on his passage, the command devolved upon M. Suffrein, a man of great resources, of unvarnished enterprise, and, in every respect, one of the best naval commanders whom France had ever produced. The English fleet, delayed and dispersed by the weather, incurred considerable danger of a very unreasonable encounter; and the Hannibal, a fifty-gun ship, being separated from the rest in a haze, unexpectedly found herself surrounded by the enemy, where, after a fruitless though gallant resistance, she was taken. The French fleet arrived on the Cochin coast in the month of January, and intercepted several vessels bound to Madras with grain. Sir Edward Hughes, after taking Trincomalee, was obliged on the last day of January to set sail for Madras, being in great want of stores and provisions, his ships much decayed, and his crew demoralized and sick. On his arrival at Madras, on the 11th of February, he learned that he had fortunately escaped the French fleet already upon the coast; but still found himself exposed to their attack in an open road, with only six ships of the line, out of condition from long service, and almost destitute of sup-

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1782.

plies. By another fortunate chance (for had either squadron fallen in with the French, the most fatal consequences might have ensued), the ships which carried General Meadows and his army, consisting of one seventy-four, one sixty-four, and one fifty gun ship, arrived the next day in the road; and within twenty-four hours, Suffren, with ten ships of the line, two ships, including the captured *Hannibal*, of fifty guns, six frigates, eight transports, and six prizes, here in sight, reconnoitred Madras, and anchored a few miles to windward of the English fleet, which, with the utmost diligence, was making the necessary preparations for action. Deceived in his probable expectation of finding Sir Edward Hughes with only six sail of the line, not re-inforced, and of signalling his arrival by so decisive a blow as the destruction of the English fleet, he, on the 14th, passed Madras to leeward of battle to the southward. The English weighed anchor, and followed. On the 15th, in the evening, the fleets passed each other, so near, as to exchange cannon shots. On the 16th, the English Admiral found an opportunity of making a push at the French convoy separated from the fleet, when he retook five of the vessels which had been captured on the coast, and a large transport laden with provisions, ammunition, and troops. On the 17th, after a variety of movements, in which Suffren still kept the weather-gage, the two fleets came to action late in the day; and separated after a short conflict, on the approach of night, when the French steered to windward, and the English to Trincomalee.

The French Admiral proceeded to Porto Novo, and landed 2000 men.¹ They were soon joined by a large detachment of Hyder's army, under the command of Tippee his son, who had just been employed in reflecting upon the English one of the deepest wounds which they had sustained during the war. Colonel Brathwaite, with 100 Europeans, 1500 native troops, and 300 cavalry, stationed for the purpose of protecting Tanjore, lay encamped on the banks of the Coleroon, at a distance of forty miles from the capital of that name, exposed indeed on an open plain, but apparently secured by the intervention of

¹ The author of *Mémoires de la Campagne de 1782* (p. 293) says about 2000; but, that was, including a regiment of Caffres.

several large and deep rivers, and the distance of the enemy. His position gave encouragement to Hyder, Tippoo, with 10,000 horse, an equal number of infantry, twenty pieces of cannon, and M. Lally, with his European troops 400 strong, surrounded Colonel Brathwaite before he had received even a suspicion of their march. His first endeavour was to reach Tanjore, or some other place of safety; but the superior force of the enemy rendered this impracticable. The next resolution was to make a heroic defence; and soldiers can the annals of war exhibit a parallel to the firmness and perseverance which he and his little army displayed. From the 16th to the 18th of February, surrounded on all sides by an enemy, who outnumbered them, twenty to one, did they withstand incessant attacks. They formed themselves into a hollow square, with the artillery interspersed in the faces, and the cavalry in the centre. Tippoo laboured, by the fire of his cannon, to produce a breach in some of the lines, and as often as he fancied that he had made an impression, urged on his cavalry, by his presence, by promises, by threats, by stripes, and the slaughter of fugitives with his own hand. Repeatedly they advanced to the charge; as often were they repelled by showers of grape-shot and musketry; when the English cavalry, issuing from the centre, at intervals suddenly made by disciplined troops, pursued their retreat with great execution. After twenty-six hours of incessant conflict, when great numbers of the English army had fallen, and the rest were worn out with wounds and fatigue, Lally, at the head of his 400 Europeans, supported by a large body of infantry, covered on his flanks by cavalry, advanced with fixed bayonets to the attack. At this tremendous appearance, the resolution of the sepoys failed, and they were thrown into confusion. The rage of barbarism was with difficulty restrained by the utmost efforts of a civilized commander. Lally is reported to have dried his sword in the blood of several of the murderers, before he could draw them off from the carnage. It is remarkable, notwithstanding the dreadful circumstances of this engagement, that out of twenty officers, only one was killed, and eleven wounded. And it is but justice to add, that Tippoo treated his prisoners, especially the officers and wounded men, with real attention and humanity.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1762.

The arrival of so important an aid as that of 2000 Frenchmen, augmented to an alarming degree the army of Tippee. Cuddalore yielded to their united force on the 3rd of April, and afforded a convenient station both naval and military for the French. In the meantime Sir Edward Hughes left Trincomalee, having effected the most necessary repairs, and arrived at Madras on the 15th of March. Towards the end of that month, the French Admiral slipped from Porto Novo, hearing that a fleet of English Indiamen had arrived upon the coast. As soon as his departure was known at Madras, Sir Edward Hughes got under weigh; but had neither sight of the flag-staff of the fleet, when he fell in with the fleet, of which the French were in quest, consisting of seven Indiamen and two line-of-battle ships, having a king's regiment on board. He ordered the men of war to join him, and proceeded to lead a reinforcement and stores for the garrison of Trincomalee. His policy was to avoid an engagement till this service was performed. Suffren, on the other hand, whose crews were sickly, and his provisions wearing low, was eager to fight. The two fleets came in sight on the 24th of April; but the English Admiral held on his course, and the French followed, during that and the three succeeding days, when, having made the coast of Ceylon, about fifteen leagues to windward of Trincomalee, the English bore away for it during the night. This appears to have been the opportunity for which Suffren was in wait; for having gained the wind of the English squadron, he was seen on the morning of the 13th crowding all the sail which he could carry in pursuit, while the English were so alarmingly close upon a lee-shore, that one of the ships actually touched the ground. A severe conflict ensued, in which the intrepid resolution of the English again counterbalanced the disadvantages of their situation; and the fleets, after suffering in nearly an equal degree, were parted by the night. So much were both disabled, that they lay for seven days within reach of each other, only to prepare themselves to sail; and retired, the English to Trincomalee, the French to the Dutch harbour of Batticaloa, without on either side attempting to renew the engagement.

The English army, who had now been some months in cantonments, took the field on the 17th of April. The

object first in contemplation was to relieve Ponnacott; but on arriving at Changanady, the General found it already surrendered. On the 25th, the army encamped near Wandamack, on the very spot on which Sir Eyre Coote defeated the French General Lally in 1760. The general orders bestowed on the victory, and a decisive battle was issued to the troops; but on the next day, on account of water, the position was shifted to the other side of the fort. Hyder and his French auxiliaries lay encamped on a strong post on the red hill, near Ponnacott, from which, on the approach of the English, they retired to another in the neighbourhood of Killnoor. As the magazines of Hyder were deposited in the strong fort of Arnee, Sir Eyre concluded that a march upon that place would draw the enemy to its assistance, and afford the opportunity of a battle. He encamped on the first of June within three miles of the place; and Hyder, passing over a space of forty-three miles in two days, took up his headquarters at Chittagut, on the evening of the same day. Before the dawn of the following morning, the English army were in motion toward Arnee; but with the first of the light, a heavy cannonade was opened on their rear. The troops came twice to the right about, and the baggage was brought twice through the files, before it was possible to discover whence the fire proceeded. A Council, which was called, and deliberated in great uncertainty, agreed in opinion, that an attack was expected on the rear, and the army was immediately drawn up to receive it. The enemy's horses, in the meantime, occupied the circumjacent grounds, more elevated than the low spot which was occupied by the English, and considerably killed them; while Hyder, detaching a division of his army under Tippoo, carried off the treasure from Arnee, gave instructions to the commandant, and reinforced the garrison. Having accomplished his object, he retired as the English advanced; and two of his guns, and a tamaril which stuck in the bed of the river, were the only trophies of the day. Deeming it vain to attempt the reduction of Arnee, the English on the 7th were considerably advanced on their march back to Madras, when a regiment of European cavalry, which Sir Eyre Coote called his grand guard, were driven into an ambuscade, and either killed or taken prisoners. After

BOOK V. attempting without success to lead the enemy into a similar
 CHAP. V. snare near Wandewash, on the 9th, the General proceeded
 ——— on his march, and on the 20th arrived at Madras.

1792.

On the 20th of that month, by a letter from the Governor-General to Lord Macartney, the conclusion of peace with the Mahometans was announced at Madras. Sir Eyre Coote, as solely invested with the power of war and peace, of his own authority, and without consulting the Governor and Council of Madras, proposed to Hyder, or rather summoned him, to accede to the treaty concluded between the English and the Mahometans, to restore all the forts which he had taken, and within six months to evacuate the Carnatic; otherwise, the arms of the Mahometans would be joined to those of the English, in order to chastise him. Lord Macartney, alarmed at so daring an assumption of the whole power of the Presidency, is accused of having diverted the mind of Hyder from peace, by teaching him to doubt the validity of any agreement with the General in which the Governor and Council had not a part.¹ But Hyder too well knew the politics of India to receive great addition to his apprehensions from the threats of the General; and was too well acquainted with the intrigues of Madras to receive new lights from the communication, even if it had been made, which was then imputed to Lord Macartney. To retain the negotiation more completely independent of the civil authority, the General moved from Madras, on the 1st of July, and lessened his distance from Hyder. Sir Eyre was a most unequal match for the Mysorean in the arts of diplomacy, and allowed himself to be duped. Hyder amused him in the neighbourhood of Wandewash, till the army had wholly consumed not only their own rice, but also that of the government; and till he had completely arranged with the French Admiral a plan of combined operations for the reduction of Negapatam. He then demanded a little time for deliberation, and, suddenly withdrawing his vanguard, left the General in total darkness with regard to his designs.²

¹ Memoirs of the late War in Asia, i. 423, which, being an undistinguishing panegyric upon Hyder, takes part against Macartney.

² Coote's Hyder's account of this negotiation is somewhat different, according to him, it originated with Hyder. Some advances in negotiation being made by him through General Brinkworth, a prisoner in Hyder's camp, those

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1798.

Sir Eyre Coote was obliged to return to Madras; and good fortune alone defeated the train which was laid for the reduction of Negapatam. Suffrein, in sailing to Negapatam, was opposed by the English fleet, and in spite of every attempt to pass the road without fighting, was by the skilful manoeuvres of the Admiral constrained to venture a battle. After refitting at Ceylon, both fleets had returned to the coast about the end of June; the French to the port of Cuddalore, the English to that of Negapatam. Wauglar anchor about three in the afternoon on the 2d of July, the English Admiral steered in a southward direction, in order to gain the wind of the enemy, and about 11 o'clock on the following day the action commenced. It was close, warm, and general. After an hour and a half, during which the fire had been equally well maintained on both sides, the French line appeared to be getting into disorder; and the English began to cheer themselves with the hopes of a speedy and glorious victory, when a sudden alteration of the wind disturbed their order of battle, affording an opportunity to Suffrein, of which he dexterously availed himself, to form a line with those ships which had suffered the least, for covering the disabled part of his fleet, and reduced the English Admiral to collect the scattered ships. At the approach of evening he cut anchor between Negapatam and Nagarcot. The French, having passed the night about three leagues to leeward, proceeded the next morning to Cuddalore; and the English fleet, though it saw them, was too much disabled to pursue. The English Admiral, after vanishing a fortnight at Negapatam, arrived at Madras on the 30th, in order to refit. In the mean time Suffrein had proceeded with characteristic activity, a quality in which he was never surpassed, in preparing his fleet for sea at Cuddalore. He was a man, then, when the emergency required,

admirals were allowed by the presence of an enemy to the English camp, charges, with no doubt, particularly, a disconcerted mind. In short the depicted scene and probable were a lot of the English in the midst of a great stormy night, the British fleet declined to accept the offered surrender of Lord Mordaunt, I will repeat to the nature of their communications — indeed certainly have confined an objection, but how else could we, that if the command had taken light limited in purpose seems of power without the knowledge of the government.—W.

1 It is said that two of the French three-decked ships struck during the action, but that Suffrein took care that they should not sink again, and in consequence were saved.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1782.

would work for days, like a ship's carpenter, in his shirt. He visited the houses and buildings at Cuddalore, and for want of other timber, had the beams which suited his purpose taken out. To some of his officers, who represented to him the shattered condition of his ships, the alarming deficiency of his stores, the impossibility of supplying his wants in a desolated part of India, and the necessity of repairing to the islands to refit; the whole value, he replied, of the ships was trivial, in comparison with the object which he was commissioned to attain; and the ocean should be his harbour, till he found a place in India to repair there. On the 3d of August, the Governor of Fort St. George was informed, that the French fleet was already not only prepared for sea, but had actually sailed to the southward on the 1st of the month; that the first division of the French reinforcements expected from Europe was actually arrived at Point de Galle; and that the second, with Bussy d'Amboise, was daily expected. Greatly alarmed for the fate of Trincomalee, and even of Negapatam, the President and Committee deemed it requisite to quicken the preparations of the Admiral, whose activity equalled not his courage and seamanship, by a letter in which they drew his attention to this intelligence, and to the danger which every day was incurred, while an enemy's fleet kept the sea, without a British to oppose it. The jealousy of the Admiral was acute; of the time for sailing, he replied, that he was the judge; that he was not responsible for his conduct to the government of Madras; and that he should proceed to sea with his Majesty's squadron under his command, as soon as it was fit for service.¹ He did not proceed to sea before the 20th of August, when he sailed to Trincomalee, and found it already in the hands of the enemy. Suffrein, after proceeding to Point de Galle, where he was joined by the reinforcements from Europe and two ships of the line, anchored in Trincomalee Bay on the 25th; landed the troops before day the next morning; opened the batteries on the 30th; silenced those of the garrison before night; and summoned the place before morning. Eager to anticipate the arrival of the English fleet, Suffrein offered the most honourable terms. The

¹ Dumas's Life of Lord Mordaunt, l. 328.

BOOK V.

CHAP. II.

1762.

facts were surrendered on the last of the month, and Hughes arrived on the first of September.

Early on the following morning the French fleet proceeded to sea: when the English were eager to reform by a victory; the loss of Trincomalee. The French had twelve, the English eleven out of the line; the French had four ships of fifty guns, the English only one. The battle began between two and three in the afternoon, and soon became general. After raging for three hours with great fury, in every part of the line, the darkness of the night at last terminated one of the best-fought actions then recorded in the annals of naval warfare. The exertions of Suffren himself were remarkable, for he was ill: seconded by his captains, of whom he broke no fewer than six, immediately after the engagement. Fortunately for the French fleet, they had the island of Trincomalee at hand, to receive them: but in crowding into it in the dark, one ship struck upon the rock, and was lost, and two others were so much disabled, that ten days elapsed before they were able to enter the harbour. Suffren then described them as presents which he had received from the British Admiral, who, regarding the proximity of Trincomalee as a bar to all attempts, and finding his ammunition short, immediately after the battle proceeded to Madras.

Hyder, upon the disappointment of his plan against Negapatam, by the rencounter between the French and English fleets, returned upon his steps; and proceeded toward his magazine at Arcot. Upon the return of the English army to Madras, a plan had been concerted for the recovery of Cuddalore. The return, indeed, of Hyder, by alarming the General for the safety of Wandewash, made him wish to know rather than increase his distance from that fort. Not after a day's march, having learned that Hyder had passed the river Arce, he proceeded in the direction of Cuddalore, and on the 6th of September encamped on the Red Hills of Pondicherry. Intelligence, here received, of the fall of Trincomalee, of another action between the fleets, and of the intention of the British Admiral to return to Madras, induced the General, who had sustained a second paralytic attack, to return to the same place with the army.

The Presidency were thrown into the utmost agitation

BOOK V. and alarm by an unexpected event; the refusal of the
 CHAP. V. Admiral to co-operate in the enterprise : *gens-Combatores*;
 ——— and the declaration of his intention to proceed to Bombay,
 1782. and leave the coast during the ensuing monsoon. If the
 coast were left unprotected by a British fleet, while the
 harbour of Tricomalee enabled the enemy to remain, and
 while Hyder was nearly undisputed master of the Carnatic,
 nothing less was threatened than the extirpation of the
 English from that quarter of India. Beside these impor-
 tant considerations, the Council pressed upon the mind of
 the Admiral the situation of the Presidency in regard to
 food; that their entire dependence rested upon the sup-
 plies which might arrive by sea; that the stock in the
 warehouses did not exceed 30,000 bags; that the quantity
 about in the roads amounted but to as much more, which
 the number of boats demanded for the daily service of his
 squadron had deprived them of the means of landing:
 that the monthly consumption was 30,000 bags at the
 least; and that, if the vessels on which they depended for
 their supply were intercepted, such would be the certain
 consequence of a French fleet without an English upon the
 coast, nothing less than famine was placed before their
 eyes. The Admiral was reminded that he had remained
 in safety upon the coast during the eastern monsoon of
 the former year, and might still undoubtedly find some
 harbour to afford him shelter. A letter too was received
 express from Bengal, stating that Mr. Puckler, the marine
 surveyor, would undertake to conduct His Majesty's ships
 to a safe anchorage in the mouth of the Bengal river. And
 it was known that Sir Richard Dickson, with a reinforce-
 ment of five sail of the line from England, had already
 touched at Bombay, and was on his way round for
 Madras.

The Admiral remained deaf to all expostulations. In
 the mean time intelligence was received that the enemy
 was preparing to attack Negapatam. The President had
 already prevailed upon Sir Eyre Coote, to send a detach-
 ment of 300 men under Colonel Pallardon, into the
 southern provinces, which, since the defeat of Colonel
 Baillie, had lain exposed to the ravages of Hyder, and
 were now visited with scarcity, and the prospect of famine.
 Within two days of the former intelligence, accounts were

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1783.

received that information said of the enemy's fleet had arrived at Negapatam, and that the place was already attacked. The most-cursed speculations were still addressed to the Admiral in vain; and the morning of the 18th of October exhibiting the appearance of a storm, the fleet set sail and disappeared. The following morning presented a tremendous spectacle to the wretched inhabitants of Madras; several large vessels driven ashore, others foundered at their anchors, all the small craft, amounting to nearly 100 in number, either sunk or stranded, and the wharves of the 50,000 bags of rice irretrievably gone. The ravages of Hydor had driven crowds of the inhabitants from all parts of the country to seek refuge at Madras, where multitudes were daily perishing of want. Famine now raged in all her horrors; and the multitude of the dead and the dying threatened to superadd the evils of pestilence. The bodies of those who expired in the streets or the houses without any one to inter them, were daily collected, and piled in mounds, to be buried in large trenches made for the purpose out of the town, to the number, for several weeks, of not less, it is said, than twelve or fifteen hundred a-week. What was done to relieve the suffering inhabitants to the less exhausted parts of the country, and to prevent unnecessary consumption, the Governor sending away his horses, and even his servants, could only mitigate, and that to a small degree, the evils which were endured.* On the fourth day after the departure of Sir Edward Hughes and his fleet, Sir Richard Eckerton arrived, with three regiments of 1000 each, Sir John Burgoyne's regiment of light horse, amounting to 340, and about 1000 recruits raised by the Company, chiefly in Ireland; but as soon as Sir Richard was apprized of the motions of Sir E. Hughes, he immediately put to sea, and proceeded after him to Bombay. Sir Byron Coote also, no longer equal to the task of com-

* The delivery of the treasury chest was to colonel-general Lord Mordaunt, in witness of the threat above it, so which even he and those who were present, then as it is said, that he kept the grain on board the ships to make his profit out of the emergency. Two Generals of the East India Army, a Colonel &c. This was not worth it, but increased by the number of the work men, by money which that work men, and were considered, according to the measure of the people, and some regulations had upon the disposal of the cargoes, thought advised by the government of Madras, on public principles, such as were common in other days, before public economy was introduced.—W.

BOOK V. round, set sail for Bengal; and General Stuart remained
 CHAP. V. at the head of the army, now encamped at Madras, with
 1782. provisions for not many days, and its pay six months in
 arrears.

The exclusive power over the military operations, which had been intrusted to Clive, and which, though it greatly impeded the exertions of the President, motives of delicacy and prudence forbade him to withdraw, belonged, under no pretext, to General Stuart; and the Governor and Council proceeded to carry their own plans into execution, for checking the profuse expenditure of the army, and making the most advantageous disposition of the troops. A reinforcement of 400 Europeans was despatched to co-operate with the Bombay army in effecting a diversion on the western side of Hyder's dominions; 300 of the same troops were sent to the Northern Circars against an apprehended invasion of the French; and 500 to strengthen the garrison at Negapatam. Fortunately for the English, the French had no information or conception of the unprotected and starving condition in which Madras had been left. It remained unvisited, even by a few frigates to intercept the corn-ships: and from Bengal and the Circars considerable supplies were received. An event also arrived, of such magnitude, as to affect the views of almost every state in India, and sufficiently to cheer the gloom which darkened the prospects of the English. Their great enemy, Hyder Ali, who began his career in one of the lowest situations of life; who, totally destitute of the benefits of education, raised himself to be the sovereign of a great empire, and displayed a talent for government and for war, of which they had met with no example in India, died at Chittore in the beginning of December, at an age not exactly ascertained, but certainly exceeding eighty; when his destined successor Tippon was at a great distance: having been detached to the western coast, to oppose Colonel Humberstone's invasion.

That officer, after remaining at Calicut from the end of May till the beginning of September, proceeded to Palacottah, a strong fort, situated about a mile from Palacottaherry, and commanding the great southern pass between the coasts, with an army consisting of more than 900 British troops, and 3000 Bombay sepoys; beside 1200 sepoys

with European officers and sergeants, furnished by the King of Tanjore; and a proportional train of artillery, of which, however, they were obliged, for want of draught bullocks, to leave the whole of the heavy part, and one half of the remainder by the way. They remained before Ranganerco from the 20th of September to the 6th of October. Being deserted in the night, it was garrisoned with convalescents, and made the centre of a chain of communications. After taking another fort on the 14th they approached Palacatcherry; and on the 18th, without much difficulty, dispersed the enemy, who met them at about three miles' distance from the fort. To take Palacatcherry, without heavy artillery, was after three days' inspection, considered impossible; and the army were ordered to march at four o'clock on the morning of the 22nd, in order to occupy a camp at several miles' distance, till the battering cannon should arrive. Unfortunately, the officer who conducted the retreat, instead of putting the line to the right about, ordered them to countermarch, which threw the baggage and stores to the rear. Apprehend of all these motions, the enemy continuously watched them in a narrow defile, till all except the rear guard and the baggage had passed, when the enemy suddenly made an attack, and the whole of the provisions, and almost all the the ammunition, fell into their hands. It now only remained for the English, to make their retreat to the coast with the greatest expedition. They were attacked from every quarter; exceedingly harassed both on flanks and rear; during the two first days they hardly tasted food; and on the 18th of November, when they reached Ranganerco, the fortifications of which, as well as those of Mangamooch, they blew up, they received intelligence that Tippee Sahib, with 20,000 men, whom the weakness of the English in the Carnatic had enabled Hyder to detach for the protection of his western provinces, was advancing upon them with rapid marches, and closely at hand. They had marched but a few miles on the following morning, when Tippee's advanced parties opened a cannonade on their rear. Fighting every step of the march, they arrived towards dark at the river Pannai, which appeared impassable. After a painful search of two hours a ford was found, which though it reached up to the chin of

BOOK V
CHAP. V.
—————
1781.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1782.

an ordinary man, they resolved to attempt, and happily passed with the loss of but two black women, among the followers of the camp. The enemy, expecting to find them an easy prey in the morning, had totally neglected to watch them during the night. Next day they reached the town of Pandur, against which the operations of Tippeo were immediately commenced.¹ Began down on the 25th of November, the enemy, divided into four columns, including a portion of Lally's corps, with that officer himself at their head, made a strong assault upon the English lines, as yet incomplete. They had dislodged a body of sepoy, and were in possession of the guns, before the English troops got under arms; when the forty-second regiment, advancing with fixed bayonets, threw them into confusion. They made various attempts to rally, but with considerable slaughter were compelled to retreat.² Tippeo continued the blockade, and was understood to be meditating another attack, when he received the news of his father's decease. He departed immediately with a few horse, leaving orders for the army to follow.

No sooner was intelligence received of the death of Hyder, than Lord Macartney aware of the feeble consist of an Indian army, and justly estimating the chances of its dispersion, if, at the moment of consternation, it were vigorously attacked, expressed his eagerness for action. General Stuart, instead of seconding this desire, either by having the troops in readiness, or putting them in motion, was employing his time and his talents in squabbles with the civil authority. Slight symptoms of military impatience, under the command of the Company's servants, had, at different times, already appeared. But it was under Coote, that it first assumed a formidable aspect. The independent authority which was yielded to that commander corrupted the views of the military officers; and General Stuart was well calculated to uphold a controversy on the subject of his own pretensions. From the moment of his elevation to the command of the troops, and to a voice in the deliberations which regulated their actions,

¹ The account had been assumed by Colonel Martin, sent by Sir Eyre Coote for the purpose, and who arrived at Pandur on the 18th ult.

² According to Pooley, the assault took place on the 25th; on the 26th, Sir E. Hughes & A. Lyngston landed at Pandur, and reinforced the detachment with 400 Europeans.—H.

he is accused of having diligently objected to almost every proposal; and of having filed the records of the Company with tedious discussions on his own dignity, privileges, and emoluments. The King's officers, indeed, from an early period of their services in India, assumed an air, proportioned, as they imagined to the dignity of the master whom they served; and they now, under General Stuart, distinctly asserted the doctrine of being at liberty to obey, or not to obey the Company, as they themselves held fit. A doctrine which implied the extinction of the civil authority, and went so against the government of the Company, appeared to Lord Macartney to demand an explicit and decisive resistance. The Committee agreed with him in recording a declaration: that when the King lent his troops for the service of the Company, and when they passed from the pay of the King into the pay of the Company, their obedience to the Company, till the period of their recall, was a condition necessary and understood: that the king reserved to himself the regulation of their interior economy; but with regard to their operations, gave them not so much as instructions; which were left exclusively to the Authority, for the service of which they were employed. The General, having thought fit to deliver to the Committee what he called an answer to this declaration, and therein to assert a right of judging when he should obey, and when not, received by the unanimous resolution of the Committee, a positive order to send no commands or instructions, except on business of discipline or detail, to any of the King's or Company's officers without the approbation of the Committee. To these decisive measures, General Stuart abstained from any direct or declared resistance; and rather chose to thwart the views of the President and Council by placing obstacles in their way. Upon their earnest application, when the news arrived of the death of Hyder, that the army should march, the General affected to disbelieve the intelligence; and, if it was true, replied, that the army would be ready for action at the proper time. When the fact was ascertained, and the reinforcements were redoubled; when letters were duly received, describing the importance of the moment for striking a decisive blow; when the commanding officer at Tripunnoor sent express intelligence,

BOOK V.
CHAP. X.
—
1785.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1782.

that the whole of the enemy's camp was in consternation, that numbers had deserted, and that, in the opinion of the deserters, the whole army, if attacked before the arrival of Tippee, would immediately disband and fly into their own country, the General declared the army deficient in equipments for marching at that season of the year; though for upwards of a month he had been receiving the strongest representations on the necessity of keeping it in readiness for action, with offers of the utmost exertions of the government to provide for that purpose whatever was required.

Tippee, in the mean time, had admitted no delay. Having reached Oolar, where he performed the accustomed ceremonies at the tomb of his father, he pursued his course to the main army, which he joined between Arnee and Yellora, about the end of December. The address and fidelity of the leading officers,¹ who controlled the fatal event, had been able to preserve some order and obedience among the troops till he arrived; when the immediate payment of their arrears, and a few popular regulations, firmly established Tippee on his father's throne. Shortly after his arrival, he was joined by a French force from Cuddalore, consisting of 800 Europeans, 100 Caffres and Teynars, 2000 Sapeys, and twenty-two pieces of artillery; while at this time, the whole of the British force in the Carnatic, capable of taking the field, amounted to no more than 2845 Europeans, and 11,545 natives.

On the 4th of January, the army at last took the field. On the 5th of February they marched. On the 8th, they arrived at Wandersash, where the enemy appeared. On the 13th, the General advanced and offered battle; when the enemy retired in haste and disorder towards the river. He withdrew the garrisons from Wandersash and Cannagaly, which it was held impoſſible to maintain, and blew up the fortifications of both.² He then marched towards Yellora, and at that place received intelligence

¹ The two principal members of Hyder's army were Blacoe, both Dransam Pannam and Kathan Sah. *Wills*, l. 418.—*N*.

² This was done in consequence, and in accordance with, the views of the Madras government; but General Bussy afterwards expressed his regret at having precipitately adopted a measure of which the army soon felt the inconvenience. It also received the condemnation of the European Government. *Wills*, l. 419, 420.—*N*.

that Tippon Saib was retreating from the Canaratic, that he had ordered Arcot to be evacuated, and two sides of the fort to be destroyed.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1782.

Tippon was recalled, not only by the care of establishing his government, but of meeting a formidable invasion on the western coast, which had already approached the vitals of his kingdom. The English army, which had been left undisturbed on his departure from Pondicherry, about the beginning of December, proceeded, about the end of that month—the sepoys, by land, to Tellicherry, the European part, by sea, to Mysoor, about three hundred miles north of Pondicherry. In January, General Matthews, with an army under his command, from Bombay, arrived at Mysoor, and surmounted to his standard the rest of the troops on that part of the coast. He took by storm the fort of Onore, and reduced some other places of smaller consequence; and about the middle of the month, with a force consisting of about 1200 Europeans, eight battalions of Sepoys, and a proportionate quantity of artillery and Lascars, moved toward the great pass which is known by the appellation of the *Horseman Carry Ghaut*.* The ascent consisted of a winding road of about five miles in length, defended by batteries or redoubts at every turning. The army entered the pass on the morning of the 25th, and, chiefly with the baggages, carried every thing before them, till they reached a strong redoubt at the top of the Ghaut; this appeared impregnable; but a party, clambering up the rocks, came round upon it behind, and the whole of the pass was placed in their power. The next day they advanced to Mysoor-nagar, or Bednore, the rich capital of one of the most important of all the dependencies of Mysore. They were on their march with no more than six rounds of ammunition for each man, when an English prisoner arrived, with terms from the Governor, and a proposal to surrender, not only the city of Bednore, but the country and all its dependencies. With the capital, most of the minor forts made a ready submission; but Anaspore, Mangalore, and some others, held out. Anaspore, after violating two flags of truce, stood the storm,

* This mountain, intended to deliver upon Bednore, was in consequence of positive orders from the Bombay Government, and in opposition to the opinion of General Matthews. *WARR., II. 448.*

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1783.

and was carried on the 14th of February. In Mangalore, a breach being effected, the commander, unable to prevail upon his people to maintain the defence, was obliged to surrender. In these transactions, particularly in the reduction of Onore and Ananpore, the English army have been accused of a barbarity unusual at the hands of a civilized foe. It appears not, however, that quarter, when asked, was refused; but orders were given to shed the blood of every man who was taken under arms; and some of the officers were reprehended for not seeing these orders rigidly executed.* After the acquisition of Mangalore, the General, with a portion of the army, returned to Bednore, where the flames of discord were kindled by pretensions to the spoil. A vast treasure, amounting to eighty one lacs of pagodas, £804,000, besides a quantity of jewels, was understood to have been found in Bednore. Of this, though the army was in the greatest distress for want of money, having received no pay for twelve months, some of the troops for a longer time, the General positively refused to divide any part. The most vehement complaints and remonstrances ensued. Refractory proceedings were severely, if not arbitrarily, punished; and three of the leading officers, Colonel Mackdonald, Colonel Humberstone, and Major Shaw, left the army, and, proceeding to Bombay, laid their representations before the Governor and Council. So flagrant to the Governor and Council did the conduct of the General appear, that they superseded him; and appointed Colonel Mackdonald, the next in rank, to take the command in his stead. Suspicious of his rapacity blamed with violence; but it ought to be remembered, that he lived not to vindicate his own reputation; and that in circumstances such as those in which he was placed, suspicions of rapacity are easily raised.[†]

* See Annual Register for 1783, and "A Vindication of the English Forces employed at the late War, under the command of Intrepid General Medows, against the Nizam's Forces in India," by Francis Colburn of the Academy Edinborough. Parliamentary Papers, ordered to be printed, 18th March, 1784.
—† It is stated that the Governor of Annapore was put to the sword in retaliation for what the English considered an act of treachery—(Field being upon a party advancing under a promise of the pacific surrender of the fort, which promise had, without any communication with the available troops revealed by a different authority. p. 452.—G.)

† As far as they opposed with the disappointment of the army, they were justified. No such instance of pressure could have been collected in England. The circumstances of the surrender of that place to the English, which General

Colonel Macleod, now Brigadier-General and Commander-in-chief, returning to the army with the two other officers, in the *Hanger* snow, fell in with a Mahometan fleet of two vessels off Geraik, on the 7th of April. This fleet was not, it appears, apprised of the peace ; and Macleod, full of impetuosity, temerity, and presumption, instead of attempting an explanation, or submitting to be detained at Geraik for a few days, gave orders to attack. The *Hanger* was taken, after almost every man in the ship was either killed or wounded. Major Shaw was killed, and Macleod and Humberstone wounded, the latter mortally. He died in a few days at Geraik, in the twenty-eighth year of his age, and was lamented as an officer of the most unalloyed promise ; a man, who nourished his spirit with the contemplation of ancient heroes, and devoted his hours to the study of the most abstruse sciences connected with his profession.

During this interval, the forty-second regiment was sent from Badkobe to seize some forts below the Ghazis; the army was dispersed in detachments, to occupy almost every town and stronghold in the country; nothing, it was said, was deemed of last riches. Intelligence, fortifications, and subversion, were all equally neglected. In this state of extreme irresolution, Tipu suddenly appeared on the 21st of April, drove in a detachment of some four miles

[illegible]

BOOK V. distant, at Fatiguep, seized the town of Bednore, with a considerable quantity of ammunition, negligently remaining without the magazine; laid siege to the fort; and sent detachments to occupy the Ghats and surrounding country. The English in Bednore were then cut off from retreat; the fortifications ruinous, their ammunition expended, their provisions low, and their numbers diminishing by disease and fatigue, as well as the sword. Reasonable terms being promised, they surrendered by capitulation, on the 10th of April; but, instead of being sent, according to agreement, to the coast, they were put in irons, and marched like felons to a dreadful imprisonment in the strong fortresses of Mysore. To apologise for this outrage upon the law of even barbarous nations, Tippee charged the English with a violation of the articles of capitulation in robbing the public treasure; and the suspicions which were attached to the character of the General, have given currency to a story that he ordered the barrels of his pelicans to be pierced and filled with pagodas.¹

After this important success, Tippee proceeded to Mangalore, in which the remains of the English army collected themselves, with such provisions as the suddenness of the emergency allowed them to procure. On the possession of Mangalore, the chief fortress and the best harbour of Canara, Tippee, as well as his father, set an extraordinary value. On the 10th of May, a reconnoitring party of his horse appeared on a height near the town. On the 20th, the péquots; on the 31st, the outposts of the garrison were driven in, and the investment of the place was rendered complete.

During the march of Tippee from the Canonic to the

¹ That the public treasure was divided amongst the English, is uniformly asserted. Annual Register, 1782, vol. 1. and Colonel Erskine, who was then serving with a detachment of General Middleton's army near the coast, observes, "The amount of the captured treasure was at the time erroneously exaggerated, but the expenditure and one immediate measure in which it did not extremely it was distributed, and that, after it had been delivered in duplicate, furnished no pleasure or security for that branch of the expenditure at which the British had the immediate gain." The same author gives an account of an expedition, the success of which it is at least all too evident was a mere fictitious result. A notice from the inland took the British detachment so completely by surprise, that it might truly have been described. One of the British officers, however, directly charged forward, and requested a parley, with a view to a surrender. The commandant of the detachment directly banded to reverse his orders, and during the pause the enemy armed and rep. had their advantage. Memoirs of a Field Officer, 120.

western side of his kingdom, and the operations which preceded his arrival at Mangalore, the following occurrences took place at Madras. As soon as the General ascertained the departure of the enemy, he returned with the army, and on the 30th of February encamped near the Mount. The policy of supporting the English army in Bahare against the army of Tippoo, by strong positions on the southern and eastern parts of his dominions, presented itself, in the strongest point of view, to the Governor and Council. The army stationed at Tanjore and the southern provinces received orders to march towards the west; and to General Stuart it was recommended, to march upon Tippoo's frontier in the direction of Vellore. Any such movement he declared to be impossible; and while the army remained inactive, Suffrin, whom the British fleet had not yet returned to oppose, found no difficulty in landing Bussy, with a reinforcement of French troops, at Cuddalore. It was an object of great importance to recover possession of that place, before the works should be strengthened, and the army of Tippoo, with the French troops which were with him, should be able to return. To all the expostulations of the Governor and Council, the General is accused of having replied, only by the statement of wants and difficulties, operating as grounds of delay. About fourteen days after the time fixed upon by himself, that is, on the 31st of April, in consequence of presumptory commands, he marched with the army towards Cuddalore. Contrary to his pledge, that he would not recall to his assistance the southern army, without the strongest necessity, of which he engaged to apprise the Committee, he secretly wrote to the Commanding Officer three days before his departure, to join him with the greatest part of the force under his command. By this abuse of their confidence, the Committee were induced to withdraw the discretionary power over the southern army, which they had granted at his request. The march from Madras to Cuddalore, about 100 miles, is usually performed in twelve days. General Stuart had no obstructions either to meet or to fear; he was, to a degree unusually perfect, supplied with all the requisites for his march; yet he spent forty days upon the road, that is, marched at the rate of less than three

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
—
1782.

2004. Y.
C148. V.

1782.

miles a-day, though the chance of success mainly depended upon despatch, and the Admiral, who was to co-operate with the expedition, declared that he could not, for want of water and provisions, remain before Cuddalore till the end of June. The fleet had returned to Madras on the 12th of April, augmented to seventeen sail of the line, four frigates, and some smaller vessels; and soon after, a fleet of ten Indiamen, and three store-ships, with 1000 recruits to the army, arrived under convoy of the Bristol man-of-war, after a narrow escape from the squadron of Suffrein.

The army arrived at Cuddalore on the 3th of June, where the enemy had already thrown up, and almost completed, considerable works. An attack was to be made on these works on the 13th, in three several places at once; and it was planned to give the signal by firing three guns from a hill. Avoid the noise of firing, a signal of this description could not be heard; and the attacks were made at three several times. The English were repulsed; but the enemy quitting, in the pursuit, a part of their works, which were dexterously occupied by a division of the English army, were thrown into confusion, and withdrawn. The attack had nearly incurred the ruin of the English army, and left sixty-two officers, and 880 men, almost all Europeans, either dead or mortally wounded, on the field. The English lay upon their arms during the night in expectation of an attack, which the troops, fatigued and unprotected, would have found it difficult to sustain. But the spirit of Bury was chilled with age and infirmities; and he restrained the impetuosity of his officers, who confidently predicted the destruction of the British army.¹

On the following day, Sir Edward Hughes, and Suffrein, who had followed him from Trincomalee, arrived with their

¹ No such cause of confusion as that intended by the first, is noticed by Wilks, nor does it appear that three simultaneous movements were intended; the object was to gain possession of what was considered the key of the enemy's position. The first operation, which was merely perfunctory, succeeded. The second failed, and rendered a third necessary, which succeeded but partially. There is gain, and the key of the contested point is obtained in possession of the English army. The achievement of the British on this same night, within the walls of Cuddalore, reversed their arms at the operations of the day, but their being prevented during the night to draw off without participation all their heavy guns, furnished equal evidence of the acquiescence made upon the English by a victory so dearly purchased.—W.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1795.

respective fleets. The English remained at anchor till the 16th; on the 17th, and two succeeding days, the fleets performed a variety of movements for the purpose of gaining or keeping the wind; and about four o'clock on the 20th they engaged. The English consisted of eighteen sail, the French only of sixteen, and so leaky, that none of them it was necessary to pump during the battle: yet Suffren, by dexterous management, contrived in several instances to place two of his vessels upon one of the English, of which five were but little engaged. The combats were parted by night, and the next day the French were out of sight, but appeared at anchor in the road of Porto Novo on the morning of the 31st. The British Admiral, deeming it inexpedient to attack them, only offered battle, and then made sail for Madras. It has been both asserted and denied that Suffren weighed, and stood after him; but it is certain that he arrived at Cuddalore on the following day. He immediately proceeded to land as many men as he could spare from the fleet; and measures were concerted between him and Bussy for the most vigorous operations. They made a sally on the 23th, which was repulsed;¹ but a grand effort was preparing for the 4th of July; and so much were the English reduced by the sword, by sickness, and fatigue, that the most fatal consequences were probable and feared. Sir Edward Hughes at Madras, and the British army exposed to Suffren and Bussy at Cuddalore, presented a dismal prospect to the imaginations of the Governor and Council; when intelligence was received of the signature in Europe of a treaty of peace between the English and French. It was immediately resolved, though official intelligence had

¹ The English fleet was much crippled by the daily state of the river. Eleven hundred sail of the enemy had been landed at Madras, and in the short space of a fortnight, seventeen hundred more had been the same year landed on the day. On the other hand Suffren had been reinforced by Bussy on the night of the 15th, with 1200 men, giving him the advantage of the French estimate of 2000 boats more than the strength of the Edward Hughes. But the British had only 1000 men disembarked, but 2000 men were forwarded from the fleet. *Asiat. Res.* 1794. Vol. 1. p. 442—4.

² In this affair, Marshal Bernadotte afterwards Crown Prince of Sweden, served as a lieutenant in the French army, and was wounded and taken prisoner, as he had volunteered as a volunteer joined to General Langensleben, who at Cuddalore was Commandant of the Russian troops in the British service, and who had treated him with particular kindness. See the Appendix to Vol. II. vol. 1—4.

BOOK V. not yet arrived, to send a flag of truce to Bussy, recom-
 mendng an immediate cessation of arms. To this pro-
 posed the French commander acceded, with less difficulty
 than might have been expected. Bussy even consented
 to invite Tippee to a participation in the peace, and to
 send positive orders to the French troops to retire imme-
 diately from his service.

CHAP. V.

1783.

Upon the evacuation of the Carnate by Tippee, the
 occasion was not omitted of making to him an overture
 of peace by means of a Brahmin, in the confidence of the
 King of Tanjore. A favourable answer was omitted; but
 a point of etiquette, for which the Governor was a great
 stickler, leading to another on the part of Tippee, broke
 off the negotiation. To the application from Bussy, how-
 ever, an answer was returned as little more than a month
 offering peace upon certain conditions, and expressing a
 desire to send two ambassadors to Madras. Upon the
 arrival of the vessels it appeared that a peace, upon the
 basis of a mutual restitution of conquests, might easily
 be made; and for the acceleration of so desirable an
 event, especially on account of the prisoners, to whose
 feelings, and even lives, a few weeks were of importance,
 it was deemed expedient to send three commissioners
 along with Tippee's vessels, to expedite on the spot the
 business of negotiation.

Measures, in the meantime, were pursued for creating a
 diversion in favour of the detachment besieged in Mangalore.
 The two divisions of the army which were stationed
 for the protection, the one of the northern, the other of
 the southern provinces, were reinforced; and instructed
 to threaten or attack the enemy in that part of his do-
 minions to which they approached. The division in the
 south was, in the opinion of Colonel Fullerton, by whom
 it was commanded, augmented sufficiently to penetrate
 into the very heart of Mysore, and possibly to attack the
 capital itself.

Amid these proceedings, the contentions which prevailed
 between the heads of the civil and military departments
 were hastening to a decision. Along with the flag of truce
 which was forwarded to the French, it was resolved in the
 Committee to send orders for the recall of General Stuart
 to the Presidency, as well because they could not depend

upon his obedience, as because they deemed it necessary to hear the account which he might render of his conduct. After a temporary neglect of the commands of the Committee, the General thought proper to leave the army and proceed to Madras; where, superseding mutual explanations, the customary disputes were renewed and increased. The Governor at last submitted to the Committee a motion, that General Stuart should be dismissed from the Company's service. In the month by which this motion was introduced, the misconduct of the General in the expedition to Cuddalore, and the acts of disobedience, which were sufficient in number and magnitude to imply the transfer of all power into his hands, were stated as the principal grounds of the proposed proceeding, to which the votes of the Committee immediately reported their unanimous assent. Stuart, however, counteracted his determination to retain the command of the King's troops; and Sir John Burgoyne, on whom, as agreed in war, the command would devolve, intimated his intention to obey the orders of General Stuart. Decisive acts were now inevitable. The Town Adjutant, accompanied by the Governor's Private Secretary, and a party of sepoys, proceeded to the villa of the General, and brought him quietly a prisoner to the fort; where he remained a few days, and was then embarked for England.

The original plan, to the execution of which the army in the south was destined, was, that it should penetrate on the one side, and the army under Colonel Monro on the other, into the country of Calicutore, forming a line of communications from the one coast to the other, through the middle of Tippeo's dominions. In this scheme, which was formed and suggested by Mr. Sullivan, the gentleman at the head of the civil department in the Trichinopoly district, was included a negotiation for raising disturbances against Tippeo in his own dominions, by setting up the pretensions of the deposed Raja of Mysore. In the months of April and May, 1783, the forts of Canour, Arcotcondy, and Dindupil, were reduced; but the exhausted state of the country, not more from the ravages of the enemy, than the disorganization of the government, crippled the operations of the army by scarcity of supplies. The first object of

BOOK V,
CHAP. V.
1783.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1783.

Colonel Fullarton, who took the command of the southern army, was to augment the field force by battalions from Tanjore, Trichinopoly, and Tinivelly; and, vigorously aided as he was by the chief civil servants of the Company, not only to procure supplies, but soothe the minds, and conciliate the favour, of the different classes of the people. It was not before the 20th of May, 1783, that he began to march from Dindigul towards Daraperam. The reduction of this place, which fell on the 2nd of June, afforded one incident, which, being a characteristic circumstance, deserves to be stated. It was impossible to approach so near the fort as to determine with precision the most advantageous point of attack. One spy explained the circumstances of the place to the commanding officer, and another to the Adjutant General. Each of these officers drew a plan from the description which he himself had received; and they coincided so exactly both with one another, and with the facts, that a body of troops marched in a dark night, crossed a river, and occupied a strong position within 400 yards of the fort, where the batteries were constructed which effected the breach. The accuracy with which the Indians convey the idea of a fort even by verbal communication, and still more by models made of clay, is represented as not surprising only, but almost incredible. The orders which General Stuart, unknown to the Committee, dispatched to the southern army stopped them at this point in their career of conquest; and they were within three miles of the enemy's camp when they received intelligence that hostilities with the French had ceased, and that an armistice was concluded with Tipper¹. In the interval Colonel Fullarton had proceeded with great activity in restoring obedience and order in Madras and Tinivelly, in which, during the distress of the Madras government, almost all the Polygars had revolted. According to Fullarton, the management of the province by the Company's and the Nabol's servants had been corrupt and oppressive, and hence prog-

¹ Colonel Fullarton received, at the same time, orders from the General to advance; from the government to return to the South; of the relative importance of these orders, he demonstrated his opinion by disobeying the latter. The strengthening of General Stuart's army = an of much more importance than an ineffective attempt at detaching Tipper from the army of England. Fullarton's View, p. 118.—W.

ness with disorder, in the eastern. One single exception he produces, Mohamed Ismael Khan. "While he ruled these provinces, his whole administration devoted vigour and effect: his justice was unquestioned, his word unalterable, his measures were happily combined and firmly executed, the guilty had no refuge from punishment. On comparing," says the English commander, "the state of that country with his conduct and merits, I found that wisdom, vigour, and integrity, were never more conspicuous in any person of whatever climate or complexion."* In the month of August, when the reinforcements had joined him from the army of Cuddalore, and the Polygars were sufficiently reduced and humbled to be disposed to a general submission, this Commander moved towards the frontier of Mysore, under instructions to remain inactive while the result was uncertain of the negotiation with Tippeo. In the interval thus afforded, among other arrangements, Colonel Fullarton established a system of intelligence, under a defect of which the English had laboured during the whole of the war: and established it in such perfection, even into the heart of the enemy's country, that, "during many months," to use his own expression, "of continued watching, through a country almost unexplored, he never once failed in his supplies, nor did any material incident escape his knowledge." On the 18th of October, when the supplies of the army were almost exhausted, intelligence arrived that Tippeo had recommenced hostilities against Mangalore. Colonel Fullarton had long meditated an enterprise against Seringapatam, but none of the forts, directly in the route, were sufficiently strong to be considered as an intermediate magazine, or, in the event of failure, as a place of retreat. It was therefore determined to march upon Paleaccherry, which was one of the strongest places in India, commanded the pass between the coasts, and secured a communication with a great extent of fertile country. After a march of great difficulty, much impeded by woods and mountain run, the army reached Paleaccherry on the 4th of November. They immediately commenced and carried on their operations with great vigour; but the strength of the place, and the active resistance of the garrison,

* Fullarton's View of the English Interests in India, p. 126.

HISTORY OF BRITISH INDIA.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1783.

threatened them with a tedious siege. On the 13th, two batteries were opened, and before sun-set the defences of the enemy were so much impaired, that their fire was considerably abated. At night, Captain Maitland took advantage of a heavy rain to drive the enemy from the covered way, and to pursue them within the first gateway, to the second: here he was stopped, but gallantly defended himself, till additional troops arrived: when the enemy, alarmed by the idea of a general assault, called for quarter, and put the English in possession of the fort. The army then marched to Coimbatore, which they reached on the 28th of November, and which surrendered before they effected a breach. They had now the conquest of Seringapatam, and the entire subversion of the power of Tippee full in their view. The brave garrison of Mangalore had long baffled his whole army, which had suffered severely by a perseverance in the siege during the whole of the rains. A chain of connected operations could now be carried on by the army of Colonel Mackdon on the western coast, and that of Fullerton in the north. The army of the north was acting in Cadapah, in which, and the neighbouring provinces, the power of Tippee was ill established. All the petty princes on the western coast, were supposed ready to shake off their dependence. The co-operation was confidently expected of the Hindu inhabitants of Mysore, of whom the Brahmens were in correspondence with the English. Fullerton had provided his army with ten days' grain, repaired the carriages, and made every arrangement for pushing forward to Seringapatam, with nothing but victory sparkling in his eye; when he received, on the 28th of November, commands from the Commissioners, appointed to treat with Tippee, to restore immediately all posts, forts, and countries, lately refused, and to retire within the limits occupied on the 26th of July. He had made some progress in the execution of these commands, when he received on the 28th of January, directions to re-assemble the army, and prepare for a renewal of the war.

The negotiators, whom the President and Council had dispatched to the presence of Tippee, for the purpose of accelerating the conclusion of peace, had not attained their object without many difficulties and considerable delay. Scarcely had they entered the territory of the enemy,

when they were required, and almost commanded, to surrender Mangalore, which they regarded as the chief security for the lives and restoration of the English prisoners in the hands of Tippon. On their approach to Seragapatam, they were made acquainted with the intention to conduct them to Mangalore. No communication was allowed between them and their unfortunate countrymen, when they passed Bangalore, and other places in which they were confined. Their letters, both to and fro, were intercepted. Upon complaining they were informed, that Colonel Fullerton, notwithstanding the commencement of their mission for peace, had taken and plundered the forts of Palacicherry and Comblatore. Not aware that the proceedings of Fullerton were justified by the intelligence which he had received of Tippon's breach of faith to the garrison at Mangalore, they sent their commands to that officer to restore the places, which, since the date of their commission, had fallen into his hands. After a tedious and harassing journey, through a country almost impassable, in which some of their attendants and cattle actually perished, they joined Tippon at Mangalore, where he had waited almost a year, and a considerable portion of his army.

The force with which, in the month of May, in the preceding year, he invested Mangalore, is stated at 60000 horse, 30,000 disciplined sepoye, 600 French infantry, under the command of Colonel Comagay, Lally's corps of Europeans and natives, a French troop of dismounted cavalry, commanded by an officer of the King of France, irregular troops to the amount of many thousands, and nearly one hundred pieces of artillery. The British garrison consisted of 606 Europeans, including officers, and 2850 black troops, besides pioneers, and camp followers. The operations of the enemy proceeded with so much activity, that on the 25th of May they had completed eleven embrasures, which the English made an effort to destroy, but were repulsed. On the 26th, large stones, some of them weighing 130 pounds, began to be thrown by mortars into the town. As often as they lighted upon soft earth, they burst themselves without mischief. When they fell upon houses, they laid them open, where no materials could be had to repair them, to all the inhe-

BOOK V.

CHAPTER V.

1782.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.

1783.

memory of the massacre: When they fell upon a substance harder than themselves they were dashed into a thousand pieces; and even the wounds and lacerations which were produced by the splinters proved pestilentially destructive, hardly any person surviving who received them.

From batteries erected on the north, the east, and the south, a heavy fire was constantly maintained; the feeble fortifications on the northern side were entirely dismantled on the 4th of June; on the 7th a practicable breach was effected in the wall; and the English, especially as a flag of truce had been rejected, looked for an immediate assault. In the mean time they repulsed with the bayonet repeated attacks on the batteries which they had erected without the fortress; repeatedly silenced the batteries of the enemy, and spiked their guns, which were as often expeditiously repaired. Masked batteries were opened and the approaches of the enemy brought so near, that they threw fascines on the covered way, and edge of the glacis. On the 4th of July, the assault was undertaken. A body of troops, armed with knives, of the shape of pruning hooks, two feet long, and with spears mounted on light bamboos of a prodigious length, rushed into a tower on the left of the eastern gate, while the line marched forward to support them. The enterprise did not succeed. The assaulting party were so warmly received, that they were soon disposed to retreat. On the 6th a general attack was made on the northern covered way, which, though very force and obstinate, was also repulsed. The garrison were now obliged to defend themselves from almost daily attempts to penetrate into the fort, while they severely suffered both from scarcity and disease. At last intelligence arrived of the peace between France and England, with the consent of Busby to the French to co-operate no longer in the hostilities of Tippee. The French army made some efforts to effect a position; but even during the suspensions of hostilities, which were frequently terminated, and frequently renewed, Tippee continued his operations. A trait of Indian humanity ought not to be forgotten. During the progress of hostilities, and especially after the prospect of peace, the enemy's sentinels in many instances beckoned to the men to get under cover, and avoid their fire: a generosity which

the English were well disposed to return. At last, after a long and intricate correspondence, a cessation of hostilities, including the garrisons of Onore¹ and Carwar, was concluded on the 2nd of August. Of this agreement one important condition was, that the English garrison should three times a week be furnished with a plentiful market of provisions, at the rates of Tippee's camp. This was evaded, and prices were daily, in such a manner, increased, that a fowl was sold at eight, and even twelve rupees; and other things in a like proportion. At last the market was wholly cut off; and horse-flesh, dogs, snakes, various birds, kites, cats, and mice, were greedily consumed. Even jackals, devouring the bodies of the dead, were eagerly shot at for food. The garrison had suffered these evils with uncommon perseverance, when a squadron appeared on the 22nd of November, with a considerable army under General Macleod. Instead of landing, the General, by means of his secretary, carried on a tedious negotiation with Tippee; and having stipulated that provisions for one month should be admitted into the fortress, set sail with the reinforcement on the 1st of December.² Even this supply was drawn from decaying stores bought of a very ignorant, and of the beef and pork, not one in twenty pieces could be eaten, even by the dogs. Another visit, with a similar result, was made by General Macleod, on the 31st of December. The desertion of the sepoys, and the melting of the Europeans, were now daily apprehended: two-thirds of the garrison were sick, and the rest had scarcely strength to sustain their arms: the deaths amounted to twelve or fifteen every day; and at last, having endured these calamities till the 23rd of January, the gallant Campbell, by whom the garrison had been so nobly commanded, offered, on honourable terms, to withdraw the troops. The Sultan was too eager to put an end to a siege which by desertion and death had cost him

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1782.

¹ For a very interesting detail of the defence of Onore, which was maintained with extraordinary ability and heroism, by Captain Turrell, till the conclusion of the treaty, see Turrell's Oriental Memoirs, iv. 122 to 133.

² The reverse was, that it would have been a violation of the armistice, which did not expire till the first of the next day, and that ships could not wait another day for want of water. The armistice had been repeatedly broken by Tippee. Colonel Walker states the reasons assigned for this neglect of the garrison, but they are anything but satisfactory. N. A. B.—W.

BOOK V.
CHAP. I.
1782.

nearly half his army, to leave the constancy of so firm a foe; and they marched to Tellicherry, with arms, accoutrements, and the haunts of war.

The negotiating commissioners, whose journey had been purposely retarded, were now allowed to approach. The injuries which the English had sustained, since Tippee had joined in the business of negotiation, were such, as in a prouder state of the English mind, would have appeared to call for signal retribution. But the debility and dejection to which their countrymen were now reduced, and their despair of resources to continue the war, impressed the negotiators with a very unusual admiration of the advantages of peace; and meeting the crafty and deceitful practices of Tippee with temper and perseverance, they succeeded, on the 11th of March, 1783, in gaining his signature to a treaty, by which, on the general condition of a mutual restitution of conquests, peace was obtained.¹

It is only necessary, further, to relate the manner in which the treaty was ratified by the Governor-General and Council; and to explain the mode in which, during these momentous transactions, the relations between the Supreme and Subordinate Presidency were maintained. Lord Macartney was not only of superior rank to the highest of the Company's servants in India, but in him was met one of the first examples of elevating a servant of the king to a high station in that country; and of intercepting the great prize which animated the ambition of the individuals rising through the several stages of the Company's service. To these causes of jealousy were added, recommendations and injunctions, which had been pressed upon so many governors, and which had not failed to involve in odium and difficulties as many as had attempted to obey them; recommendations and injunctions of peculiar ar-

¹ For the narrative of the preceding events, here then explained, and completed, Paget presented to the House of Commons, pursuant to their order of the 8th of February, 1800, regarding the affairs of the Company, vol. II., *Barrow's Macartney*, 1. 181—202; *Memoirs of the late War in Asia*, 1. 321—322, 363—395, and 416—421; *A View of the English Interest in India*, by William Pakenham, 2 P., p. 64—70; *Annual Register for 1783* vol. 1783; the *Collection of Treaties and Management with the native princes of India*; and the *Annals* respect of the Committee of Secretory of 1783. The recent narratives of General Welles, drawn up under the advantage of peculiar knowledge, afford us the satisfaction of perceiving, that there is no material fact which my former authorities had not enabled me to state and to comprehend.

gency, to correct abuses and effect retrenchments. Though the accomplishments and talents of Lord Macartney, which were not of an ordinary kind, and a considerable propensity to vain glory might have added to the flames of discord, the calmness of his temper, his moderation, and urbanity, were well calculated to allay them. He was aware of the sentiments to which, among the members of the superior government, his appearance in India was likely to give origin; and lost no time in endeavouring to avert the jealousy which might naturally arise. He not only assured the Governor-General of the sentiments of esteem, and even of admiration with which all that he knew of his administration inspired him, but openly disclaimed all designs upon the government of Bengal; and declared that the objects were not Indian to which his ambition was directed. Mr. Hastings met his professions with similar protestations, both of personal regard and of desire for co-operation. He also expressed his regret that the suddenness of the arrival of Lord Macartney had not allowed him the opportunity to furnish to that nobleman the explanation of certain acts, by which the Supreme Government might appear to him to have passed beyond the limits of its own province, and to have taken upon itself an authority which belonged to the Presidency of which he was now at the head.

Of the acts to which Mr. Hastings made allusion, one was, the treaty, into which, in the beginning of the year 1781, he had entered with the Dutch. The object of that measure was to obtain, through the Governors of Colombo and Cochin, a military force to assist in the expulsion of Hyder from the Carnate, but as these Governors acted under the authority of the government of Batavia, for whose sanction there was no leisure to wait, a tempting advantage was represented as necessary to prevail upon them to incur so unusual a responsibility. The negotiation was carried on through the medium of the Director of the Dutch settlements in Bengal; and it was stipulated that for 1000 European infantry, 200 European artillery, and 1000 Malaga, who should be paid and maintained by the Company, during the period of their service, the services of Travelly should be ceded to the Dutch, together with the liberty of making conquests in the neighbourhood of Cochin, and the exclusive right to the

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1781.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1781.

pearl fishery on the whole of the coast south from Ramissam. In name and extent, the sovereignty of the Nabob Mahomed Ali was not to be infringed; and the treaty, framed and concluded for him, was not to be ratified by his signature. The small value of the cession, and the extreme danger of the Carnatic, were urged as the motives to induce compliance on the part both of the Nabob, and of the Presidency of Madras. The ideas, however, of the Nabob, and of the Presidency of Madras, differed very widely from those of the Governor-General, respecting the value both of what was to be given and what was to be received. They not only set a high estimate on Tinivelly, but treated the offer of a body of troops, when they were much less in want of troops than of money to pay and maintain those which they had, as a matter of doubtful utility. In consequence, they declined to forward the treaty, transmitting their reasons to the Court of Directors. And the accession of the Dutch to the services of England, of which Macartney carried out the intelligence, superseded, on that ground, all further proceedings.¹

Of the transactions, which Mr. Hastings might expect to impress unfavourably the mind of the noble President, another was, that of which the history has already occurred; the engagement into which he and his Council had entered, for setting aside the intervention of the Government of Madras, and transacting directly with the Nabob of Arcot. Under the same predominant was placed the negotiation into which the Governor-General and Council of Bengal had entered with Nizam Ali, the Subahdar of the Deccan, for obtaining from that Prince the aid of a body of his horse, and for ceding to him in return the Northern Circars. Though a treaty to this effect had been fully arranged, yet as the orders for carrying it into execution had not been despatched when Lord Macartney arrived, Mr. Hastings paid him the compliment of submitting it for his opinion. On this occasion also, the Governor-General represented, as of vast importance, the aid which the Company was thus to receive: and ascribed but little value to the territory which they were about to surrender, both as it yielded a trifling revenue, and, being a narrow strip along the coast, was, by its extent of five-

¹ Supplement to the First Report of the Committee of Secretory, 1782, p. 8, 9; and the Book cited, p. 124.

ter, difficult is denied. Here again the opinions of the Governor-General found themselves widely at variance with those of the Governor of Fort St. George. Lord Macartney stated the net revenue for that year of the four Northern Circars, not including Guntoor, at 61,000 pagodas; he affirmed that to the English the defence of territory was *map*, not in proportion to its remoteness from the sea, but the contrary, as a communication with their ships enabled the troops to move in every direction; that as manufacturing districts, the Circars were of great importance to the Company's investment; that they would be important in a still higher point of view, as forming a line of communication between Bengal and the Comadia, and giving to the English the whole of the eastern coast, when they should be augmented by Guntoor and Cuttack; and that the friendship of Nizam Ali was of no value, both as no dependence could be placed on his faith, and as the expense of his undisciplined and ungovernable horse would far outweigh the utility of their service. On all these accounts Lord Macartney declared, that, without the special command of his employers, he could not reconcile it to his sense of duty to consent to the treaty which was proposed. Mr Hastings gave way: but a difference so marked of his judgment, or his virtue, did not lessen the alienation towards the government of Madras, with temptations to which the situation of the Governor-General was largely supplied him.

The first occasion on which his measures gave umbrage to the government of Madras, was furnished by the purchases of Coote, where that government found it impossible to satisfy with power. Instead of interposing with their authority to allay the unreasonable dissatisfactions of the quarrelsome General, and to strengthen the hands, at so perilous a moment, of the government of Madras, the Supreme Council encouraged his discontent, and laid their exhortations upon the Presidency of Madras, to place themselves in hardly any other capacity than that of Commissaries to supply his army, and while they continued responsible for the acts of the government, to retain with them hardly any other connexion, in no degree to possess over them any substantial control. As the collision on the part of the Governor-General seemed

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1784.

BOOK V.

CHAP. V.

1784.

to Macartney to increase, and to throw unfavourable consequences, which it was of the utmost importance to avert, he went to Deogul, in the beginning of the year 1783, his confidential secretary, Mr. Sturgeson, in whose judgment and fidelity he placed the greatest reliance, to effect a complete mutual explanation, and, if possible, to secure harmony and co-operation. With this proceeding Mr. Hastings expressed the highest satisfaction, and declared his "anxious desire to co-operate with Lord Macartney freely and liberally, for the security of the Carnatic, for the support of his authority, and for the honour of his administration." But, even at the time when he was making these cordial professions, and entertaining Mr. Sturgeson with the highest civilities in his house, he signed, as President of the Supreme Council, whose voice was his own, a letter to the President and Council of Madras, in which, with an intimation of a right to command, they say they "do most earnestly recommend, that Sir Eyre Coote's wishes in regard to power may be gratified to their fullest possible extent; and that he may be allowed an unparticipated command over all the Forces acting under British authority in the Carnatic." Though Macartney announced his determination to act under this recommendation, as if it were a legal command, he yet displayed, first in a private letter to the Governor-General, to which no answer was ever returned, and also in a public communication, in the name of the Select Committee of the Council of Madras, his opinion, that the measure, as it regarded either the antecedent conduct of the Governor and Council of Madras, or the nature of the case, was destitute of all reasonable ground; calculated to involve the Madras government in difficulties; and liable to produce the most dangerous consequences. Of the rooted enmity of the Governor-General he regarded this proceeding as a decisive proof. And from this time but little between the Presidencies was preserved even of the appearance of concert.¹

¹ The importance of the services of Coote, and the advantage of having to his supporters and still one more of all military exertions, was fully recognised by the Council that followed his retirement and death. Nevertheless, as the war had been by General Stuart and the Government of Madras, it seems probable that but for the opportune intervention of peace with France, the South of India would have been lost to the English. The vigilance of the army at Calcutta would have been returned by the rage of Madras, and there was

Of the inconsequence to themselves of the transfer which the Supreme Council had ordered of the powers of the Presidency, one instance speedily occurred. Upon a requisition to send a detachment from Madras to Benbully, the President and Council were obliged to return for answer, that compliance no longer remained in their power, since all authority over the troops resided in the General. It is remarkable enough, that this incident, which, with others of the like description, might have been so easily foreseen, determined the Supreme Council to revoke the orders which they had formerly given, and, by explaining away the meaning of their former words, to substitute a new regulation for the degree of power with which the General was to be supplied. A great demerit, following close in succession upon a great enlargement of power, was not likely to produce a healing effect upon such a temper as that of Coote. He was insatiable upon relinquishing the command of the army; and on the 28th of September, 1782, sailed for Bengal. Measures for giving him satisfaction were then concerted between him and the Supreme Council; and he departed from Bengal in the following spring to resume the command. It has been historically stated, and without contradiction, that nothing but an accident prevented the two Presidents, even at that trying moment, from plunging their countrymen in India into something of the nature of a civil war. That Coote was despatched with powers to resume the military command, except from dependence upon the Madras government; and that to this illegal subversion of the authority of the subordinate Presidency, Lord Manners was determined not to submit.* The death of the General happily prevented the chance of a struggle. The ship, in which he was proceeding from the Ganges to the coast, was

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1782.

Early chance of defeating it successfully, against Tippu and the French. Without denying that there was much to be reproved in the conduct of the military authorities, yet it is evident that there was a stronger disposition in the civil authorities of Madras to appropriate the division of military orders, and to interfere beyond the strict necessity of emergencies, which required them, and without regard to the constitution of the Bengal Government.—*F.*

* Memoirs of the late War in Asia, v. 422—44.

This can scarcely be said an injury. An anonymous author quoting no proofs, can scarcely be considered as evidence of intention; not indeed to scheme. It is unjust to Lord Manners, to impute to him the purpose of plunging in something like civil war.—*F.*

DOCK V. chased several days by some of the French cruizers, and
 CHAP. VI. at times in imminent danger; the extreme anxiety of this
 1784. situation operating upon the irritable and enfeebled frame
 of the General, accelerated a third fit of apoplexy, and ter-
 minated his life on the 26th of April, only three days after
 landing at Madras. To such an extreme the distrust of the
 Supreme Government was now carried, that a sum of ten
 lacs of rupees from Bengal, which arrived a few days after,
 could not be received, because the person who brought it
 had order to deliver it not to the civil government, but
 into the hands of Sir Eyre Coote. From this time the
 Governor-General and Council withheld from Madras, not
 only the powers which were necessary for effecting, by
 negotiation, a division among the enemies of the English,
 but all instruction with respect to their views of peace or
 war; and, instead of those supplies which they had
 hitherto afforded in considerable quantity, they forbade
 the Carnatic Presidency to draw on the government of
 Bengal for a single rupee. Repeated applications were
 sent before any answer was received, for instructions in
 regard to the treaty which Tippeo had declared his wil-
 lingness to form. It was not till after the commissioners
 had departed that any were received; and when they
 came, they were so equivocally worded, that whatever
 course the Carnatic Presidency might pursue, their con-
 duct would equally stand open to blame.¹

The treaty of peace with Tippeo was transmitted for
 ratification to Bengal. In the absence of Mr. Hastings,
 who was then at Lucknow, it was acknowledged and
 signed by the Supreme Council, who were vested with all
 the powers of government. It was returned in due form.
 It was then, with the requisite solemnity, transmitted to
 Tippeo. The receipt of it was acknowledged. And this
 great transaction was closed.

After a number of months had elapsed, a fresh copy of
 the treaty was received from Bengal, having the signatures
 as before, of the Members of the Council at Calcutta, and
 the additional signatures of the Governor-General at Luck-
 now. To this instrument was annexed a declaration, that
 the Nabob Wala Jah had a right to be included in the

¹ Papers presented to the House of Commons, at supra. *Barrow's Life of the Earl of Macartney*, i. 322 and 323.

freely; and a command to the President and Council of Madras, "at their peril," to transmit the ratification of the treaty in its second form to Tippee.

BOOK V.
CHAP. I.
1782.

For understanding this transaction, it is necessary to recollect, that the Nabob, and, along with him, his confidential agents, expressed their uneasiness at the unhappy state of his affairs, by imputing blame to the Government, and obstructing the Government. The Supreme Council had taken part with the complaints, not only of the General, but also of the Nabob. To all peaceable arrangements for peace, that depended on, amicable, and equitable chief, had shown aversion, and, in particular, a poignant abhorrence of Hyder Ali and his son. Important as the blessing of peace had now become, to the exhausted resources of him and the Company, he treated with unassured disapprobation the terms of any treaty which, to the Presidency, it seemed practicable to obtain; and neither gave his consent, nor appeared to desire to become a party, to the arrangements which they endeavoured to effect. The treaty of 1791, in which the Nabob was not included as a party, nor his name mentioned, appeared to furnish a precedent to justify a treaty in which, though his participation was not expressed, his interests were secured. And as it was absolutely necessary, on behalf of the Company, that the Nabob should not have the power of breaking a treaty, essential to their interests, though by him violently condemned, it was held a great advantage to place it on a foundation independent of his will. Besides, previously to the negotiation, the Supreme Council were so far from holding up the Nabob, as a necessary and a principal party, that they did not even direct the communication to him of their instructions, or hint the propriety of taking himself in. The complaint, however, which on this account the Nabob had been instigated to raise, the Supreme Council treated now as a matter of inferior importance; and to Lord Macartney they appeared to be actuated by a wish to multiply the embarrassments of his administration. Considering the jealous temper of Tippee, his distrust of the English, and his perpetual apprehension of treachery and deceit, Lord Macartney was convinced, that to present to him a second ratification of a treaty, after the first had been received as final and complete, could

BOOK V. only serve to persuade him that either on the first or
 CHAP. VI. second of these occasions imprisonment was procured; and
 ————— that hostility should anticipate the effect of hostile de-
 1782. signs. The danger of such a result determined the Presi-
 dent to leave the resentment of the superior government,
 and, exonerating his council from responsibility, he de-
 clared his readiness to submit to suspension as the conse-
 quence of his refusal to obey the orders of the governing
 Board. The situation of Mr. Hastings himself became,
 about this time too alarming, however, to leave him
 inclination for a stretch of his authority; and the disobe-
 dience of Lord Minto was followed by an unpleasant
 result.¹

CHAPTER VI.

Financial Difficulties—Campaign of General Goddard on the Bombay Side of the Malabar Country.—Attack on the Bengal Side.—Peace with Sindia.—Supreme Court of Judicature.—Effects of the Supreme Court to extend its Jurisdiction.—Their Effects upon Individuals.—Upon the Collection of the Revenue.—Upon the Administration of Justice.—Interference of Parliament claimed.—Granted.—The Chief Justice placed at the Head of the Sadler Desamwade Adawlat—Chief Justice recalled.—Judicial and Police Regulations.—Provincial Councils abolished, and a new Board of Revenue set up.

WE return to the events which, during these great transactions in the south, had taken place in Bengal, and other parts of the British dominions in India.

Before the commencement of the war with Hyder, the finances of the Company in every part of India had become a source of distress. The scanty resources of Bombay, which seldom equalled the expenditure of a peace-establishment, had not, even with the supplies which had been sent from Bengal, sufficed to save that Presidency from the necessity of draining the channels of loan, and from sinking in arrears so deeply, even with the pay of the

¹ Barrow's Life of Minto, p. 128—129: Papers presented to the House of Commons, 20 sept.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1783.

army, that the General, in the month of August, 1780, declared it was no longer fit to be depended upon¹. Even Bengal itself, though it had enjoyed entire tranquillity, and had only contributed to the maintenance of Goddard's army, and to other feeble operations against the Maharrattas, was so completely exhausted, that, in August, 1780, the Supreme Council were again reduced to the expedient of contracting debt; and before the end of the year, when exertions in favour of the Carnatic were required, they were obliged to concede to the Directors the probability of a total suspension of the investment.²

In the important consultations of the 13th of September 1780, upon the intelligence of the fatal irruption of Hyder, it was resolved, that terms of peace should be offered to the Maharrattas, through the mediation of the Raja of Berar; and on the 2nd of October a draught of a treaty was prepared, according to which all conquests made by the English were to be surrendered, with the exception of the fort of Ucker, destined for the Raja of Goland, and of that part of Guzerat which had been ceded to Pelly Sing Guccwar. Should the fort of Basserin, however, be taken by the English forces, before the final agreement, it was proposed to cede, on its stead, all the territory and revenue which they had acquired by the treaty of Poornander. Of this draught, a copy with power of ratification, was sent to the Raja of Berar, and at the same time letters were written to Nizam Ali, to the Peshwa, to Scindia, and to the Poonch members, apprising them of the terms on which the English government was ready and desirous to conclude a treaty of peace.

On the 14th of October, General Goddard, reinforced by

¹ See Goddard's Letter to the Select Committee of Directors, dated 15th August 1780, and a Report of the Committee of Directors, at supra. p. 107 and 112. See also p. 27 and 28, with the Appendix, pp. 56, for details of this extensive poverty and misconduct of the P. A. S. Co. "misconduct" &c. &c. "were proceeding to a degree never before experienced."

² See Goddard's Report, at supra. p. 107, 108, 109. It is a letter to General Goddard, under date 25th April, 1780. The original Copy was, "Our revenues are no longer equal to the payments I am under." In another, dated 18th May, they warned the Board of Directors against any reliance on increased supplies from Bengal, "as neither the Company, nor the necessity of the present war, will endure a continuance of the war loans," &c. In a month of the Governor-General on the 16th of August, he said, "Our revenues have been increasing a vast means of support. And it is now a general duty imposed upon me, to propose, that we should again have recourse to the means of supplying our growing wants, by taking up money at interest. The sum I do not propose, because I think it almost will be failed."

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1761.

a body of Europeans from Madras, and relieved from apprehensions of Tishtar and Shidia by intelligence that an attack would be made upon their Janisbans from the upper provinces of Bengal, put the army in motion from Serat. The roads were still so deep, and the rivers so full, that they were unable to reach their ground before Bassein till the 13th of November. From the strength of the place and the number of the garrison, the General deemed it necessary to carry on his operations with regularity and caution. A battery of six guns and six mortars, within nine hundred yards of the fort, was completed on the morning of the 15th. Under cover of its fire, approaches were carried on to a spot within 300 yards of the wall, where a battery of nine heavy guns was opened on the morning of the 9th of December, while a battery of twenty mortars began to play upon one of the bastions. On the morning of the 10th, when a practicable breach was nearly effected, the fort made an offer of surrender, but in consequence of some delay the fire was renewed, and the next morning the enemy yielded at discretion.¹

After the reduction of Bassein, the General repaired to Bombay for the purpose of settling with the Committee the further operations of the army, and there received intelligence of the irruption of Hyder into the Carnatic, and the destruction of Colonel Baillie's detachment. An attack, which might operate as a diversion, on the western side of Hyder's dominions, was perceived upon the Presidency of Bombay by that of Madras; and at the same time arrived from the Supreme Council intelligence of their designs respecting peace with the Mahattas, and a copy of the treaty which it was intended to offer. Though directed immediately to obey a requisition in writing from the Peshwa to suspend hostilities, General Goddard and the Committee of Bombay were exhorted to prosecute the war

¹ His action is taken in the rest of the important and brilliant operations of a division of the British army, under Colonel Buxley, in the Carnatic, the objects of which were to secure the revenues of the country for the British authority, and then to direct the siege of Bassein. The first object was partially, the latter completely, effected. Colonel Buxley was killed, in the beginning of October, in a battle with Mahanna, near at Chittangur, and the day following the British part of the Carnatic, took up a position in it, far from the British threat. From hence he fell back to Seringapat, the native King of Mysore, upon the advance of an extraordinary force intended to raise the siege, and there, on the 10th and 11th of December, repulsed every attack of the Mahanna army, 20,000 strong, with the loss of their general. *Hist. d. Ind.*, c. 17.

with vigour, till such time as that application should arrive. After several fluctuations of opinion, it was determined not to evacuate Tellicovery; in a place which, though vulnerable to defeat, might ultimately be of importance for commencing an attack upon the dominions of Hyder. And, notwithstanding the desire of the Committee to secure the Concan, or the country below the Ghats, it was resolved, upon the recommendation of the General, to occupy the passes of the mountains, and to threaten the enemy's capital, advancing into the country as far as might appear consistent with the safe retreat of the army. The terror which might thus be inspired was expected to operate as the most effectual inducement to peace; and that terror would be the more powerful, as the two leading chiefs, Sarda and Holkar, were understood to be occupied in the defence of their own dominions against the attack carried on from Bengal.

The army marched from Basseta about the middle of January. The Mahratta force in the Concan was computed at 25,000 horse and foot, with about fifteen guns. It was commanded by Harry Part Furka, and posted on the road to the Black Ghats,* by which, in the midst of the passes, and that leading most directly to the Mahratta capital, it was expected that the English would endeavour to ascend. Notwithstanding the numerical superiority of the enemy, they offered little resistance in the level of the country, and with only a few slight skirmishes, the English reached the foot of the pass on the 8th of February. The enemy had ascended; and from intelligence, it appeared that they had assembled in great force to dispute the passage. Holkar, whose the attack from Bengal had been too feeble to obtain on the opposite side of the Mahratta country, and who had left Sarda an sufficient to cope with the force by which he was assailed, had lately joined the Pootah army, of which the whole was occupied near the top of the Ghats. The General, who saw the advantage of audacity and despatch, resolved to storm the pass the very night of his arrival. The storming party, which consisted of the grenadiers,

* It was the same army which had been repulsed by Colonel Buxley, and had been obliged to fall back, once on the table of Malabar.—H.

BOOK V. headed by Captain Packer, entered about midnight, and
 CHAP. VI. with consummate gallantry, forcing the enemy from every
 battery and post which they occupied, reached the summit at five o'clock in the morning.

1381.

At the top of the Ghaut, the English army were not distant more than forty-five miles from the Mahatta capital. On the 15th, a person arrived, commissioned, as he said, by Nana Purnavess, the Poonah minister. His object was, to declare the warmest desires of the minister to obtain the friendship of the English; but he brought with him no credentials to authenticate his mission. For this, he apologised, by the doubts which Nana felt of the disposition towards him entertained by the English. Goddard was not willing that a mere adherence to terms should obstruct the acquisition of peace. He instructed him to assure the minister of the readiness with which the English would second his views for a termination of the existing contests, and the formation of an alliance against their respective enemies. Among other circumstances, the Mahatta agent affirmed that the copy of the treaty which had been sent for transmission to the Regent of Berar, the Regent, who had not approved of it, had declined to forward. The General, therefore, transmitted to the minister a copy, together with information of his being vested with full powers to treat; and agreed to wait eight days for an answer. The answer arrived within the time prescribed, containing a simple and explicit rejection of the terms. Fully acquainted with the progress of Hyder in the Carnatic, and regarding the exigencies of the English for peace, as a declaration of inability for war, the Mahattas, at this juncture, expected greater advantages from continuing, than terminating hostilities. To the application of the Supreme Council to Madras, that he would employ his mediation between them and the Poonah government, an answer was not received till the 9th of January, 1781; and when it did arrive, it contained so many objections to the treaty, and even advanced so many pretensions on the part of Madras himself, that it not only convinced them of the

* Negotiations were also on foot for an alliance between all the Mahatta states, except the Chikara, with Hyder and the Nizam, against the English.—W.

little prospect of peace, but brought into doubt the sincerity of the former professions of that person himself.

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

Notwithstanding this disappointment in the hopes of peace, and the approach of the English army to the capital of the enemy, Goklart, convinced that possession of the capital, which the enemy had determined to burn, would by no means ensure the attainment of his object, declined any farther progress into the interior of the country; and recommended a system of defensive warfare, permitting the return of the Madras troops to the coast of Comorndel, both for assistance against Hyder, and to lessen the pressure upon the Bombay finances.

After maintaining their post with little disturbance at the head of the Ghats till the 17th of April, the English descended secretly during the night.¹ The difficulty of supplying the troops with provisions, while the enemy, it was found, could descend by other passes, and intercept their convoys; together with the expense of fortifying the post at the top of the Ghats, appeared to surpass the advantage of maintaining it. The enemy descended in pursuit the following day. The route from the bottom of the hills to the coast was about twenty-four miles, through a country full of bushes, thickets, and narrow defiles. This was highly favourable to the irregular and unexpected assaults of the Mahrattas, who greatly harassed the English during the three days of the march: but though several lives were lost, and among the rest that of Colonel Parker, the second in command, no material impediment was made, nor any loss sustained of the baggage and stores. The Mahratta army is awarded the Ghats; and the English, left in possession of the Coast, prepared, with the Madras detachment, which the refusal of two of the battalions now rendered it desirable to retain, to remain at Callian through the approaching monsoon.²

¹ The plan of retreating, came from the Bombay Government, and was only obtained from Goklart's acquiescence in so far as leaving the impossibility of maintaining an extensive position in the Mahratta country, against such powerful forces as they could bring against him. *Ibid.* v. 426.—89.

² With age not checked in their post, the English had suffered much from well-directed operations upon their communications; the country, upon the distant top of overtopped by Parson's Hill, with 1836 lower. *Ibid.* v. 427.—89.

³ *First Report of the Committee of Secretaries, 1781, p. 109—112, with the official documents, &c. in numerous appendices.*

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

On the Bengal side of the Mahabho country, it was determined, notwithstanding the eminent services of Major Popham, to supersede that officer in the command, and relieve his corps by that of Colonel Canas,¹ who, having already advanced into the territory of the Rana of Gohad, was, about the beginning of the year 1781, commanded to penetrate, at the head of five battalions of sepoys, towards Oopra, the capital of Soodia. The force employed in this service, as it was too small to prevent Holkar from returning to assist in turning the balance against Goddard, so it was too feeble to intimidate even Soodia alone, and seems to have been saved from destruction, or at any rate from flight, by nothing but a fortunate exploit. Having reached Saranga, in the month of February, it was surrounded by a powerful enemy; its supplies were cut off; it was harassed on all sides; the princess, expected to join it, stood aloof; it was reduced to distress for want of provisions: and the commanding officer was obliged to apply by letter for the troops stationed at Fathigian, under Colonel Muir, to enable him to retreat into the country of the Rana. Colonel Muir arrived at Gohad on the 24th of March. But before this time, Colonel Canas was reduced to such extremity, that on the 23rd of the same month he had commenced a general war, in which Captain Bruce, the officer who commanded the storming party at the taking of Gualier, recommended, as the only possible means of preserving the army, to make that very night an attack upon the camp of Soodia. After some debate and hesitation, the resolution was adopted. At sunset on the 24th, the army moved from their ground, and after a march of thirteen hours arrived at the camp.² The surprise was, happily, complete; and all the terror and confusion caused, which usually result from a nocturnal assault unexpectedly falling upon a barbarian army. The enemy dispersed, and fled in disorder, leaving several guns and elephants, with a quantity of ammunition, as prize to the victor.

¹ A typographical error pervades all the previous editions, and, instead of Canas, this officer is termed Canaan, a very different person.—W.

² It is very unlikely that a march of "eleven or six" should have produced a sunrise, especially a nocturnal sunrise, as the interval is not here brought day light as the mountains. Jeff states that it was Soodia's custom to encamp every night at the distance of five or six miles, (p. 147.) and Colonel Canas, in his official report, says, "the enemy retreated 4, or 5, or 6 miles," a distance of five or six miles. *South Report, Append. 1821.*—W.

Colonel Mair was so retarded by want of cattle for the conveyance of provisions, and by other difficulties,¹ that he arrived not at Antry till the 4th of April; and, as senior officer, upon joining Cawse, he assumed the command. In order to overcome the backwardness of the Rana of Gohad, whom the apparent foolishness of the English led to temporise, and even to intrigue with Sindhia, directions were given to place him in possession of the fort of Ous-Boo, which had been professedly taken only for him. Though the English were now enabled to remain within the territory of Sindhia, they were too feeble to undertake any active operations; and spent several months in vain endeavours to induce the Rana of Gohad, and the neighbouring chieftains, to yield them any efficient support. In the meantime, the army of Sindhia lay close to that of the English, which remained at Bissai, a place within the Malabarra dominions, several days' march beyond the frontiers of Gohad. The Malabarra horse daily harassed the camp, and cut off the supplies. And the troops were reduced to great distress, both by sickness and want of provisions.² Happily the resources of Sindhia, too, were not difficult to exhaust; and he began seriously to devise an end of the contest. About the beginning of August, an overture was made, through the Rana of Gohad, which the English commander encouraged; and on the 15th of that month, an envoy from Sindhia, with powers to treat, arrived in the English camp. Similar powers were transmitted to Colonel Mair. Negotiations commenced; and on the 13th of October a treaty was concluded. All the territory which the English had conquered on the further side of the Jumna was to be restored to Sindhia: on the other part, Sindhia was not to molest the chiefs who had assisted the English, or to claim any portion of the territory which the English had restored to the dominions of the Rana Gohad: it was also agreed, that Sindhia should use his endeavours to effect a peace between the English and their enemies, Hyder Ali, and the Peshwa.³

¹ "Difficulties beyond description," they are called by Mr Hastings. See Mr. "Answer to the Fourteenth Charge."

² Mr Hastings' Answer, before the House of Commons, on the Fourteenth Charge.

³ Hastings' Answer, at large; A correspondence, Plans, and Declaration of Indian Affairs, particularly of the Transactions of the Maratha War, from its commencement to the month of October, 1782, p. 12. The nature of this

BOOK V. During these proceedings the Governor-General and
CHAP. VI. Council were involved in other affairs of no ordinary importance.

1774.

When the wisdom of parliament embraced the subject of the government of India, and by its grand legislative effort, in 1773, undertook to provide, as far as it was competent to provide, a remedy both for the evils which existed, and for those which might be foreseen, a Court of Judicature was created, to which the title of Supreme was annexed, and of which the powers, as well as the nomination of the judges, did not emanate from the Company, but immediately from the King. It was framed of a Chief Justice and three Puisné Judges; and was empowered to administer in India all the departments of English law. It was a court of common law, and a court of equity; a court of eye and testimony, and good delivery; an ecclesiastical court, and a court of admiralty. In civil cases, its jurisdiction extended to all claims against the Company, and against British subjects, and to all such claims of British subjects against the natives, as the party in the contract under dispute had agreed, in case of dispute, to submit to its decision. In affairs of penal law, its powers extended to British subjects, and to another class of persons, who were described, as all persons directly or indirectly in the service of the Company, or of any British subject, at the time of the offence.

In the establishment of this tribunal, the British legislature performed one important act of legislative wisdom. They recognised, and by adopting, they sanctioned, the principle, that to leave any part of the emoluments of judges, as so great a portion of them in England is left, to be made out of fees extracted from the suitors in their own courts, is an abuse; an infallible cause of the perversion of judicature. They enacted that a sufficient salary should be fixed for the judges; that no additional emolument, in the shape of fees, or in any other, should accrue

short narrative has evidently enjoyed the advantage of access to the records of the British government. Some particulars have been gleaned, or the "Memories of the late Warren Hastings." See also the copy of the Treaty with India, in the Collection of Treaties with the Powers of Asia, printed by the B. L. in 1812, p. 27-28.

To these sources, the superior one of Dalrymple's *Western History* may be added.—W.

from their judicial functions. A mere temptation to exert, for the multiplication of suits and of their expenses, the great power of judges, was so far, accordingly, taken away; and that oppression which is inflicted upon the public by the unnecessary delay, vexation and expense of judicial proceedings, was in part deprived of its fundamental and most operative cause.¹

On the principal ground, however, the parliament as usual, took nearly Hindfeld. They saw not that they were establishing two independent and rival powers in India, that of the Supreme Council, and that of the Supreme Court; they drew no line to mark the boundary between them; and they foresaw not the consequences which followed, a series of encroachments and disputes which impaired the powers of government, and threatened their destruction.²

The judges had not been long in the exercise of their functions when the effects of their proceedings began to appear. The writs of the Supreme Court were issued in the suit of individuals against the Zemlchiks of the country, in ordinary actions of debt; the Zemlchiks were ordered to Calcutta to make appearance, taken into custody for contempt if they neglected the writ, or hurried from any distance to Calcutta, and, if unable to find bail, were hurried in a hathouse dargoon. In a minute of General Clavering, Colonel Monson, and Mr. Fergus, dated the 11th of April, 1778, they declare that process of this description had been issued into every part of the provinces. "Zemlchiks," they add, "farmers, and other proprietors of the land, have been seized upon their estates, and forcibly brought up to the Presidency, at the suit of

¹ They owned 4000 shares, and had the purchase of 2000, this share of income had not yet been therefore deducted.

1 Mr. George Henry Oswald to the East India Company, in the report which he made to the Directors upon the above subject, in the January following, as here set forth, viz:—“It is now evident, that the people of the West Indies, and the Colonies, in the West, were perfectly unacquainted, at any time, with Indian history, and this owing to want of care. This state of mind is now altered in fact, the subject of this committee, and in the temporal authorities, but in the permanency of fact it is not. In consequence of which I have said, did not believe, like those, ever without history and collections of such value.”—See Report of the Committee of the House of Commons (1810), on the petition relative to the administration of justice in India, of Thomas and others, of Liverpool, and the other petition of the Governor Council, and of the East India Company, General Appendix, No. 26.

¹ See the description of the barrel part of Calcutta, in the Joint Report of the Select Committee in 1782, and also *ibid.* 55 p. 158.

BOOK V. complaints of other natives, and detained there, or obliged
 CHAP. V. to give bail, according to the nature of the case." By
 these proceedings, the minds of the natives were thrown
 1781. into the utmost consternation and alarm. They saw them-
 selves surrounded with dangers of a terrible nature, from
 a new and mysterious source, the operations of which they
 were altogether unable to comprehend. The principles of
 English law were not only different, in many important
 respects, from those to which they had hitherto been in-
 debted for the protection of every thing which they held
 dear; but opposite and shocking to some of their strongest
 opinions and feelings. The language of that law; its
 studied intricacies and obscurities, which render it un-
 intelligible to all Englishmen, who have not devoted a great
 part of their lives to the study of it; rendered it to the
 eye of the affrighted Indian, a black and portentous cloud,
 from which every terrific and destructive form might at
 each moment be expected to descend upon him. Whoever
 is qualified to estimate the facility and violence with which
 alarms are excited among a simple and ignorant people,
 and the utter confusion with which life to them appears
 to be overgrown, when the series of customs and rules by
 which it was governed is threatened with subversion, may
 form an estimate of the terrors which agitated the natives
 of India, when the process of the Supreme Court began
 to operate extensively among them.

The evils, not of apprehension merely, but of actual
 suffering to which it exposed them, were deplorable.
 They were dragged from their families and affairs, with
 the frequent certainty of leaving them to disorder and
 ruin, any distance even as great as 300 miles, either to
 give bail at Calcutta, a thing which, if they were strangers,
 and the sum more than trifling, it was next to impossible
 they should have in their power; or to be consigned to
 prison for all the many months which the delays of English
 judicature might interpose, between this calamitous stage
 and the final termination of the suit. Upon the affidavit,
 into the truth of which no inquiry whatsoever was made,
 upon the unquestioned affidavit of any person whatsoever,
 a person of credibility, or directly the reverse; it made no
 difference, whether the individual prosecuted, was within
 the jurisdiction of the court, the natives were seized, carried

to Calcutta, and consigned to prison, where, even if it was afterwards determined that they were not within the jurisdiction of the court, and of course that they had been unjustly prosecuted, they were liable to lie for several months, and whence they were dismissed totally without compensation. Instances occurred, in which defendants were brought from a distance to the Presidency, and when they declared their intention of pleading, that, objecting to the jurisdiction of the court, the prosecution was dropped; in which the prosecution was again renewed, the defendant again brought down to Calcutta; and again, upon his offering to plead, the prosecution was dropped. The very fact of being seized was, in India, a circumstance of the deepest disgrace, and so degraded a man of any rank, that, under the Mohammedan government, it was never attempted, except in cases of the greatest delinquency.¹

Not only the alarm which these proceedings diffused throughout the country, but the effects with which they threatened to strike the collection of the revenue, strongly excited the attention of the Company's servants and the members of their government. To draw from the ryots the dues or contributions which they owe, is well known to be a business of great detail and difficulty, requiring the strictest vigilance, and most minute and persevering applications. Anything which strikes at the credit of the Zemindar, farmer, or other functionary, by whom this duty is performed, immediately increases the difficulty, by encouraging the ryot in the hope of defeating the demand by evasion, cunning, obduracy, or delay. The total absence of the functionary, called away to attend the proceedings of the Supreme Court, his forcible removal, or the ignominious seizure of his person, went far to suspend the collections within his district, and to cut off the source of those payments for which he was engaged to the Company.

It had been the immemorial practice in India, for that great branch of the government intrusted with the collection of the revenue, to exercise the department of jurisdiction which regarded the revenue, to decide in that field all matters of dispute, and to apply the coercive

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
—
1791.

¹ See the evidence of Sir James Law, Report of the Committee on Trade's Petition, &c., p. 18.

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

process which was usual for enforcing demands. These powers were now exercised by the Provincial Councils, and the courts established, by the name of *Deewanee Adawlat*, under their authority. The mode of decision was summary, that is, expeditious, and unexpensive; and the mode of coercion was simple, and adapted to the habits and feelings of the people. One or more peons, a species of undisciplined soldiery, employed in the collections, was set over the defaulter, that is, repaired to the house, and there watched and restrained him, till the sum he owed was discharged. In a short time the Supreme Court began to interfere with these proceedings. The defaulters were made to understand by the attorneys, who had spread themselves pretty generally through the country, that if they would throw themselves upon the Supreme Court, they would obtain redress and protection. They were taught, as often as any coercive process was employed by the judges of revenue, to sue out a writ of *Habeas Corpus* in the Supreme Court; where it was held competent, and was in practice customary, for the judges to set them at liberty upon bail. This excited still more violently the apprehensions of the members of government, in regard to the collection of the revenue. As the disposition to withhold the payment is universal and unremitting in India, and never fails to lay hold of every occasion which affords any chance either of delay, or evasion; they apprehended that such a resource, held up to the people, would breed a general tendency; and they concluded, with justice, that if, in the innumerable cases in which coercion was necessary, it could only be exercised through the tedious, laborious, and expensive forms of English law, the realising of a revenue in India was a thing altogether impossible.

While the Company searched the office of *Deewan*, in other words, that department of government which regarded the collection of the revenue, and in civil cases the administration of justice, they had been careful to keep up the appearance of the *Riswant*, or remaining branch of the ancient government, in the person of the *Nabob*; and to him, the penal department of judicature, under the superintendence of the *Nazir Dewan*, or deputy *Nabob*, appointed by the Company, had in particular been

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
—
1781.

intrusted. To this government of the Nabob, which, though totally dependent upon the servants of the Company, and subservient to their will, was put the instrument of a great portion of all that security for order and protection which existed in the country, the Supreme Court declared, that they would pay no regard. In their representation, under date of the 15th of January, 1779, the Governor and Council complain to the Court of Directors, that Mr. Justice Hyde had declared publicly on the bench, "The Act of Parliament does not consider Mabarack al Dewla as a sovereign prince. The jurisdiction of this court extends over all his dominions." That Mr. Justice Le Maistre had said, "With regard to this phantom, this man of straw, Mabarack al Dewla, it is an insult on the understanding of the Court, to have made the question of his sovereignty: but it comes from the Governor-General and Council; I have too much respect for that body to break it ludicrously, and I confess I cannot consider it seriously;" and that the Chief Justice had treated the Nabob "as a mere empty name, without any legal right, or the exercise of any power whatsoever."

By these pretensions, the whole of that half of the powers of government which were exercised in the name of the Nabob, was taken away and abolished. By another set of pretensions, the same abolition was effected of the other half, which, in the character of Dewas, were exercised in the name of the Company.

In the same address, the Governor-General and Council add the following statement: "Mr. Le Maistre, in his late charge to the grand Jury, declares that a very erroneous opinion has been formed by the Governor-General and Council, distinguishing the situation of the East India Company, as Dewas, from the common condition of a trading company: he makes no scruple of avowing a decided opinion, that no true distinction, in reason, in law, or justice, can or ought to be made, between the East India Company as a trading Company, and the East India Company as Dewas of these provinces. With respect to the management of the territorial revenue, he is pleased to declare, that the only true interpretation of the Act of Parliament is, that our management and government is not exclusive, but subject to the jurisdiction of the King's

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

Court; and that it will be equally penal for the Company, or for those acting under them, to disobey the orders and mandatory process of the King's Court, in matters which merely concern the revenues, as in any other matter or thing whatsoever." The Governor and Council declare: "By the several acts and declarations of the judges, it is plain that the Company's office of Deewan is annihilated; that the country government is subverted; and that any attempt on our part to exercise or support the powers of either, may involve us and our officers in the guilt and penalty of high treason; which Mr. Justice Le Ministre, in his charge, expressly holds out, as treason, to all the Company's servants and others, acting under our authority."

It would be difficult, in any age or country, to discover a parallel to the conduct which this set of judges exhibited on the present occasion. Their own powers, as it was impossible for them not distinctly to see, were totally inadequate to the government of the country; yet they proceeded, contrary to the declared, though badly expressed, intention of the legislature, to avail themselves of the hooks and handles,* which the existing system of law, administered by them, afforded in such abundance, to draw within their pale the whole transactions of the country; not those of individuals only, but those also of the government. That this was to transfer the government into their hands is too obvious to require illustration. When a government is transferred from one to another set of hands, by a simple act of despotism, every branch of authority is directly supplied; the machine of government remains entire; and the mischief may be small, or the advantage great. But when the wheels of government were threatened to be stopped by the technical forms of a court of English law, and when nothing but these forms, and a set of men who could ostensibly perform nothing, but through the medium of those forms,

* The following is an amazing instance. The President Council of Deccan, the grand administrative organ of government, for a great emergency, is thus treated: "Whereas the President Council and Council of Deccan . . . There are no Corporations in the eye of the law . . . The Council and President Council of Deccan, was a dead body . . . A man might as well say, that he was constituted by the King of France, as by the President Council of Deccan, because the law knows no such body." *Exposition and Judgment of Mr. Justice Le Ministre, on the return to George Town's Habeas Corpus. Report, &c. supra, Criminal Appendix, No. 5.* See for another specimen, equally beautiful, a few pages onwards, the manner in which the same Council is treated.

and the pretence of administering justice, was provided to supply the place of the government which was destroyed, a total dissolution of the social order was the impending consequence. The system of English law was as incompatible with the habits, sentiments, and circumstances of the people, that, if attempted to be forced, even upon that part of the field of government which belonged to the administration of law, it would have sufficed to throw the country into the utmost disorder; would have subverted almost every existing right; would have filled the nation with terror and misery; and being, in such a situation, incapable of answering the purposes of law, would have left the country in a state hardly different from that, in which it would have been, under a total absence of law. But when the judges proceeded to apply these forms to the acts of government, the powers of administration were suspended; and nothing was provided to supply their place. Either with a blind ignorance of these consequences, which is almost incredible, unless from our experience of the narrowness which the total contrivance by habitual application to the practice of English law, and by habitual indigence of the fancy that it is the perfection of reason; or, with a disregard of these consequences, for which nothing but a love of power, too prodigal to be stayed by any considerations of human happiness or misery, is sufficient to account,—the judges proceeded, with the apparent resolution of extending the jurisdiction of their court, and leaving as little as possible of the business of the country except from the exercise of their power.

To palliate the invasions which they made upon the field of government, they made use of this as an argument: That the great end of their institution was to protect the natives against the injustice and oppression of the Company's servants; and that, without the power which they assumed, it was impossible for them to render to humanity this essential service. But to force upon the natives the measures of English law, and to dissolve the bands of government, was to inflict upon the people far greater evils than those from which they pretended to relieve them. If the end proposed by the legislature was really to protect the natives from the injustice of

BOOK V. Englishmen, they made a very unskilful choice of the
CHAP. VI. 1781.

1781.

The representations upon this subject, which the Governor-General and Council transmitted to England, induced the Court of Directors, in the month of November, 1777, to lay a statement of the case before the Ministers of the Crown. The supposed dignity of a *King's Court*, as it inflated the pretensions of the *Judges*, who delighted in styling themselves *King's Judges*—contrasting the source of their own power with the inferior source from which the power of the Governor-General and Council was derived—so it imposed awe and veneration upon the Court of Directors. They ventured not to originate any measure for staying the unwarranted proceedings of the Supreme Court; and could think of no better expedient, than that of praying the ministry to perform this important service in their behalf.

The Directors represented to the ministry, that the *Zemindars*, *huzars*, and other occupiers of land, against whom, writs, at the suit of natives, had been issued into all parts of the provinces, it was not the intention of the legislature to submit to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court; that the proceedings, by which they were hurried to a great distance from their houses, their persons arrested, and a long confinement in the common goal inflicted upon them, appeared to be replete with irregularity and injustice; that the parties are "sure to suffer every distress and oppression with which the attorneys of the court can easily contrive to harass and intimidate them," before the question whether they are subject or not to the jurisdiction of the court can be so much as touched; that after pleading to the jurisdiction, they are sure of an adverse decision, "unless they are able to prove a negative; that is, unless a native of Bengal is able, from an act of parliament, which the Governor-General and Council have declared liable to different constructions, to prove himself not subject to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court;" that the consequences were in the highest degree alarming, as almost all the *Zemindars* in the country, standing in the same predicament, felt themselves exposed to the same dangers; as the disgust and hatred of the natives were excited by the violation of their customs and laws;

and the collection of the revenue was impeded, and even threatened with suspension.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1261.

They represented also, that the Supreme Court, beside extending its jurisdiction to such persons, had extended it also to such things, as it was clearly the intention of the legislature to exempt from it: that these were "the working, management, and government of the territorial revenues," including the process which that ordering and government required: that over this department the whole Bench of Judges had declared their resolution to exercise a power, superior to that of the Company: that, accordingly, the process of the ordinary Revenue Courts was opposed; persons whom they had confined being released by the Supreme Court; suits which were cognizable in none but the Revenue Courts being instituted and entertained in the Supreme Court; prosecutions being carried on by the Supreme Court against the Judges of the Revenue Courts, for acts done in the regular performance of the business of the Court; farmers of the revenue, who had fallen into arrears, refusing to obey the process of the Revenue Courts, and threatening the Judges with prosecution in the Supreme Court, if any coercive proceedings were employed: that in consequence of these acts, in some instances, the operation of the Revenue Courts was suspended; in others, the very existence of Courts destroyed: and that the Governor-General and Council, in their capacity of a Court of Appeal, or *Sadder Dewannee Adalat*, were discouraged from the exercise of this important jurisdiction, under the apprehension that their powers might be disputed, and their decrees annulled.¹

Under the third head of complaint, the Directors represented that the Supreme Court had, on the pretext of requiring evidence, demanded the production in Court of papers liable to contain the most secret transactions of the

¹ Observed in p. 505. For that such was indeed intended to do, in the Declaration of Proceedings for giving to the people of India the benefits of law. From the first session, of 1793, Judges of the H. C. p. 505-51. The Court of Sadler Dewannee intended never acted, and for it that number of cases, which improved till a new regulation, nothing was provided to supply its place. A suspension from the duties of Judges the H. C. and the Supreme Court took place in the year 1795. The Court said that the Council, has a right to reserve appeals in all cases in which the Provincial Councils had a *Peep* jurisdiction. This the Council treated as a denial of any right at all: so the Court, by not telling what they meant by "legal," and reserving to themselves a right of deciding, without rule, on each case which occurred, had the power of deciding what they pleased.

BOOK V.
 CHAP. VI.
 1781.

government; that the Secretary of the Council was served with the writ called the *ad paper damp facere*, and attending the Court without the papers, was informed that he had brought upon himself all the damages of the suit; that upon his representing the impossibility of his producing in Court the records of the Council which the Council had forbidden to be so produced, he was ordered to declare which of the Members of the Council voted for the refusal of the papers, and which (if any) for the production; and that upon his demurring to such a question a positive answer was demanded, and every Member of the Council who had concurred in the refusal was declared liable for an action; that the Council agreed to send such extracts as had a reference to the matter in dispute, but persisted in the refusal to exhibit their records; that at this species of demand various instances occurred; and that it was manifestly impossible for the Board to deliberate and act as a Council of State, and as the administrative organ of government, if publication of their minutes might at any time be called for, and if every Member was answerable, in an action of damages, for any measure in which he concurred, to as many persons as might think themselves aggrieved by it.

In the fourth place, the Directors represented, That the penal law of England was utterly repugnant to those laws and customs by which the people of India had been hitherto governed; that, nevertheless, Maha Raja Nancomar, a native of high rank in Bengal, was indicted, tried, convicted, and executed, for an offence, which was not capital by the laws of the country where the offence was committed; that if the court was unable to mitigate the punishment, it might have deemed it prudent to use its power of respite till the pleasure of the King was known; that this the Directors "conceived to be a matter of the most serious importance, and big with consequences the most alarming to the natives of India; that the Judges seemed to have laid it down as a general principle, in their proceedings against Nancomar, that all the criminal law of England is in force and binding, upon all the inhabitants within the circle of their jurisdiction in Bengal." The Directors, therefore, assure the Minister to consider what will be the conse-

quences, if this principle, and the example grounded upon it, were followed up with consistency. "Can it be just," they say, "as possible, to introduce all the different species of felony created by what is called the *Black Act*—or to involve, as what is called the *Country Act* involves, offences of different degrees in one common punishment?—or to introduce the endless and almost irreparable distinctions by which certain acts are or are not burglary?" They ask whether Indian offenders, of a certain description, were to be transported to his Majesty's colonies in America, or sent to work upon the river Thames? And whether every man convicted for the first time of bigamy, "which is allowed, protected, nay almost commended by their law, should be burnt in the hand if he can read, and hanged if he cannot read?" "These," they add, are only some of the consequences which we conceive must follow, if the criminal law of England be suffered to remain in force upon the natives of Bengal. If it were legal to try, to convict, and execute Karamaram for forgery, on the Statute of George II., it must, as we conceive, be equally legal, to try, convict and to punish the Subadar of Bengal, and all his court, for bigamy, upon the statute of James I."

On the 2nd of January, 1777, a suit was instituted before the Provincial Council at Patna, which afforded occasion to the Supreme Court of carrying the extension of their powers to a height more extraordinary than they had before attempted. A person of some distinction and property, a native Mahomedan, died, leaving a widow, and a nephew, who for some time had lived with him, in the apparent capacity of his heir, and adopted son. The widow claimed the whole of the property, on the strength of a will, which she affirmed the husband had made in her favour. The nephew, who disputed the will, both on the suspicion of forgery, and on the fact of the mental imbecility of his uncle for some time previous to his death, claimed in like manner the whole of the estate as adopted son and heir of the deceased.

For investigation of the causes, the decision of which depended upon the principles of the Mahomedan law, the Provincial Council were assisted by native lawyers, by whose opinion in matters of law it was their duty to

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.

1784.

be guided. In the present instance, the Council of Poona deputed a Cames and two Muftees, by a precept or *per-wanah*, in the Persian language, directing them to take an account of the estate and effects of the deceased, and secure them against encroachment; to inquire into the claims of the parties; to follow strictly the rules of Mohammedan Law; and report to the Council their proceedings. In all this, nothing appeared which was not according to the approved and established mode of procedure.

On the 20th of January, the Cames and Muftees, having finished the inquiry, delivered their report; in which, after a statement of the evidence adduced, they declare their opinion, that neither the widow, nor the nephew, had established their claims, and that the inheritance should be divided according to the principles provided by the Mohammedan law for those cases in which a man dies without children and without a will; in other words, that it should be divided into four shares; of which one should be given to the widow, and three to the brother of the deceased, who was next of kin, and father of the nephew who claimed as adopted son. Upon a review of the proceedings of the native Judges, and a hearing of the parties, the Provincial Council confirmed the decree, and ordered the division of the inheritance to be carried into effect. They did more: as it appeared from the evidence, that part of the effects of the deceased had been secured by the widow, before they could be secured by the Judges, and that both the will, and another deed which she produced, were forged, they put her five principal agents under confinement, till they should account for the goods; and directed that they should be afterwards delivered to the Phoenixary, to take their trial for forgery.

It is to be observed, that the widow had appeared all these proceedings from the beginning, not by course of law, but such irregular and violent acts, as suggested themselves to an angry and ignorant mind. When called upon by the Cames to appear, in the usual manner, a *vakool*, or representative, to act in her behalf, she positively refused; and when the Cames recommended to her a relative who had lived in the house, was much in her confidence, and acted as her principal agent, she persisted

in her refusal, but won her soul, with a message that the Judges might appoint him if they pleased. Upon the arrival of the Cuzco and Mafton to carry the decree of the Council into execution, the widow resisted. The Cuzco and Mafton proceeded to enforce the orders under which they acted. The widow, contrary to their request and remonstrances, left the house, and betook herself to an *ayllari* of Palquera, which was in the neighbourhood, carrying along with her certain title-deeds and two female slaves. The Cuzco and Mafton divided the remaining effects, upon the valuation of appraisers mutually chosen by the parties, into four shares, of which the value of the widow chose one for her, and the rest were set apart for the brother of the deceased. The widow refused to submit to the division, or to accept of her share. She also refused to give up the title deeds, which she had carried away, or the female slaves. In consequence of this proceeding, a petition was presented to the Council, by the nephew, representing that she had not complied with the decree, but by standing, reflected, according to the Mohammedan laws, disgrace upon the family, and praying that she might be compelled to deliver up the papers and slaves, and to return to the house, under his protection as representative of the law. An order was directed by the Council to comply with this request. After some time, another petition was presented by the nephew, complaining that the Cuzco and Mafton had not yet complied with the injunctions of the Board. Upon this, the Council agreed, that the Cuzco should be reprimanded for his delay, and directed to proceed immediately in the execution of his orders. The Cuzco represented by counsel, that he had not only made frequent demands upon the widow, but had placed hussards to watch her, and that, in his opinion, that species of constraint which was authorized by the Mohammedan law, and customary in the country, namely, retention from all intercourse by a guard of soldiers, was necessary to be applied. The guard was ordered, and continued for a space of six weeks. The widow still refused compliance, and at that time the guard was withdrawn.

The widow was advised to bring an action in the Supreme Court, against the nephew, the Cuzco, and Mafton,

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1798.

BOOK V. on the ground of their proceedings in the cause, and laid
 CHAP. XL. her damages at 500,000 sicca rupees, about 66,000*l.* The
 1781. objection taken, on the part of the nephews, to the jurisdiction of the court, the judges overruled, on the pretence that every member was a servant of the Company.¹ The justification set up for the Causes and Mustees was, that they had acted regularly, in their judicial capacity, in obedience to the lawful orders of their legal superiors; that the Provincial Councils were vested with a power of determining suits between the natives, with the advice and assistance of the native lawyers; that the established mode in which the Provincial Councils availed themselves of that advice and assistance was, by directing them to hear the parties, to collect the evidence, and to deliver as a report of the whole, comprehending the opinion of the decision which ought to be pronounced; which decision the Council, upon a review of the whole, or with the addition of such other inquiries as they might think the case required, affirmed, or altered, subject only to an appeal to the Governor and Council: and that a judge acting in his judicial capacity could not be responsible in damages to those who might suffer by the execution of his decrees.

This defence, which to the eye of reason appears appropriate and irrefragable, the Court treated with the utmost contempt; and upon a ground which rouses surprise and indignation. A form of words, among the numerous loose expressions, which fall from the lips and pens of English lawyers, without any binding authority, or any defined and consistent application, occurred to the judges. This was the phrase, *Delegatus non potest delegare*, "he who is delegated cannot delegate." And upon this, and no other reason, so much as alleged, they decreed, that the Causes and Mustees, for acting regularly, acting as they were obliged to act, and had in fact been accustomed to act ever since the jurisdiction of the country had passed under English control, were liable to actions of damages at the suit of every person whom their proceedings displeased,

¹ This decision greatly increased the alarm among the lawyers and other underlings. In the province of Bihar they have, in a petition to the Governor and Council, praying for redress against the process of the Supreme Court, or if that could not be granted, for leave to redelegate their duties, that they might retire to some other country. Report, at Supra, p. 6, Pains Appendix, No. 14.

that is, one at least of the parties in almost every case. It would be absurd to attempt, by illustration, to render more apparent the deformities of this proceeding. To quote a maxim of English law, though ever so high in authority, and favorable in its force, as a ground for condemning in India a flagrant violation of natural equity amongst persons who knew not the English law, nor owed its authority, was an act of chicanery, which the history of judicial encroachments, such as it is in examples of injustice, cannot frequently surpass. It is, however, a maxim, of which, even where admissible, the authority is so little diminished, that, like many more, with which the appetite of judges for power is in England so quietly gratified, it has just as little weight or as much, as, in each particular instance, the judge may happen to please. And in a variety of remarkable cases, the established course of English law goes directly against it.¹

Deciding, upon the strength of this assemblage of words, that the provincial council could not delegate any authority to the native magistrates, even as their agents; and hence that every thing which these assistant magistrates had performed was without authority, the Supreme Court thought proper to enter minutely and laboriously into the whole of the case, and, after voluminous proceedings, gave judgment against the defendants, damages 300,000 rupees, and costs 9,000, amounting to the sum of about 30,000l.²

At the commencement of the suit, a capias was granted with a habile corpus. A bailiff proceeded from Calcutta, and arrested at Patna the nephew, and also the Chama, as he was returning from his duty in one of the courts of

¹ In Chancery for example; where cases are decided by the Chancellor to the Equity, whose proceedings are bound in volumes with cases, &c., in his own name, law records, which cases are sent to arbitration, &c.

² In the judicial proceedings, all the testimony which, one of its faithful sources, the *Farman*, about justice, is of the nature of deeds, was, I said, copied, with papers, and with the effect, upon the defendants. For *Justice*, on his own part, quoted these, were, "Where it is attempted, to mitigate the damages, by showing the circumstances they were influenced by, but absent of their nature, also reasons by the rules of equity. Particularly they were not able to prove, if a personal delegation of authority, to act for him, by a woman of rank, who could not act, if without dispute, the justice was of her own nature, as the law being required, as an legal evidence in his conduct. With this defect fell the whole of his conduct. Hence the damages were from some papers not being produced, others being false copies, when the real damages were the original." (*Farman*, 1790, No. 35. The *Farman* Appendix is a rich mine of information respecting the tenets of English law.

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1741.

justice. The bail demanded was 400,000 rupes, or about 44,000*l.* The Council of Patna, struck with consternation, at the probable effects of so extraordinary a procedure, upon the minds of the people, upon the authority of government, upon the collection of the revenue, and upon the administration of justice, which it threatened to stop, by deterring the native lawyers and judges from yielding their services, resolved, as the best expedient which the nature of the case afforded, to offer bail for the prisoners, who, after a confinement of some time, in boats upon the river, were enlarged. The Governor-General and Council, as soon as they were informed of these proceedings, resolved, "That as the defendants are presented for a regular and legal act of government in the execution of a judicial decree (except one of them,¹ the plaintiff in the suit before Dewaness Adwain at Patna, whose arrest is not for any apparent cause) they be supported and indemnified by government from all consequences from which they are to legally indemnified."² Judgment being given, the defendants were put under a guard of Sepoys, that they might be conveyed to Calcutta, to be surrendered. The Causee, an old man, who had been chief Causee of the province for many years, was unable to endure the vexation and fatigue; and he expired by the way. The rest were carried to Calcutta, and lodged in the common goal, where they remained till relieved by the interference of the British parliament in 1781. By that authority, a pecuniary compensation was awarded to them, for their losses and hardships; and the Muftees were ordered to be not only reinstated in their former situation and condition, but to be elevated to the office of Mohammodan councillors to the court and council of Patna.

The Supreme Court and the widow were not satisfied with these proceedings against the native magistrates: an action was also brought against Mr. Law, and two other members of the provincial council at Patna. And this prosecution was instituted for official acts performed in

¹ I. e. the nephew.

² The Governor-General, though, in his opinion, the examination of witnesses was a part of the procedure which the Council should not have delegated, not only affirmed the power of delegation, but his constitution of the majority of the deputies to which, in this case, the Council had recurs. See his letter to Mr. Law, Patna, Sept. 28, 1.

the Company's service, the Governor General and Council BOOK V
 thought it fit that the Company should bear the burden of PART VI.
 their defence. Here too the Court decided in favour of 1781.
 the party who brought it jurisdiction: and awarded damages to the amount of 11,000 rupees, which money was paid from the Company's treasury.

It was in this manner, that a thirst for jurisdiction incited the English judges to interfere with the administration of justice in the native civil courts. The following is the manner in which it induced them to interfere with the jurisdiction of the native criminal courts. From a former statement it will be recollected, that the system of criminal jurisdiction among the natives had been left by the Company nearly upon the footing, on which they found it, and on which it had long been established in the country. It was a branch of authority which was reserved to the Nabob in his character of *Nazim*. The judges of the courts (they were known by the name of *Phoujdary Courts*) were appointed by the *Nazir Sahib*, or Nabob's deputy, by whom their proceedings were reviewed and controlled. They were entirely independent of all other authority, and it does appear that, considered as Indians, justice was administered in them without any peculiar strain of abuse. About the middle of the year 1777, an attorney of the Supreme Court took up his residence at *Dacca*. In the month of September of that year, this attorney proceeded to execute a process of arrest, issued by one of the judges of the Supreme Court, against the *Dewan*, or principal public officer of the *Phoujdary Court* at *Dacca*. The process was issued at the suit of a man of the low rank of a *pyla*, or messenger, who had been prosecuted in the *Phoujdary Court* for a misdemeanour, convicted, and confined till he made restitution. The action was brought against the principal officer of the court, for trespass and false imprisonment, in the execution of this decree. A native, employed by the attorney as a *baillif*, who proceeded to the house of the *Phoujdary*, or chief criminal judge, entered the hall of audience in which the *Phoujdary* was sitting with several of his friends, and the principal officers of his court: and attempted, in a violent and disrespectful manner, to seize the person of his *Dewan*, or principal agent. It is to be observed, that in India, a

BOOK V.

CHAP. VI.

1781.

man considers an indignity offered to his servants, as in reality offered to himself. No writ or warrant, it was affirmed, was produced by the bailiff; and he was not allowed to perform the arrest. Upon this the attorney proceeded to the house of the Phoujdar, in person, accompanied by a crowd of attendants, and entered it in a forcible manner, by breaking down the gate. To now violated the sanctuary of his house, the mysterious repository of his wives, is a disgrace to a Mussulman more dreadful than death. The reserves of Eastern manners, and the respect bestowed upon the very walls which contain the sacred deposit of the master, render the forcible entrance of a house an event which occurs only in the excesses of the most violent hostility. It is one of the last outrages which may be expected at the hands of an implacable foe. When the Phoujdar of Dacca, therefore, beheld his gate broken down, and an irregular crowd of men bursting into his house, the greatest calamity which could befall him rushed naturally upon his apprehension; and he proceeded to repel a danger, which every honourable Mussulman would resist at the expense of his life. An affray arose in the court of the house. The father of the Phoujdar received a wound in the head, from a sword by an attendant of the attorney; and the brother-in-law, of the Phoujdar was dangerously wounded in the body with a pistol-shot, by the attorney himself.

Mr. Justice Hyde, one of the judges of the Supreme Court, wrote, after hearing of these facts, to the military officer upon the spot, instructing him to afford assistance to the attorney, and adds, "I beg the favour of you, for fear my letters to him should not be suffered to come safe, to tell him, that I highly approve his conduct, and doubt not that he will receive proper support from the court whose officer he is."¹

It is unnecessary in this case any further to pursue the proceedings of the attorney or his court. The Provincial Council gave bail for the Dewan; transmitted to the Governor-General and Council an account of the facts; and they concluded their letter in the following words: "It is fitting we should point out to your notice, that all criminal justice is at a stand, and seems not likely to be resumed,

¹ Report, *ut supra*, p. 24.

until the decisive consequences of the present dispute shall be publicly declared and known. It touches the very existence of government throughout the province, that the jurisdiction of the Pleader, and his superior, the Saib Subah, be admitted; free from all doubt or ambiguity. Now, otherwise, can it be supposed, a Pleader will perform any function of his office? How presume to execute a criminal convicted, and sentenced to death by the established laws of the government and his religion, if he is liable himself to stand to actions of damages, or to answer to a criminal accusation, according to the laws of England, for any punishment he may inflict? Plead to yourselves, gentlemen, the anarchy and distraction which may arise, if the present uncertainties are not effectually removed!"

In England, one of the notions which judges, and other lawyers, see in most particular manner eager to stamp upon the public mind is, That the administration of justice is to a most astonishing degree sensitive and delicate. That the acts and character of judges should be treated with exquisite, indeed a religious, respect. That they can hardly bear to be exposed to criticism, or blame in the slightest degree. And that, if the criticism is to any considerable degree searching and severe, it ought to be repressed and punished, however just, with terrifying penalties. This doctrine, which is so very valuable to the judges in England, and so very favourable to all the abuses of their power, we see in what respect they themselves retain, when their power may be enlarged, by usurping upon it in the first, by annihilating the power and the dignity of the whole order of judges by whom law was administered to a great people.

These are specimens of the manner in which the Supreme Court in India abstracted to carry their powerments into effect. And specimens are all which here it is possible to adduce. A summary of the principal instances in one department, I am happy to be able to present in the words of Mr. Bosc, the great law-officer of the Company themselves. "Persons confined by the courts of Dewanne Adawlat are collusively arrested by process from Calcutta, or removed by *Misbehav* Corps, where the language is an unknown to the power of the court. The process is closed to terrify the people; frequent arrests made for the same

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1781.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1781.

cases; and there is an instance of the purchaser of a Zemindary near Dacca, who was ruined by suits commenced by peasants, suits derived from claims prior to his purchase, and who was at last condemned in considerable damages for an ordinary act of authority in his station. Hence the natives of all ranks became fearful to act in the collection of the revenues. The rioters, and even hereditary Zemindars, are driven away, or arrested at the time of the collections, and the crops ruined. If a farm is sold, on default of payment, the new farmer is ruined, and disgraced. Ejectments are brought, for land decreed in the *Dewanee Adawlat*. A Talookdar is ruined by the expense of pleading to the jurisdiction, though he prevails. And, in an action, where 400 rupees were recovered, the costs exceeded 1,000 rupees. When to these abuses, incident to the institution of the court itself, and derived from distance, and the invincible ignorance of the natives respecting the laws and practice of the court, we add the disgrace brought on the higher orders, it will not, perhaps, be rash to affirm, that confusion in the provinces, and a prodigious loss of revenue, must be the inevitable consequence of upholding this jurisdiction. The Zemindar of Duckessanagepore, upon pretence that he had been arrested, and afterwards rescued, has his house broke open, and even the apartments of his women rudely violated. Another Zemindar surrenders himself to prison, to avoid the like disgrace to his family.*

"We have seen with astonishment," say the Governor-General and Council, "process of contempt ordered in one instance, and civil process issued in another, against the Neth Nasia of three provinces residing at Moorshedabad, a party not owing allegiance to the King, nor obedience to his laws; deriving no benefit or security whatever, in life or member, in house, liberty, or fortune, from the administration of justice under the authority of these laws; a party, it is worth attention, who is the chief magistrate of criminal jurisdiction throughout the provinces, and in whose jurisdiction in matters of criminal cognisance the judges have not only at all times acquiesced, but in a particular instance have actually resorted to it, in aid and exoneration of themselves."[†]

* See a very important Letter from the Governor-General and Council to the Court of Directors, dated Fort William, 15th January, 1786, Report, *et supra*, General Appendix, No. 15.

At length a case arose, in which the disputes between the executive and judicial powers reached a crisis. Upon the 13th of August, 1773, a suit was commenced in the Supreme Court, against the Raja of Coimbatore, by Commissioner Baker, his agent at Calcutta. Upon the affidavit of Coimbatore, a capias was ordered to issue, in which bail to the amount of £30,000 was allowed to be taken. The Raja absconded, to avoid the execution of the writ, and was unable to fulfil his duty, as Zamindar, in the government of the country, and the collection of its revenues. The writ of capias having been returned as unexecuted, on account of the concealment of the Zamindar, another writ was issued to sequester his land and effects. For the execution of this writ, the Sheriff de-patched to Coimbatore an armed force, consisting of sixty men, headed by a sergeant of the court. It was represented by the Raja, that they entered the house, and endeavoured to pass into the *Zorana*, or women's apartment; that of the servants of the Raja, who attempted to prevent the dishonour of their master, several were beaten and wounded; that the party then broke open and forcibly entered his *Zamana*, and plundered his effects; that they committed outrages upon his place of religious worship, and swept it of its ornaments; and that a stop was put to the collections, and the farmers prohibited from paying him their rents.

Upon the first intimation of this procedure, the Governor-General and Council, by the advice of the Advocate-General, had come to the resolution of instructing the Raja not to recognise the authority of the court, or to pay obedience to its process; and orders were sent to the officer commanding the troops at Malabar, to intercept the party of the Sheriff, and detain them in his custody till further orders. The orders arrived too late to prevent the outrage committed upon the house of the Raja; but afterwards the whole of the party were seized¹.

Affairs having come to this extremity, the Governor-General and Council issued a notification, to all Zamindars, Chaudhies, and Talukdars, in the three provinces, that, except in the two cases of being British servants, or bound

¹ The substance of this is not stated by the Chief Justice. His only allusion upon the subject is, "which was ordered." See his Letter to Lord Sutherland, Coimbatore Appendix, No. 26.

BOOK V. by their own agreement, they were not to consider them-
CHAP. VI. selves as subject to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court,
 1581. or to obey its process; and the provincial chiefs were forbidden to lend a military force to aid the Court in carrying its mandates into effect.

A rule was granted by the Supreme Court to show cause why an attachment should not issue against the Company's attorney, and the officers who were immediately instrumental in seizing the Sheriff's officers and their attendants at Cossyade. The officers were instructed, by the Governor-General and Council, to resist the execution of any writ, which had a reference to acts done in obedience to their orders in seizing the persons in question. But the attorney was committed to the common goal of Calcutta for contempt, and a criminal prosecution carried on against him. Upon this, even Mr. Ross remarks,¹ "I am sorry to observe, that the judges, at this period, seemed to have lost all temper, particularly in the severe and unexampled manner of confining Mr. Naylor, attorney to the Company, who newly received information from the office of the number of men employed by the Sheriff, and once gave directions to the talukdar of the Zemindar to withhold his warrant of attorney;—both, acts done in obedience to the Governor-General and Council."

The Governor-General and Council themselves were at last individually served with a summons from the Supreme Court of Judicature, to answer to Constant Baboo, in a plea of trespass; but finding that the suit was brought against them for acts done in their collective capacity, as the governing organ of the country, they delivered, by the Company's counsel, a declaration that they would submit to no proceeding of the Court, in any prosecution against them as individuals, for acts done by them as Governor-General and Council, acts to which the jurisdiction of the Court did not extend.

These proceedings were not brought to this stage, before the middle of March, 1780; and in the meantime a petition to parliament had been prepared and signed, by the principal British inhabitants in Bengal, against the exercise which the Supreme Court of Judicature made of their power: and this, together with a petition from the Governor-General, and members of the Supreme Council, and

¹ Report of Mr. Ross, *et supra*.

also a petition from the Company itself, was presented in 1785, and referred to the Select Committee, which afterwards reported at such length on Indian affairs. In defence of the Supreme Court, the only matter which appears, with the exception of the speeches of the Judges in Court, which refer only to the grounds of their proceedings in special cases, is contained in these letters of the Chief Justice, addressed to Lord Viscount Weymouth, Secretary of State; see dated the 25th of March, 1785, and the other two dated the 1st and 12th of March, 1786. In vindication of the attempt to force the jurisdiction of the Court upon the Zemindars, it is affirmed that although, as Zemindars, they are not subject to that jurisdiction, yet, as receivers and collectors of the revenue, they are included in the description of servants of the Company. And it cannot be denied that the vague and inaccurate phraseology of the act, a species of phraseology which forms so remarkable a characteristic of the language of the English law, and is the source of so many evils, did leave open a door to the dispute, and to all the mischief which it produced, and which it threatened to produce; though it is clear as day, from the general import of the act, that no such jurisdiction was intended to be given. To the allegation of the unachievable consequences which would ensue, and which were proved to be so extensive and alarming, the Chief Justice offers an reply. If there is a verbal, or technical reason, to justify the exercise of his power, the consequences, in regard to the happiness or misery of others, are what, from his habits, must to an English Judge appear, in general, as in the present case, very much a matter of indifference. To the accusation of interfering with the administration of criminal justice in the native courts, over which the Supreme Court had undeniably no control, the only defence which is offered by the Chief Justice is, that in those tribunals justice was administered very ill. It is, however, abundantly certain, that totally to destroy those tribunals by prosecuting the Judges in the Supreme Court, when, having destroyed them, it was impossible for that Court to substitute any thing in their room, was not the way to improve the administration of justice. If these native Courts were susceptible of reform, as must assuredly they were, though,

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1781.

BOOK V.
CHAP. V.
1762.

considering the state of society and the former capriciousness of the people, there was at this particular period some ground for praise as well as for blame, it would have been a fit and noble exercise for the mind of the Chief Justice and his brethren, to have formed an excellent plan for the administration of justice among the natives, and to have recommended it with all the weight of their authority to parliament and the Company.

The motive in this case, which guided to so desperate a line of conduct, cannot be mistaken, and ought not with hypocrisy to be disguised. It was not any conception of good; it was not ignorance of the evil; for it was too obvious to be misunderstood. It was the appetite for power, and the appetite for profit. The power sufficiently visible and extraordinary; the profit more concealed.¹ Nor can the pleasure of exercising unbounded sway, through the forms of administering law, be justly regarded as a foolish indulgence. We see wind, in this instance, it was capable of producing. And a faithful history of the law of England would exhibit no less wonderful proofs, in the misery which it has brought, and still obstinately binds, upon the people of England. Of this important inlet of evil, with which the British legislators ought to have been well acquainted, they appear, in forming the act for the administration of justice in India, to have had no remembrance or regard. And even when they set that important example of cutting off the direct profit of the Judges in the plunder of the sailors, by depriving them of all direct share in the fees; they did not cut off an indirect profit of no trifling importance, by allowing them to create offices, with emoluments derived from fees;

¹ Although these motives may have occasionally influenced the conduct of the judges, yet it were more charitable to refer their unbecomable pretensions to the vicinity of their position, and their consequent ignorance of their relative and absolute duties. They were English lawyers, but were sent out to administer English law; they had been citizens in a hot bed of no competition, violence and persecution. They knew nothing of India, had never heard of Hindu or Mohammedan law, and would have despised it if they saw. They had been accustomed to know that gross abuses of law and justice prevailed in India, and they imagined it to be their first of duties to show that they would resolutely assert the powers which they thought they possessed, for the recovery of the principles of the law, and what they conceived to be requisite for protecting the interests of society. That they administered a mixture of justice of their own dignity, and an equally unbounded violence, for the Company's discommodities, originated in the same cause, and to ignorance may be referred the origin of their intemperance and intemperance.—H.

offices of which they enjoyed the patronage, itself a valuable power, and of which they could not fail to discover various ways of disposing for their own advantage. They still, therefore, retained an interest, and a very distinct and operative interest, in the amount of the fees which might be gathered in the Court; and the candour is missing with which the Chief Justice bewails the decline of those profits, as one of the principal evils, if not the only evil, for he scarcely specifies another, which spring from the measures taken to circumscribe the jurisdiction of the Court. "But one term," he says, "has intervened, and the business of the Court, as I estimate, has fallen off near one-third, and in a term or two, when the causes already commenced are got rid of, I expect it will be reduced to the level of a few causes arising in Calcutta. The advocates, attorneys, and officers of the court, who have not already succumbed, will be reduced to a most deplorable condition. The attorneys have petitioned us, that on account of the difficulty of their procuring substantance in the present state of things, their numbers may not be increased by new admissions. Though persons may come from England so qualified and recommended, that we may not be able to comply with this requisition, yet I really apprehend we shall do them little service by admitting them; for, it seems to me, it will be only to give them the privilege of starving in company with the present attorneys." That there might be great abundance of advocates and attorneys, and that they, and the officers, in regard to whom the Court possessed the patronage, might be richly rewarded, appeared to the Chief Justice a sufficient reason why his court should retain a jurisdiction remote to the country. One of the worst effects of an excellent administration of justice, the diminution of the number of law-suits, that is, the diminution of the business of the Courts; an effect which, if produced by the proper cause, is so highly to be desired, is here set down by the judge as one of the greatest evils. It is no wonder. It was an effect directly contrary to his profit and power. And it may with assurance be expected, that judges who enjoy the profits of a defective and vicious

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.

1781

¹ Report, at supra. Letter from Sir Ralph Bayly to Lord W. Russell, 2nd March, 1788.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.

1781.

system of law, will regard as an evil whatever has any tendency to lessen those profits; that is, any tendency to purify the law of its profitable defects.¹

At this stage of the discussions, respecting the administration of justice, a considerable alteration in the constitution of the tribunals in the civil department of the native law, was brought forward by the Governor-General, and adopted by the Council. According to the regulations of 1773, this department was wholly administered by the Provincial Councils, sitting as *Dewanee Adalats*, or Courts of Civil Judicature. It was now, on the 11th of April, 1780, arranged, that the business of these Courts should be divided into two parts; that which peculiarly concerned the revenue, and that which peculiarly concerned individuals. A separate Court, styled *Dewanee Adalat*, was established for the cognizance of such disputes as arose between individuals: all such disputes as respected the revenue continued subject exclusively to the jurisdiction of the Provincial Councils. The new tribunals were severally composed of one nominated servant of the Company, who was not a member of the Provincial Council, nor dependant upon it; and denominated superintendent of the *Dewanee Adalat*. The reason adduced for this alteration was, to exonerate the Provincial Councils from part of their burden, and afford them more time for attending to the important business of the revenue.

About the same time, an expedient, of which the foregoing alteration was probably conceived as a subsidiary portion, suggested itself to the mind of the Governor-General for neutralizing the animosities which prevailed between the Sovereign Council and the Supreme Court;

¹ Some opinion may be formed of the sort of law with which the defence of the Judge was drawn up, by the interpretation which he made of it. He thus describes the circumstances of the *Putra* case. "A widow of an orphan of the village, in whose lot husband had, by death received in his life-time, given personal efforts to the name of some loss of money, and a considerable landed property, was, under process, that the debts had been liquid, though proof was made to the contrary, plundered and strip of the world estate, turned out without food or clothing from the palace streets, compelled to take refuge in a convent articulated by thieves, and to depend upon their charity for subsistence, &c. . . . This action was *Shroff* brought against *Shroff Aggar*, who was the Council of *Putra* had, formerly in their legal situation, appeared to hear and determine a *putra*," &c. &c. Later from Sir E. Smyth to Lord Weymouth, 25th Dec. 1779. " *Shroff Aggar* "—this is the appropriate name he bestows on the Magistrate and Judge of the highest respectability in the country. " *Shroff and Shroff* "—this is what he affirms, though he knew that they only collected evidence and reported.

and thereby for terminating their disputes. He denied the plan of creating a Court for the Chief Justice, with a large allowance both of power and emolument, dependent on the pleasure of the executive power. The scheme was conducted in the following manner. Along with the establishment of the Provincial Deemance Adalats in 1773, had been appointed a Sudder Deemance Adalat at the Presidency, the object of which was to receive appeals from the Provincial Adalats. The Sudder Deemance Adalat was to consist of the Governor-General and Council in person; but up to this time they had not so much as entered upon the discharge of the functions of this Court; although the Governor-General declared, and the declaration ought not to pass without remark, that, if one-half of the time of the Council were devoted to this Court, its important duties could not be adequately discharged.* If a judicial function of the highest importance, for which there was so extensive a demand, was left for seven years totally undischarged, what an opinion is it proper we should form of the situation of justice during all that time? And what opinion are we to form of a Governor-General and Council, who let justice remain in that situation? If they had time for the duties of the office (and few of the duties of government could be more important), they were unreasonable for not applying it, if they had not time, they were unreasonable for not devising and executing another plan.

In consultation on the 23rd of September, 1780, the Governor-General introduced a minute, in which he stated, that the arrangement, established a few months before, respecting the Courts of civil law, had produced not the most desirable effects, but a great deal of inconvenience. "The institution," he said, "of the new Courts of Deemance Adalat, has already given occasion to very troublesome and alarming competition between them and the Provincial Councils, and too much waste of time at this Board." He represented it as the business of the Sudder Deemance Adalat, not only to receive appeals from these Courts, but to superintend their conduct, revise their proceedings, remedy their defects; and, generally, to form

BOOK V,
CHAP. VI.
1781.

* Governor-General's Minute in consultation, 23rd September, 1780. See First Report of the Select Committee, 1780, Appendix, No. 2.

BOOK V,
CHAP. VI.

1781.

such new regulations and checks, as experience shall prove to be necessary to the purpose of their institution. He affirmed, that it was impossible for the Council of Government to spare time from its other functions for this important duty; and thus made two declarations; one, that respecting the disorders of the Dewanee Adaulah; another, this respecting the Court of Appeal: and both expressive of the miserable thought, which attended his own attempts at legislation. He therefore proposed, That the constitution of the Sadder Dewanee Adaulah should be totally changed. That it should not consist of the Governor-General and Council: but that the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Judicature should be vested with all its powers. A large salary was intended to be annexed to the office; but that, for politic reasons, was not as yet proposed. And it was expressly regulated, that the Chief Justice should enjoy the office and the salary, during the pleasure of the Governor-General and Council. The happy effects which the Governor-General represented as about to flow from this arrangement, were these; that when the Chief Justice possessed the superintendence of the Dewanee Adaulah, that is, obtained the choice portion of their power, the Supreme Court would no longer interfere in their jurisdiction; that when the Chief Justice obtained this addition of power, with the large salary which would attend it, and held them both at the pleasure of the Council, it "would prove an instrument of conciliation between the Council and the Court," and prevent "those dangerous consequences to the peace and resources of the government, which every member of the Board," he said, "foreboded from the contest in which they had been unfortunately engaged with the Court." The insinuation which was essentially involved in this proposition, and which the Governor-General cast upon the Chief Justice, was the most dishonourable, that ever was thrown upon the character of the most infamous of men. The Chief Justice, in extending so vehemently the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court, had affirmed, That it was an imperious sense of duty which thus restrained him to act; That by the King whose servant he was, and the Act of Parliament which constituted the Court over which he was placed, the

boundaries of his jurisdiction, that is, of his sacred duties, were assigned and marked out, that from these duties it was not optional for him to recede; that the Judges of the Supreme Court of Judicature were strictly bound to occupy every portion of the field allotted to them; and could not abandon any part of it, either from respect for the Governor-General and Council, or on account of any contingent effects which the discharge of their co-operative duties might be supposed to produce. Yet, what did the proposition of the Governor-General to the Council infer? That if they gave to the Chief Justice a sufficient quantity of power, and of money, dependent upon their will, the Chief Justice would confine the pretensions of the Supreme Court within any limits which they might wish to impose. It might naturally have been objected, that to such a proposition the Chief Justice would never consent. But Mr. Hastings, it would appear, was better acquainted with the circumstances of the case: for the Chief Justice immediately discovered, that infinite advantage would arise from the plan. The proposition was, indeed, opposed, with strong arguments, by Mr. Francis and Mr. Wadley. They insisted, that if the *Dewanee Adawlat* were defective institutions, this was not the proper course for their amendment; that if the authority of the Governor-General and Council, under which they acted, was doubtful, resting, as Mr. Hastings, to recommend his measure, had asserted, on the disputed construction of an Act of Parliament, the authority of the Council to make the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court Judge of the *Residder Dewanee Adawlat* could not be less than equally doubtful, and the Chief Justice, by accepting the office, would acknowledge their authority, and declare the construction which hitherto he had put upon the Act; that to accept a new office, with new emoluments, and these dependent upon the pleasure of the Company, seemed inconsistent with the Act which had expressly assigned him a large salary, in lieu of all other emoluments, that the duties of the one office were inconsistent with those of the other; especially if the doctrine of the Chief Justice himself were sound, that the Judges of the *Adawlat* might be sued for damages; because he might then have to answer, in his own Court,

BRACK T.
CHAP. VI.
—
(174).

BOOK V

CHAP. VI.

1781.

for the acts which he had performed as *Judge of Sadler Adalat*; that if the jurisdiction of the *Sadler Adalat* would occupy one-half of the time of the Council, as it would that of the Chief Justice, whose time was already so much engrossed, that he could not join with his colleagues in performing the important office of a Justice of the Peace for the city and district of Calcutta; that the present exhausted state of the Company's treasures did not justify them in creating a new office to which large appointments were annexed; that the power which would thus be wielded by the Chief Justice would "too much hide the government from the eyes of the natives;" and that, if the attorney and forms of the Supreme Court were in any degree introduced into the business of the *Dewanee*, "a new and a wide door of litigation would be opened." When these two opponents of the measure advanced as objections, that the new powers allotted to the Chief Justice would endanger the rights of the Council or of the Company as *Dewan*, and still might not terminate the endeavours of the Chief Justice to encroach on their department, they estimated far less correctly, than Mr. Hastings, the powers of the instrument which he proposed to employ. They did not consider, that, by rendering the Chief Justice dependent upon themselves for a large portion of money and power, they lost no part of that power which they lent to him, but gained the command even of that which he derived from another source.

It was on the 24th of October resolved, by a majority of the Council, that the Chief Justice should be requested to accept of the office of judge of the *Sadler Dewanee Adalat*; and at the same time proposed, that, 60,000 *sicca* rupees per annum, nearly seven thousand pounds, should be annexed to the office, under the title of salary, and 7,500 *sicca* rupees, upwards of eight hundred pounds, under the denomination of rent for an office. The assent of the Chief Justice, and his appointment to the office, immediately ensued.

When intelligence of the reconciliation between the governing Council and the Supreme Court, effected by the appointment of Sir Elijah Impey, with a large salary, to the station of Judge of Appeal from the *Dewanee*

Adashit, was brought to the Court of Directors, the case appeared to them of so much importance, as to require the highest legal advice: and it was laid before the Attorney and Solicitor General, Mr. Denning, and their own counsel, Mr. Ross. It is a fact, more full of meaning perhaps, when applied to the character of the professors than of the individuals, that an opinion in the following words—"The appointment of the Chief Justice to the office of Judge of the Sadar Dywanee Adashit, and giving him a salary for the latter office, besides what he is entitled to as Chief Justice, does not appear to us to be illegal, either as being contrary to the 13 Geo. III. or incompatible with his duty as Chief Justice; nor do we see anything in the late act, 21 Geo. III. which affects the question"—was signed by the names, J. Denning, Jas. Wallace, J. Mansfield. The opinion of Mr. Ross, the Counsel of the Company, was different, as had been that of their Advocate-General in India; and Mansfield, a few days afterwards, stated, in a short note to the Directors, that doubts had arisen in his mind, whether the acceptance of a salary, to be held at the pleasure of the Company or their servants, was not forbidden by the spirit of the act, or at any rate the reasons of the case. He concluded in these words, "I have not been able to get the better of these doubts, although I have been very desirous of doing it, from the great respect I have for the opinions of those gentlemen with whom I lately concurred, and whose judgment ought to have much more weight and authority than mine."

The question was taken under consideration of the Select Committee of the House of Commons; who treated it, under the guidance of other feelings and other ideas. In their report, the power conferred upon Sir Elijah Impey in his new capacity was represented as exorbitant and dangerous; and no less the more so, that no regular definition of it was anywhere to be found; no distinct rule of law was anywhere pointed out; but he was to be guided by his own will: he was to be uncontrolled by no check; he was to be restrained by no appeal; and he was to decide upon the fortunes of all the natives of Bengal. He was provided not only with judicial but legislative powers, being authorized to make rules and

BOOK V,
CHAP. VI.
—————
1781

BOOK V.
CHAP. VI.
1781.

regulations, that is to lay down laws, for governing the civil jurisdiction of the country. And all this power was conferred upon a man, who, in the opinion of Mr. Hastings at least, had been distinguished by no disposition to make a moderate use of his power. The grounds of expediency and policy, on which, ostensibly, the measure was put, were treated as having been already proved to be frivolous and weak, by the arguments of Mr. Francis and Mr. Wheler, to which no answer had ever been made. "The idea," it was affirmed, "of establishing peace upon the ground of adverse claims still unsettled, and which nothing even appears to reconcile but the lucrative office given to the Chief Justice, can be maintained but upon suppositions highly dishonourable to the public justice, and to the executive administration of Bengal." One of the most important features of the case was then held up to view: Mr. Hastings, it was remarked, assumed, and he was well acquainted with the circumstances of the case, in the whole course of his reasoning, that in substance and effect the Chief Justice was the whole of the Supreme Court: by selling his independence to the Governor General and Council, the Chief Justice, therefore, sold the administration of justice, over every class of the inhabitants of Bengal. "By the independence of one tribunal," says the report, "both are rendered dependant; both are vitiated, so far as a place of great power, influence, and patronage, with near eight thousand pounds a-year of emoluments, held at the pleasure of the giver, can be supposed to operate on gratitude, interest, and fear. The power of the Governor-General over the whole royal and municipal justice in Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, is as absolute and uncontrollable, as both those branches of justice are over the whole kingdom of Bengal."

An observation of the Committee is subjoined, to which the highest degree of importance belongs. It is founded upon the grand fundamental truth, that nothing is more favourable to the augmentation and corruption of the executive power, than the facility of doing, through the medium of the courts of law, things which would awaken suspicion or hatred, if done by the executive itself.

In the situation in which the dependence of the Chief Justice has placed Mr. Hastings, "he is enabled," say the

Committee, "to do things, under the name and appearance of a legal court, which he would not presume to do in his own person. The refractory to his will may appear as victims to the law; and favoured delinquency may not appear, as protected by the hand of power, but cleared by the decision of a competent judge." When a nation is habituated, even as much as our own is habituated, to pay a blind and undistinguishing respect to the character and acts of judges; the subservience of the courts of law is an instrument of power, of pernicious magnitude.

The consequence of the discussion which these transactions underwent, and of the resolutions which they produced in the nation, was an act of parliament to regulate anew the Supreme Court of Judicature, and deprive it of the powers which had been found destructive; and, upon a change of ministry, an address to the King was voted by the House of Commons, on the 3rd of May, 1782, for the recall of Sir Elijah Impey, to answer to the charge of having "accepted an office not agreeable to the true intent and meaning of the act 13 Geo. III."

Soon after his appointment to the office of Judge of Sudder Dewannee Adawlat, thirteen articles of regulation for the practice of that Court and of the subordinate tribunals were recommended by the Judge, approved by the government, and adopted. With these were incorporated various additions and amendments, which were afterwards published in a revised code, comprising ninety-five articles. The number of provincial Dewannee Adawlates was, in April, 1781, increased from six to eighteen, in consequence of the inconvenience experienced from the extent of their jurisdiction.

As the establishment of the police magistrates, called *faujdars* and *munsifs*, introduced in 1774, followed the

¹ For these important proceedings, the Report of the Committee of the House of Commons, in which the petition respecting the administration of justice in Bengal being referred, and the First Report of the Select Committee of 1780, with the single documents contained in it, are as numerous as possible, have been laboriously consulted. See also the speech of Sir E. Impey, delivered at the bar of the House of Commons on the 14th day of February, 1784, with the documents referred to in the Appendix, though this address has been almost totally in the custody of the Chief Justice in the trial and execution of Hastings. See also Colclough's Biography, v. 14, 15, 16; and the 18th Report from the Select Committee on India affairs, in 1879, p. 8 and 9.

BOOK V.
PART VI.
1781.

example of so many of the contrivances adopted in the government of India; that is, did not answer the end for which it was designed; the judges of Dewanee Adalut were vested with power of apprehending deprecators and delinquents, within the bounds of their jurisdiction, but not of trying or punishing them; a power which was still reserved to the Nizam Adalut, acting in the name of the Nabob. The Governor-General and Council also reserved a power of authorizing, in cases in which they might deem it expedient, the Zemindars to exercise such part of the police-jurisdiction as they had formerly exercised under the Mogul administration. And in order to afford the government some oversight and control over the penal jurisdiction of the country, a new office was established at the Presidency, under the immediate superintendence of the Governor-General. To this office, reports of proceedings, with lists of commitments and convictions, were to be transmitted every month; and an officer, under the Governor-General, with the title of *Attorney-General of the Criminal Courts*, was appointed for the transaction of its affairs. In November, 1782, in consequence of commands from the Court of Directors, the jurisdiction of the Sadler Dewanee Adalut was removed by the Governor-General and Council.¹

Upon these changes in the judicial, followed close another change in the revenue system. In 1773, the plan had been adopted of performing the collection of the revenues by means of provincial Councils; but under the declared intimation of its being only temporary, and preparatory to another plan; namely, that of a Board of Revenue at the Presidency, by whom, with local officers, the whole business of raising the revenue might be performed. Afterwards, when disputes with Mr. Francis, and other opposing members of the Council, arose, Mr. Hastings had maintained, that the expedient of provincial Councils was the most excellent which it was possible for him to devise. On the 20th of February, 1781, however, a very short time after the departure of Mr. Francis, he returned to the plan which was projected in 1773, and decreed as follows: that a Committee of Revenue should

¹ Fifth Report of the Select Committee in 1818. Second Report of the Select Committee in 1791.

be established at the Presidency, consisting of four nominated servants of the Company; that the provincial Councils should be abolished, and all the powers with which they were vested transferred to the Committee; that the Committee should transact, with full authority, all the current business of revenue, and lay a monthly report of their proceedings before the Council; that the majority of votes in the Committee should determine all those points on which there should be a difference of opinion; that the record, however, of each dissentient opinion was not expected; that, even upon a reference to the Council, the assertion of what the majority had determined should not be stayed, unless the majority themselves the competency appeared to be requisite; and that a commission of two per cent. on all sums paid monthly into the treasury at Calcutta, and one per cent. on all sums paid monthly into the treasuries which remained under charge of the collectors, should be granted as the remuneration, according to certain propositions, of the members and their principal assistants. Against this arrangement, it was afterwards urged, that it was an addition to those increment changes, which were attended with great trouble, uncertainty, and vexation to the people; that it was a wretched innovation, if the praises bestowed by Mr. Hastings on the provincial Councils were deserved; that it divested the Supreme Council of that power over the business of revenue, with which they were solely intrusted by the legislature, to lodge it in the hands of Mr. Hastings, as the members of the Committee were under his appointment, and the Council were deprived of the means of forming an accurate judgment on all disputed points—bearing the reasons of the majority alone, while those of the minority were suppressed. To these objections, Mr. Hastings replied, that the inconveniences of change were no argument against any measure, provided the advantages of the measure surpassed them; that he was not bound by his declarations respecting the fitness of the provincial Councils, when the factious disputes which divided them, and the decline of the revenue, proved that they were ill adapted to their purpose; that the business of the revenue was necessarily transferred from the Supreme Council, because the time of the Council was inadequate to its demands; that the Committee of Revenue were not

BOOK V. vested with the powers of the Council, in any other
 CHAP. VII. sense than the provincial Councils, or any other dele-
 gates; but, on the contrary, acted under its immediate
 control.

It was intrusted to the Committee to form a plan for the future assessment and collection of the revenues. And the following are the expedients of which they made choice: to form an estimate of the abilities of the several districts, from antecedent accounts, without recurring to local inspection and research: to lease the revenues, without intermediate agents, to the Zemindars, where the Zemindary was of considerable extent: and, that they might save government the trouble of detail, in those places where the revenues were in the hands of a number of petty renters, to let them altogether, upon annual contracts.¹

CHAPTER VII.

Journey of the Governor-General to the Upper Provinces.—History of the Company's Conventions with the Raja of Benares.—Requisitions upon the Raja. Resolution to relieve the Company's Necessities by forcible Eviction on the Raja.—The Governor-General arrives at Benares.—The Raja put under arrest.—A Fanciful and disorderly People.—An Affray between them and the Soldiers.—The Raja Escapes.—War made upon him, and the Country rebelled.—Condemnation of Mr. Hastings by the Directors.—Double Negotiation with the Mahometan of Pooreah.—Treaty of Peace.

IT was immediately subsequent to these great changes in the financial and judicial departments of the government, that the celebrated journey of the Governor-General to the Upper Provinces took place. Important as was the business, which at that time pressed upon the attention of the government, when war raged in the Carnatic, when the contest with the Mahometans was carried on in two

¹ The official documents are found in the Appendix, Sixth Report of the Select Committee, 1784: and in the papers printed for the House of Commons, on the petition of the Zemindars. See too the chronicle article of Clive against Hastings, and the answer.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1764.

place at once, and when the Supreme Council was so greatly reduced in numbers, that, upon the departure of the Governor-General, one member alone, Mr Wheeler, was left to conduct the machine of government, it was to be concluded, that matters of great consequence had withdrawn the Governor-General from the principal scene of intelligence, of deliberation, and of action. The transactions which he had in view were chiefly those proceedings which he meditated with regard to the Raja of Benares, and the Nabob of Oude. The government was distressed for money, and the intention was avowed, of making those tributary Princes subservient to its supply. The Governor-General departed from Calcutta on the 7th of July, 1764, and arrived at Benares on the 14th of August. To understand the events which ensued, it is necessary to trace from its origin, the connexion which subsisted between the English and the Raja.

After the shock, which the empire of the Great Mogul sustained by the invasion of Nadir Shah, when the Subahdars and other governors, freed from the restraint of a powerful master, added to the territory placed under their command, as much as they were able of the adjacent country, the city and district of Benares were reduced under subjection to the Nabob of Oude. This city, which was the principal seat of Brahminical religion and learning, and to the natives inhabitants an object of prodigious veneration and resort, appears, during the pericious period of Mohammedan sway, to have remained under the immediate government of a Hindu. Whether, till the time at which it became an appanage to the Subah of Oude, it had ever been governed through the medium of any of the neighbouring viceroys, or had always paid its revenues immediately to the imperial treasury, does not certainly appear. With the exception of coining money in his own name, a prerogative of majesty, which, as long as the throne retained its vigour, was not withheld by consanguinity; and that of the administration of criminal justice, which the Nabob had withdrawn, the Raja of Benares had always, it is probable, enjoyed and exercised all the powers of government, within his own dominions.¹ In 1764, when

¹ This is an adoption of one of those errors into which the charge against Mr Hastings, in regard to his relations with Great Mogul, was founded, and

for that of the Vizir, whom he had so much occasion to dread. He offered to assist them with his forces, and, to anticipate all jealousy, from the idea of his having an independence, expressed his willingness to hold the country, subject to the usual obligations under them, as it had sustained in the case of the Nabob; and as highly important was the service which he rendered to the Company, that the Directors expressed their sense of it in the strongest terms.¹ When peace was concluded, the Raja was secured from the effects of the Nabob's resentment and revenge, by an express article in the treaty, upon which the English insisted, and the guarantee of which they solemnly undertook. Upon the death of Bulwant Sing in the year 1770, the disposition of the Vizir to dispossess the family, and take the province into his own hands, was strongly displayed, but the English again interfered, and compelled the Vizir to confirm the succession to Chayta Sing, the son of the late Raja, and his posterity for ever, on the same terms, excepting a small rise in the annual payment, as those on which the country had been held by his father. In the year 1772, when Mr. Hastings paid his first visit to the Nabob of Ouda, the preceding agreement was renewed and confirmed. "The Nabob," said Mr. Hastings, "presented, in very accurate terms, for my consent, that he should dispossess the Raja of the forts of Letchpore and Bhogpore, and take from him ten lacs of rupees over and above the stipulated rents: and he seemed greatly dissatisfied at my refusal."² Mr. Hastings, however, insisted that all the advantages which had been secured to Bulwant Sing, and confirmed by the Nabob's own deed to Chayta Sing, should be preserved, and he expressed, in the same letter, his opinion both of the faith of the Vizir, and the independence of the Raja, in the following words:

"I am well convinced that the Raja's inheritance, and perhaps his life, are no longer safe than while he enjoys the Company's protection; which is his due, by the ties of justice, and the obligations of public faith; and which

¹ In their Second Letter, 20th May, 1768.

² This stipulation seemed to be at first under the subsequent Sumat of 1770, = 87.

³ The Vizir had argued no more than he had a right to do, and the opinion of the Government established in 1768, is in guarantee of the British family.—V.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.

1781.

policy enjoins us to afford him ever most effectually : his country is a strong barrier to ours, without subjecting us to any expense ; and we may depend upon him as a sure ally, whenever we may stand in need of his services." It was established accordingly, that "no increase of revenue should ever thereafter be demanded."¹

When the Company's new government, established in 1774, resolved upon forming a new arrangement with the son and successor of the Nair, lately deceased ; the interest, whatever it was, which was possessed by the Nair in the territory of the Raja Chaito Sing, was transferred from that chief to the Company. Upon this occasion it was resolved, not only that no infringement should take place of the previous rights and privileges of the Raja, but that other advantages should be annexed. Mr. Hastings took the lead in this determination ; and earnestly maintained the policy of rendering the Raja totally independent in his government of Benares, under no condition but the payment of a fixed and invariable tribute. To this, with only a nominal modification, the Council agreed. It was a primary object, professed by all, that the Raja should be completely secured from all future encroachments, either upon his revenue, or his power ; and a unanimous resolution was passed, that so long as he discharged his engagements, "no more demands should be made upon him, by the Honourable Company, of any kind ; nor, on any pretence whatsoever, should any person be allowed to interfere with his authority." To preclude all ground for such interference, the right of coining money, and of administering penal justice, was transferred to him. Mr. Hastings proposed that the Raja should pay his tribute, not at his own capital of Benares, but at Feroz, which was the nearest station for the business of government, within the territory of the Company. And the reason which he suggested is worthy of record : "If a resident was appointed to receive the money, as it became due, at Benares ; such a resident would unavoidably acquire an influence over the

¹ Secret Consultations, Part VIIth, on Oct. 1775. Extract of the Governor-General's Report; Second Report of the Select Committee, 1780. P. 12.—M

There is no acknowledgment of independence, unless the word "ally" be so construed ; but in the voluminous correspondence of the India Company, it is impossible that words should not be used sometimes in their general sense, without intending a right interpretation.—W.

rated, after the lapse of years, in a laboured apology among the causes which justified the prosecution of the Raja to his ruin.¹ BOOK V. CHAP. VI.

1781.

In the year 1775, the Governor-General proposed, that a requisition should be made upon the Raja Chyto Sing for the maintenance of three battalions of sepahs, estimated at *£*2000000 of rupees per annum, during the continuance of the war. In settling the terms of the connection of the Raja with the Company, in 1774, it had been proposed, for consideration, by the Governor-General, whether the Raja should not engage to keep a body of 3000 cavalry constantly on foot, which should be consigned to the service of the Company, receiving an additional pay or gratuity, as often as the public interest should require. But this proposition was rejected by the rest of the Council, even by Mr. Barwell, on the score of its being a mere enhancement of the tribute of the Raja, under a different name. And the Governor-General then declared, that "it was far from his intention to propose this, or any other article, to be imposed on the Raja by compulsion; he only proposed it as an article of speculation." Mr. Pownall and Mr. Wheeler, in 1778, considered that article, to the answer which the Governor-General p. 91 cited should be requested, of the Raja, but demurred as to the right of enforcing any demand beyond that of the stipulated tribute; and Mr. Hastings agreed to reserve the question of right to their superiors.² Professing a strong desire to show his friendship to the Company, the Raja, as was to be expected, endeavoured to obtain an abatement of the sum; and when he gave his consent to the whole, expressly declared that it was only for a single year. In resentment of these endeavours to limit the amount of the contribution, the Governor-General proposed, that no time should be allowed for the remission of payment; but the whole should be exacted immediately. "I acquiesce," were the

¹ The manner in which this transaction is described is curious. There goes no reason to indicate how the conduct of Chyto Sing, that British general is to be seen, nor any distant feeling of conscience. He alludes to the Raja's offer by its exciting the jealousy of the Council, as one proof among others of his treachery to the British Government, as evidence of submission to the English Government, and thereby his own independence.—W.

² It is curious to see in the Minutes of Council (20th July, 1778) any there "resolving to reserve the question of right".... "I wish to leave the decision of future rights to our superiors."

BOOK V. words of Mr. Francis's Minute; "though, in my own
CHAP. VII. opinion, it would answer as well to us, and be less dis-
tressing to the Raja, if the subsidy were added in equal
1781. proportions to the monthly receipts of the tribute."

The Raja pleaded poverty, and praying for indulgence in point of time, engaged to make good the total payment in six or seven months. The Governor-General treated the very request as a high offence, and added the following very explanatory words, "I will not conceal from the Board, that I have expected this evasive conduct in the Raja, having been some time past well informed that he had been advised in this manner to procrastinate the payment of the five lacs, to afford time for the arrival of despatches from England, which were to bring orders for a total change in this government; and this he was given to expect would produce a repeal of the demand made upon him by the present government." A delay, founded upon the hope that the Governor-General would be stripped of power, might sting the mind of the Governor-General, if it was a mind of a particular description; but a delay founded upon the hope of remission (even if it had been ascertained to be the fact) would not by any body, unless he were in the situation of the Governor-General, be regarded as much of a crime. Mr. Francis and Mr. Wheeler were over-ruled, and the resident at Benares was commanded immediately to repair to the Raja, to demand, that in five days the whole of the money should be paid, to denounce to him that a failure in this respect would be treated as equivalent to an absolute refusal, and to abstain from all intercourse with him till further instructions, if the requisition was not obeyed.

In the following year, the demand was renewed. The Raja now more earnestly represented the narrowness of his circumstances; the hardship which was imposed upon him by so heavy an exaction; his exemption, by the terms of his treaty,¹ from all demands, beyond the amount of his tribute, which was most regularly paid; and his express stipulation, annexed to his former payment, that it was

¹ There was no treaty; a charter in fact a treaty, but a grant or patent from a superior to an inferior. No exemption was specified, but, although a stipulation was annexed, there was no pledge that it should never be renewed.—G.

not to be for more than a year. The Governor-General replied in terms more imperious and harsh than before, threatening him with military execution unless he paid immediate and unconditional obedience to the command. The Raja repeated his remonstrances, in the most earnest, but the most submissive, and even suppliant terms. The troops were ordered to march. He was compelled to pay not only the original demand, but 20000 as a fine for delay, under the title of expense of the troops employed to coerce him.¹

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1261

In the third year, that is, in 1783, the sanction was renewed; but several new circumstances were, in this year, added to the transaction. The Raja sent his confidential minister to Calcutta, to testify the Governor-General, by the most expressive expressions of regret for having incurred his displeasure, even by confessions of error and of fault, and by the strongest protestations of a desire to make every possible exertion for the recovery of his favour. This however included not the payment of the five lacs, of which the agent was instructed to use his utmost endeavours to obtain a remission. For the better accomplishment of this object, he was furnished with a secret commission to the Governor-General, of the amount of two lacs of rupees. At first, as we are told by Mr. Hastings, he absolutely refused the present, and assured the agent of the Raja that the contribution must be paid. Afterwards, however, he accepted the present; with a view, as he himself witnesses us, to apply the money to a peculiar exigency of the public service. Be it so. The money of the Raja however was tendered, for a purpose which it was impossible to mistake; and that money, with all the obligation which the receipt of it imported, was in fact received.² The contribution, nevertheless, was ex-

¹ The nature of these wars, the ability and disposition of Clive, his superior abilities, his conduct in the most important period of real emergency, and the other circumstances, that are a necessary description have described, more fully than I am here allowed, and would not diminish that merit, and in satisfying the demands of the government.—H.

² For the circumstances of it is given, see Hastings' Answer to Clive's Eighth Charge, the Minutes Report of the Select Committee, &c., and the Minutes of the Committee on the trial of Warren Hastings. These documents are remarkable for, respectively. At first, partial concealment of the transactions, such measures, however, taken, as may, if afterwards necessary, appear to imply a design of future disclosure; when considerable business diffused and dissipated, these disclosures made. The Governor-General, on the 17th of June, offered to pay 25,000, which, as he described it, ap-

his demand, first to 1550, and at last to 1500. The Raja collected 500 horses, as he himself, and without contribution, afforded, and 500 matchlock men as a substitute for the remainder.¹ He sent word to the Governor-General that this force was ready to receive his commands; but never obtained any answer.

The Governor-General had other views. He wanted money, and he was resolved that the plunder of the unhappy Raja, whom he disliked, should be the source from which it was to flow. "I was resolved," says the Governor-General, "to draw from his guilt the means of relief to the Company's distresses. In a word, I was determined to make him pay largely for his pardon, or to exact a severe vengeance for his past delinquency."² The confession has the merit of frankness, be the other virtues belonging to it such as they may. The guilt as it is called, consisted, exclusively, in a reluctance to submit to the imposition of a very heavy burthen, from which the Raja considered that he ought to be free.³

The Raja was informed of the hostile designs which were entertained against him, and in order to anticipate the fury of the storm, sent an offer to the Governor-General of twenty lacs of rupees for the public service. The offer was scornfully rejected. A sum of not less than fifty lacs was the peremptory demand. From the Governor-General's information we learn, that he was at this time offered a large sum of money for the destruction of the Raja, by the Nabob of Oude; that he was resolved to assert the obstinacy of the Raja; otherwise to reduce his force, and seize the treasure which they were supposed to contain; or to conclude a bargain for his dominions with the Nabob Vizir.

It is necessary to be remarked, that Mr. Forbe, who had been replaced in the office of resident at Benares by the express command of the Court of Directors, the Governor-General removed about six months before him

¹ A return given by one of his principal officers, stated the matchlock force to be above 1000 horse, and foot. After his flight from Benares, he readily supplied above 30,000. *Memories*, 41.—W.

² Governor-General's *Memories*, &c., supra.

³ This was his "guiltance" or the guilt of the Raja. His main offence was disobedience to the Company's Government, and the purpose of forcing himself from it whenever opportunities offered.—*W.*

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.

1783.

journey to Benares, on the sole pretence that "he thought the resident there should be a man of his own nomination and confidence;" though the Court of Directors had decreed the contrary, and issued to that effect their most peremptory commands. It is also requisite to be stated, that though the Governor-General departed for Benares with the intention of inflicting a severe vengeance on the Raja, a design which he communicated in trust to some of his confidential friends,¹ he entered no intimation of this design in the consultations, or records of the Deliberative Council, but on the contrary a minute importing nothing beyond an amicable and ordinary adjustment, and desiring powers for nothing but to make such arrangements, and perform such acts, for the improvement of the Zemindary "as he should think fit and consistent to the mutual engagements subsisting between the Company and the Raja." The aptness of the expression consisted in its having sufficient laxity to stretch around all that the actor had in view, while its more obvious signification led not the mind of the hearer to any but ordinary transactions.

Upon the approach of the Governor-General to the boundary of the Raja's dominions, that Prince went out to meet him, and, to render the compliment still more respectful, with a retinue unusually great. Not contented with a mere interview of form, the Raja pressed for a more confidential conversation. "He professed," says Mr. Hastings, "much concern to hear that I was displeased with him, and contrition for having given cause for it assuring me that his Zemindary, and all that he possessed, were at my devotion; and he accompanied his words by an action, either strongly expressive of the agitation of his mind, or his desire to impress on mine a conviction of his sincerity—by laying his turban on my lap." Mr. Hastings, according to his own account, treated the demonstrations of the Raja as unworthy of his regard, and dismissed him.

Mr. Hastings arrived in the capital of the Raja on the 16th of August; earlier by some hours than the Raja himself. The Raja communicated his intention of visit-

¹ He communicated it to the only other member of Council, Mr. Fraser, as that gentleman publicly acknowledges. *Narrative* 18, Note.—P.

ing upon him in the evening. But the Governor-General sent him prohibition ; and at the same time directed him to forbear his visits, till permission should be received. The incident was next morning sent to the Raja with a paper of complaints and demands. The Raja in reply transmitted, in the course of the day, a paper in which he endeavoured to make it appear that his conduct was not liable to so much blame as the Governor-General imputed ; nor deserved the severity of treatment which was bestowed. The Governor-General, without any further communication, put him under arrest the following morning ; and imprisoned him in his own house with a military guard.

This is the point at which the reader should pause, to examine, by the rules of justice, the conduct of the parties ; twice to this time their actions were the offspring of choice ; afterwards, they became more the result of necessity on both sides.

Suppose the justice of the demand to have been ever so clear and certain ; suppose that the Raja had premeditated, and endeavoured to evade the payment of his defined and established tribute, which on the contrary he always paid with singular exactness ; suppose that opportunity on each occasion had been requisite, and the delay of a few months incurred even in this case, whose blame, if military hastened not, might without dispute have been due, it will be acknowledged, that the behaviour of the Governor-General would have been harsh, precipitate, and cruel. Even the force, and the soldiers would have been too hastily and undistinctly applied to an offence, so common in India, and to which any consequences of importance are so little attached. The arrest, which to a man of rank is the deepest disgrace and injury, would have been an excess of punishment to a very considerable degree beyond the line of justice and humanity. If so, how much must be supposed to be added to that excess, when it is considered that the demand itself was extraordinary, irregular, and liable to the imputation of injustice ; that some even of Mr. Hastings' colleagues disputed the right of the Company to enforce any such demand ; and that Mr. Hastings, though he declared that his opinion was in favour of the right, dared not to decide upon

BOOK V. *id.*, but in express terms left the question doubtful, and reserved the decision for his superiors.¹

1781.

Mr. Hastings imposes a heavy burden upon a native Prince. His right, in point of law or justice is a matter of doubt. The Prince shows reluctance to submit to what he very naturally regards as oppression: and by some little and ordinary artifices he endeavours to elude the demand. To this reluctance and these little artifices, Mr. Hastings attaches the name of guile. Having sufficiently attached to them the name of guilt, he holds it requisite that guilt should meet with punishment: and as it is the dignity of the state against which the offence has been committed; the dignity of the state, which is infinite, requires that punishment should be adequately severe. If this be justice, a way may be found for inflicting any punishment justly at any time, upon any human being.

There are considerations, on the opposite side, which must not be forgotten. Mr. Hastings, in his present exigency, might naturally expect assistance from the Raja. It was common for the tributary Princes of the country to be compelled to assist their superiors in war. And it is probable that Mr. Hastings counted upon that assistance, when, in 1774, the agreement with the Raja was formed. It is, however, not a matter of doubt, that by the terms of that solemn compact, the Governor-General and his colleagues, whether they so intended or not, did surrender and renounce all right to make any demand upon the Raja of such assistance, or of any employment or service whatsoever beyond the amount of his annual tribute.²

Mr. Hastings, in contest with his accusers, endeavoured to lay the burthen of his defence upon the duties which in India a dependent ruler owes to the authority on which he depends. But if those duties, whatever they may be, are solemnly renounced by him to whom they are due, and the right to exact them is formally given up, the obligation is destroyed, and becomes as if it never had existed. That the words of the grant of the Rajah Chaito Sing barred every demand beyond that of his tribute, and by consequence that which was now made, Hastings so

¹ This, as mentioned above, was inserted by the Council of 1774. See p. 222. — W.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1781.

The relation in which the Company stood to the Raja, the one as sovereign, the other as subject, Mr. Hastings represented as conferring "an inherent right to impose such assessments as the Company thought expedient." But, in that case, the compact into which the Company entered with the Raja,* that on no pretence whatsoever should any demand whatsoever be made upon him, beyond the amount of his tribute, were a form of words totally destitute of meaning, or rather a solemn mockery, by which the Company gave security and assurance to the word of the Raja, that they would take from him nothing beyond his tribute, excepting just as much, and just as often, as they pleased.¹

Mr. Hastings, in his own justification, and after the time when his conduct had produced the most alarming events, alleged the previous existence of designs, and even propositions, on the part of the Raja, treacherous and hostile to the Company. For the evidence of these designs, Mr. Hastings presents his own naked assertion. But to that, in such circumstances, little value is to be attached. The assertion was also contradicted; and by the man who best knew on what grounds it was made; by Mr. Hastings himself. It was contradicted, by his own actions, a better testimony than his words. So far from reparing to the appeal of the Raja, as to a place where any danger was to be apprehended, he required to it as a place where he might commit the greatest outrages upon his sovereign without the smallest dread of opposition or revenge.²

* There was no such compact.—W.

¹ Mr. Hastings at the time remarked, "I did, from the first, express a doubt, whether we had strictly a right to increase our demands upon the Raja beyond the terms which we originally agreed to give him, which he consented to; and which, as it is not immediately understood, it is to make a Provisional Treaty by which he held his territory. If we demanded, he thought upon him as the conqueror of the disputed ground, as he was agreed to his as conqueror, or at least he had an authority for either. Instead of this last, but we demanded things which he refused to give, or was obliged to pay the more so, the farther he off his territory was to give us without consequence of it, unless he was that means to secure himself by a new treaty." *Minutes of Council*, 26th September, 1781; *second Series*, c. supra, p. 26.

² The official, mentioned in Mr. Hastings' Narrative, instead of proving that any design of rebellion was on foot, proved that it was not, by showing that it had not been a foundation for the just and necessary. Such testimony was given to defend not to defend on the spot. It is unavailing, except, to supply that a statement of evidence, or an assumed opposition, or of the opinions of witnesses who believed that which they said. (See *second Series* of *Evidence on the Eastern Charge*, p. 264 to 269 and 269—270.) *Mem-*

dignity and rank. Mr. Hastings denied that he was a sovereign prince: he was only a Zemindar. Did this, however, change the nature of the compact, by which the Company had bound themselves to exact from this man, whether Prince or Zemindar, no more than his annual tribute? Would Mr. Hastings have asserted, that, being a Zemindar, the Company had any better right to plunder him, than if he was a dependant Prince? Had he been a subject, in the most unlimited sense of the word, would it have been anything else than plunder, not to have taxed him along with the rest of his fellow-subjects, but to have gone to him personally, and singly, and have taken from him, by compulsion, whatever it was the pleasure of the master to take? Would Mr. Hastings have undertaken to point out where the line of distinction between a Zemindar, and a dependant Prince was to be fixed? Was not every Zemindar that had a large extent of territory and power, a dependant Prince; and was not every Prince of a small extent of territory and power, a mere Zemindar? What could constitute any man a sovereign Prince, if all the powers of government secured, without participation, to him and his heirs for ever, over a country comprising the extent of considerable kingdoms, did not constitute the Raja of Benares a Prince? But the father of the Raja, Bahwant Sing, and Mr. Hastings, rose from the condition of a petty Zemindar. What had this to do with the question? Did any one, better than Mr. Hastings, know, that those who acquired the station of dependant Princes in India almost universally ascended from the lowest origin? Did the birth of Alivardi Khan prevent him from being the Subahdar of Bengal, and leaving his heir in the state of a tributary Prince?

1781.

[illegible]

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.

1781.

Another of the allegations, upon which the defence was attempted, of the demands which Mr. Hastings made upon the Raja, and of the arrest of him, for reasons of payment, was, that the police of the Raja's dominions was very defective. It would have been difficult for his accuser to show in what part of India it was good. Three instances are adduced, on the complaint of Major Eaton, the English officer commanding at Buxar, in which the people of the country had behaved without respect to the English authority, and, in one instance, with violence to English sepoy, and even English officers. Upon this, remonstrances had been made to the Raja, and, though it is not alleged that he abated his officers or people, yet he had not made redress, to the satisfaction of the offended party. On the 14th of December, 1780, the Supreme Council wrote, commending the Raja to make inquiry into one of the cases; which, as there is no complaint to the contrary, except that an answer had not been received on the 17th of next month, it would appear that he did. And just seven months after the date of this letter, Mr. Hastings set out on the journey to inflict that punishment on the Raja which led to his ruin.¹

Another extraordinary declaration of Mr. Hastings remains to be considered. "I will suppose," says he, "for a moment, that I have erred—that I have acted with an unmitigated rigour towards Chytsa Sing, and even with injustice: let my motive be searched." Then follows the account of this motive, in the following words: "I left Calcutta, impressed with the belief that extraordinary means, and those exerted with a strong hand, were necessary to preserve the Company's interests from sinking under the accumulated weight which oppressed them. I saw a political necessity for curbing the overgrown power of a great member of their dominion, and to make it contribute to the relief of their pressing exigencies. If I erred, my error was prompted by an excess of zeal for their interests, operating with too strong a bias on my

THE. Yet no small portion of the evidence adduced for the defence in Mr. Hastings' trial went to prove that the Raja was a mere Scoundrel. Vide *Minutes of Evidence*, at supra.

¹ See preceding note, p. 266.—W.

² Vide *Minutes of Evidence on the Trial*, p. 1031.

judgment." Here some portion of the truth, comes forth. The Company were in want of money. The Raja was supposed to possess it. And since he would not give what was demanded willingly, the resolution was formed to take it from him by force. The pretence, however, that his power was overgrown — that is, from its magnitude an object of danger, was utterly groundless. In what respect had that power increased, during the short period of five years, from the time when Mr Hastings and his colleagues conquered and established his power, and when Mr. Hastings was so far from desiring it, that he wished to make it still more independent than it was really made? By a small body of troops, hastily collected together, and wretchedly provided both with provisions and pay, the whole power of the Raja was, in a few days, and with but little bloodshed, completely subdued. And the military officers declared, that, even if the country had collectively rebelled, a single brigade of the Company's army would have sufficed for its reduction."

PAGE 4.

Not was the Governor-General so perfectly disinterested, as to be desirous to make it appear. The whole power and emblems of his office, over which he watched with so much jealousy and care, were the personal interests by which he was stimulated. He knew, under the circumstances which prevailed at home, by what a slender and precarious tenure he enjoyed his place. He knew well that success or adversity would determine the question. He knew, that with those whom he served, plenty of money was to be won; want of that useful article, adversity,

1. *Chrysomelidae*: 1. *Chrysomelidae*, all species, 10, 10, 10

[illegible]

It is not so much the discovery of the existence of the Negro as the very definite support of him by the personal of money. He knew that the very existence of the Negro and support by him was a vital. He knew that the very existence of the Negro and support by him was a vital. He knew that the very existence of the Negro and support by him was a vital.

and inexperience, and, in consideration of his father's BOOK V.
 error, release him from his confinement as soon as he CHAP. VII.
 should prove the sincerity of his offers, and himself
 deserving of your compassion and forgiveness." 1781.

This conversation had only been a few minutes ended, when a guard of two companies of sepays arrived: the servants of the Raja were dismissed; and he was left in charge of the officers. The sensation which this event produced in the minds of the people, was immediately seen. The government of the Raja, and of his father, Balwant Sing, had for many years afforded the people an uncommon portion of justice and protection; and they had prospered under its beneficent care. Captain Harper, an officer of the Company, who had performed a great deal of service in that part of Hindustan, was asked in evidence, by the Select Committee, "How the provinces of Benares and Ghazpore were cultivated, compared with those parts of India which adjoin, and are only separated by the great Ganges?" He said, The provinces of Benares and Ghazpore were more highly cultivated than any he ever passed through; and far superior to the adjoining one of Ahoor, and that he attributed this comparative prosperity of those provinces to the industry of the inhabitants, and to the secure and honest government they lived under.* In consequence, the family of the Raja was naturally beloved;† and it sufficiently appears, from the affidavits‡ submitted by the Governor-General, that the English were, by the natives in those parts, in a peculiar manner detested. The confinement of their Prince was an act, which, under the hypocritical light in which imprisonment is regarded by the Indians, they viewed as an outrage of the most atrocious description. The passions of the people were inflamed; and they flocked in crowds to the spot where their sovereign was confined. No little had any conception of resistance been

* Report on the petition of Tooty et al. p. 3. 36. And the Governor-General answered, in his Minute in Chap. I. 14th of June, 1784, declared that the Government of the Raja consisted of "a just and well cultivated territory in any country, perhaps, of the same extent in India."

† Tooty et al. evidence in this effect, and the fact is detailed: it is certain that no particular regard is paid by the people of Benares to their sovereign: the object has frequently been charged, and his father spoken of by the natives as robbers and oppressors. N.

‡ Appended to his narrative.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1781.

entertained, that the two companies of sepoys, who were placed on guard, had come without suspicion. As the intercourse of people increased, two additional companies, with a supply of ammunition, were ordered to their support. But before they arrived at the palace, all the avenues were blocked up; and a tumult arose, which soon led to bloodshed, and, at last, to a furious engagement between the people and the troops. The unfortunate consequence was, that the sepoys and their officers were almost all destroyed. On which side the acts of provocation and violence began, does not sufficiently appear. The Raja, during the confusion, occupied by a wicket which opened to the river, and, letting himself down the bank, which was very steep, by tortuous tied together, he escaped to the other side. The multitude immediately followed him across the river, and left the palace to be occupied by the English troops.

That this advantage of the people, and the attack which they made upon the guard, was the fortuitous result of the indignation with which they were inspired, by the indignity offered to their prince, and that it was in no degree owing to premeditation and contrivance, was amply proved by the events. The Raja knew that Mr. Hastings was unattended by any military force; and, if he had acted upon a previous design, would not have lost a moment in securing his person. The Governor-General himself declares; "If Chajra Sing's people, after they had seized his person, had proceeded to my quarters, instead of crowding after him in a tumultuous manner, as they did, in his passage over the river, it is probable that my blood, and that of about thirty English gentlemen of my party, would have been added to the recent carnage: for they were about two thousand, furious and daring from the easy success of their last attempt: nor could I assemble more than fifty regular and armed sepoys for my whole defence."*

* The Raja asserted, and Mr. Hastings has nowhere contradicted, that the premeditation was given by the violence and madness of the English and their agents. But his assertion, unless supported by circumstances, would not in such a case go for towards proof.—† How little credit the Raj's account deserves, is easily estimated. He asserts, in a letter to the Governor-General, that the tumult arose by the "troops firing on the people." "The people of the Mabar then fired calls from their guns, and I thought their progress." He has then never demanded to be they that the sepoys were not with national ammunition. *Narrative*, App. 108.—‡

† *Narrative*, at page 1.

it possible to have said, more decisive of the character of BOOK V.
a criminal rash, led by the more culpability of the instrument, CHAP. VII.
without foresight, and without an end.

It was by no means worthy of a man of prudence and experience to have proceeded deliberately to a measure so likely to make a violent impression upon the minds of the people, without having made any provision whatsoever for preventing the unhappy effects which it tended to produce. Mr. Hastings at first was able to assemble for his defence only six companies of Major Popham's regiment, about sixty sepoy which he had brought with him from Bazar as a guard to his house, and a few recruits newly enlisted for the Resident's guard; in all about four hundred and fifty men; and without provisions even for a single day.

Ramnagar, was a fortified palace of the Raja, on the opposite side of the river, close to Bazarra. It was not expected that it could for any length of time resist the effect of artillery; and the resolution was taken of reducing it with all possible dispatch. The remaining four companies of Major Popham's regiment of sepoy, with one company of artillery, and the company of French sappers, lay at Mirzapoor; and were ordered to march to Ramnagar. Major Popham was directed to command the command, as soon as all the troops intended for the service had arrived. But the officer, who in the mean time commanded the troops, was stimulated with an ambition of aggrandizing himself; and, without waiting for the effects of a cannonade, marched to the attack of the palace through the narrow streets of the town by which it was surrounded. In this situation the troops were exposed to a great variety of assaults, and after a fruitless opposition were compelled to retreat. The commanding officer was killed; a considerable loss was sustained; and an unfortunate impression was made at the commencement of the struggle, which would have been a serious evil in a less trying affair.

The Governor-General now regarded himself as placed in imminent danger. Letter upon letter was written to the commanding officers at all the military stations from which it was possible that timely assistance could be received. Few of these letters reached their destination;

BOOK V. for all the channels of communication were interrupted ;
 CHAP. VII. and so greatly were the people of the country alienated
 ——— against the English, that it was extremely difficult for any
 1781. agent of theirs to pass without discovery and prevention.
 The contagion of revolt and hostility flew with unusual
 rapidity and strength. Not only did the whole of the dis-
 trict which owed the sway of the Raja fly to arms, the very
 fields being deserted by the husbandmen, who voluntarily
 flocked to his standards and multiplied his ranks : but one
 half of the province of Oude is by the Governor-General
 affirmed to have been in a state of as complete rebellion
 as Benares. Even the British dominions themselves
 afforded cause of alarm ; many of the Zemindars of Bahar
 had exhibited symptoms of disaffection : and the Governor-
 General received reports of actual levies, in that province,
 for the service of Choyto Sing. The danger was exceed-
 ingly augmented from another source. The Governor-
 General was entirely destitute of money ; and affirmed, that
 the whole extent of both his treasure and his credit
 exceeded not three thousand rupees ; while the troops
 were all four months, and some of them five months, in
 arrears.¹

He was alarmed with the prospect of an attack from
 Benares, which report described as about to take place
 in the night. His situation at Benares was regarded, by
 himself, and by his military officers, as not defensible ; and
 he resolved to make his escape to the strong fortress of
 Chunar. He secretly quitted the city, after it became dark,
 leaving the wounded sepoye bound ; and arrived in safety
 at the place of his retreat.

Though the letters of the Governor-General reached not
 Colonel Mergen who commanded at Chunarpoor, yet some
 intelligence travelled to him of the disorder which had
 arisen ; and with promptitude and decision he ordered the
 principal part of the force which he commanded to march.
 The requisition both for money and for troops, which had
 been despatched to Lucknow, was happily received ; and
 was promptly obeyed. About the middle of September,
 one lakh and a half of rupees had been received, and a force
 was now collected deemed sufficient for the accomplish-
 ment of the enterprise.

¹ See his letter to Mr. Walker, Appendix to his Narrative, No. 111.

The Raja had endeavoured to make his peace from the moment of his escape. He had written letters, in which he declared his sorrow for the attack which had been made upon the soldiers of the guard, and for the blood which had been spilt; protested his own innocence with regard to the effects which had taken place, and which he affirmed to have arisen solely from the casual violence of the *malabars*, influenced by the insolence of an English agent; and professed his readiness to submit with unflinching obedience to whatever conditions the Governor-General might think fit to impose. Not contented with repeating his letters, he made application through every person on whose influence with the English ruler he thought he might depend; through one of the gentlemen of his party; through Cantow Bader, his confidential secretary, and through Hyder Beg Khan, one of the ministers of the Nabob Vizir. All his applications Mr Hastings treated as unsatisfactory and unavailing: and deigned not to make to them so much as a reply. The Raja collected his forces, and appealed by a *manifesto* to the prince of Hindustan. He was reported, truly or falsely, to be also venting the most extravagant boasts of the success which he meant to bring down upon the English; though he totally abstained from all operations not purely defensive, and in his letters to the Governor-General appealed to his forbearance, as a proof of his desire to retain his obedience. In the mean time he sustained several partial attacks. On the 29th of August a considerable body of his troops, who occupied a post at Seeker, a small fort and town within sight of Chunar, were defeated, and a considerable booty in goods was procured. On the 2d of September a detachment was forced to quit near the camp at Patoota, about seven miles distant from Chunar. But the enemy were on their guard, and received the party in good order, at the distance of a mile beyond their camp. They fought with a steadiness and ardour which disconcerted the Europeans and were beginning to produce disorder, when an attack, made with great gallantry upon their guns, by the two companies of grenadiers, induced them to leave the field with fewer of their numbers to the victors.

Patoota was a large town surrounded by a rampart of earth, which extended a considerable way beyond the

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1781.

BOOK V.
CHAP. III.
1783.

town, to the adjoining hills. It had also a small square fort, built of stone, fortified with four round towers, a high rampart, and a great ditch. The principal force of the enemy was collected at this place, and at Luttespoor, a large stone fort, surrounded with hills and a wood, at the distance of about fourteen miles from Cawnpore. The strength of both consisted mostly in the difficulty with which they were approached. According to the plan of operations, which the English had arranged, Bannagar was first to be assailed, both as it was the place where their arms had met with a disaster, and because reduction of it would restore possession of the capital, and redeem their credit with the public. Several days were spent, in conveying battering cannon and mortars, with other preparations for a siege, to the camp of Major Popham, which was placed before the town. In the mean time one of the natives represented that it would be extremely dangerous to allow time to the enemy to strengthen themselves at Patetta and Luttespoor; that the approaches to both were strongly guarded; and that those to Luttespoor, in particular, could not be forced but with a serious loss; that even if Luttespoor were reduced, the object would not be attained, because the enemy could immediately gain the pass of Sakroet, which was behind, and there maintain themselves against any force which could assail them. He, therefore, recommended an attempt to gain possession of the pass by surprise, to which he undertook to conduct a part of the army by an unknown road; and the more to distract the enemy, he advised that an attack should at one and the same time be conducted against Patetta. His representation was favourably received; Major Popham, with the quick discernment and decision, on which so much of military success depends, immediately acknowledging the excellence of the plan. The army was divided into two parts, of which that which was destined for Sakroet began their march, under command of Major Ombé, about an hour before midnight, on the 10th of the month; and that for Patetta, conducted by the commanding officer, Major Popham, about three o'clock on the following morning.

He found the works of Patetta strong, and the approach more hazardous than he had anticipated. He had marched

without his battering cannon or mortars. They were sent for, but made little impression. Apprehensive lest further delay should frustrate the attempt at Sakroet, he resolved to make an assault on the morning of the 29th. On that very morning the other division of the army arrived, though ways nearly impracticable, at a village about two miles from the pass. Major Roberts led the storming party at Pateta, which hardly met with any resistance. After a slight stand at the outer encampment, the enemy fled through the fort, and the English soldiers followed without opposition. The pass at Sakroet was guarded by a body of men with three guns, who made a stout defence, but after a considerable loss, fled through the pass, in which the English occupied for the remainder of the day. The intelligence of the loss of Pateta, and of the pass, was carried at nearly the same time, to Lutterloop, to the Raja. He now, it is probable, began to despair. About four o'clock on the same day he fled from Lutterloop, and proceeded with a few followers to the fort of Bidjagar, which was his last resource. His army disbanded themselves; and "in a few hours, the allegiance of the country," says the Governor-General, "was restored as completely, from a state of universal revolt, to its proper channel, as if it had never departed from it."

The Governor-General made haste to return to Benares, where the formation of a new government solicited his attention. To quiet the minds of the people, a proclamation was issued, offering pardon to all, with the exception of Chyte Sing and his brother. A grandson of the Raja Balwant Sing, by a daughter, was selected as the future Raja; and as his years, nineteen, or his equality, appeared to disqualify him for the duties, his father, under the title of Nani, was appointed to perform them in his name. Two important changes, however, were produced in the constitution of the Raja. His annual tribute was raised to forty lacs of rupees; and the police, with the civil and criminal jurisdiction of the city of Benares, and the criminal jurisdiction of the whole country, was taken out of his hands. It was alleged that they had been wretchedly administered under his predecessor: and it was either not expected, or not desired, that he should be the author of an improvement. A separate establishment

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1741.

trated a desire to have her despoiled. What is more remarkable, in his letters to the commanding officer, he employed expressions which implied that the plunder of these women was the due reward of the soldiers; expressions which suggested one of the most dreadful outrages, to which in the conception of the country, a human being could be exposed. The very words of the letter ought to be produced, that no inference may be drawn from it beyond what they evidently support. "I am this instant favoured with yours of yesterday. Miss of the same date has before this time acquainted you with my resolutions and sentiments respecting the Rases. I think every demand she has made to you, except that of safety and respect for her person, is unreasonable. If the reports brought to me are true; your rejecting her offers, or any negotiation with her, would soon obtain your possession of the fort, upon your own terms. I apprehend that she will continue to defraud the masters of a considerable part of the booty, by having suffered to retire without examination. But this is your consideration, and not mine. I should be very sorry that your officers and soldiers lost any part of the reward to which they are so well entitled; but I cannot make any objection, as you must be the best judge of the expediency of the proposed indulgence to the Rases. What you have engaged for, I will certainly fulfil; but as to permitting the Rases to hold the perpetuity of Hurick, or any other, without being subject to the authority of the Commander, or any lands whatever, or indeed making any condition with her for a provision I will never consent to it." It was finally arranged that the Rases should give up the fort, with all the treasure and effects contained in it, on the express condition, along with

Item 14, last sentence, should be amended by adding "provided, however, that the amount of the fee shall not exceed the amount of the fee for the first year of the term of the contract." The amendment is as follows:

These plants were taken away in October, 1966, from 100,000 to 150,000 ft. and placed in the lab. This is enough to condition the leaves plants of variety which will grow at a concentration of 20,000-30,000 ft.

1 In the summer of 1970, all the prisoners in Aichi were shown that this letter, by Mr. Matsuda, which had a large circle of authority, was a true warning to be taken by Mr. Hara, who in this instance was that of a letter to be read of any other readers to the members of his group, and it was of the great meaning—28.

It did not deserve to reply. Any statement which could have been so limited, was of course of a value. There was, applying to the legs, of the extent of the bones, not to the joints.—N.

BOOK V. terms of safety, that the persons of herself and the other
 CHAP. VII. females of her family should be safe from the dishonour of
 search. The idea, however, which was suggested in the
 letter of Mr. Hastings, "that she would contrive to defraud
 the capture of a considerable part of the booty, by being
 suffered to retire without examination," diffused itself but
 too perfectly among the soldiery; and when the Princessa,
 with their relatives and attendants, to the number of three
 hundred women, besides children, withdrew from the
 castle, the capitulation was shamefully violated; they
 were plundered of their effects; and their persons other-
 wise rudely and disgracefully treated by the licentious
 people and followers of the camp.¹ One is delighted for
 the honour of distinguished gallantry, that in no part of
 this opprobrious business the commanding officer had any
 share. He laboured to generosity, and the protection of the
 Princessa, from the beginning. His utmost endeavours
 were exerted to restrain the outrages of his camp; and
 he represented them with feeling to Mr. Hastings, who
 expressed his "great concern," hoped the offenders would
 be discovered, obliged to make restitution, and punished;
 and directed that recompense should be made to the
 sufferer, "by a scrupulous attention to enforce the per-
 formance of the remaining stipulations in her favour."

The whole of the treasure found in the castle, of which
 the greater part did probably belong to the Prince, and
 not to the Raja, amounted to 22,27,813 current rupees.
 The whole, therefore, of the treasure which the exiled
 Prince appears to have had in hand, not only to defray the
 current expenses of his government, but also to advance
 regularly the Company's tribute, was so far from answer-
 ing to the hyperbolical conceptions or representations of
 the Governor-General, that it exceeded not the provision

The authority referred to, expresses no such exaggerated statement as that of the text. "Misapprehensions," it goes on to say, "concerning the behaviour of my persons under your command should have given cause to suspicion of the management of the said said article of the capitulation in favour of the number of Chattri and her dependents." "No other authority for the disgraceful treatment of the princess by the licentious followers of the camp has been found. That they or rather their associates were subjected to personal search, is possible, and then may have been the subject of complaint—the searchers were females." "Besides,—that the gold amount to given to each of the five female warriors." *Proceedings of a Committee of Officers*, *Tenth Report*, 222.—W.

¹ See also Letter, *Tenth Report*, Select Committee, Appendix, No. 2.

which a prudent Prince would have thought it always necessary to possess. BOOK V.

CHAP. VII.

1791.

The army proceeded upon the obvious import of the words of the Governor-General in the letter, in which he seemed to desire, that they should not allow the female relations of the Raja to leave the fort, without the examination of their persons. They concluded, that the whole of the booty was "the reward to which they were so well entitled," and divided it among themselves. Among the practical conditions deducible from his letter, it appears that this, at least, the Governor-General did not wish to receive its effect. He endeavored to retract the permission which the army had inferred; and, by explaining away the terms which he had used, to recover the spoil for the advantage of his government. The soldiers, however, both officers and men, refused to surrender what they had, upon the faith of the Governor-General, appropriated. Failing in this attempt, he endeavored to prevail upon the army, in the way of loan, to send the Company with the money, in its urgent distress. Even to this solicitation they remained obdurate. When Major Fether, in his examination before the Select Committee of the House of Commons, was asked, "whether the officers assigned any reason for refusing to obey the requisition of Mr. Hastings?" he said, he heard it was, because the *Haidia* prize-money had never been paid.¹ Mr. Hastings was therefore, not only frustrated as to every portion of that pecuniary relief which he expected from the supposed treasures of the Raja Chyvan Sing; he added to the burden, under which the Company was ready to sink, the expense which was incurred in satisfying the revolt.

It is but justice to the Court of Directors to record the

¹ In a letter to the commanding officer, without date, it is supposed by the Select Committee to have been written early in May, 1782, by the British Major, App. No. 40, to the Commander-in-Chief's men, where still money, &c. &c. with regard to the booty. "It was like the *Haidia* company, and I expect the same, as well as your part to secure the same, and the property is common, for the benefit of yourself and detachment."

² General Report, to supra, Appendix, No. 10. "Being asked, whether this was the only reason for a delay of time? Being asked, whether it could not have been explained, that it was not authorized by the officers from the East India Company, because, as the *Haidia* was, which I have, should be the property of the company? he said, he never heard of a person promising to the company, but he was aware, as Mr. Hastings, that the *Haidia* money was divided, previously, and if they would deliver it up, government would distribute it, in the manner they should think most proper."

BOOK V. resolutions, in which they expressed their opinion of the
CHAP. VII. conduct pursued by their principal servant in India,
towards the unfortunate Raja of Benares:

1783. "That it appears to this Court, that on the death of Raja-ud-deula, 1773, a treaty was made with his successor, by which the subsidiary of Benares, with its dependences, was ceded in perpetuity to the East India Company:

"That it appears to this Court, that Raja Choyte Sing was confirmed by the Governor-General and Council of Bengal, in the management of the said subsidiary (subject to the sovereignty of the Company) on his paying a certain tribute, which was settled at eleven rupees 22,00,180; and that the Bengal government pledged itself that the free and uncontrolled possession of the subsidiary of Benares, and its dependences, should be confirmed and guaranteed to the Raja and his heirs for ever, subject to such tribute, and that no other demand should be made upon him, nor any kind of authority or jurisdiction exercised within the dominions assigned to him, so long as he adhered to the terms of his engagements:

"That it appears to this Court, that the Governor-General and Council did, on the 8th of July, 1774, recommend to Raja Choyte Sing, to keep a body of 1000 horse; but at the same time declared there should be no obligation upon him to do it:

"That it appears to this Court, that Raja Choyte Sing performed his engagements with the Company, n. the regular payment of his tribute of eleven rupees 22,00,180:

"That it appears to this Court, that the conduct of the Governor-General towards the Raja, while he was at Benares, was improper; and that the imprisonment of his person, thereby disgracing him in the eyes of his subjects, and others, was unwarrantable, and highly impolitic, and may tend to weaken the confidence which the native princes of India ought to have in the justice and moderation of the Company's government."

That the exception, thus expressed by the Court of Directors, of the several facts which constituted the great circumstances of the case, was correct, the considerations adduced in the preceding pages appear to place beyond the reach of dispute. The sensibility which, in his answer,

Mr. Hastings shows to the inferences which they present, is expressed in the following words: "I must ever leave to my, that the terms, improper, unwarrantable, and highly impolitic," History, if conscientious were not one of the acts by which truth is betrayed, would, out of tenderness to Mr. Hastings, suppress the material part of that which follows, and which he gave in his defence:

"I deny, that the Bengal government pledged itself, that the free and uncontrolled possession of the subsidiary of Benares, and its dependencies, should be confirmed and guaranteed to the Raja and his heirs for ever:

"I deny, that the Bengal government pledged itself that no other demand should be made upon him, nor any kind of authority or jurisdiction, within the dominions assigned him, as long as he adhered to the terms of his engagement:

"I deny that I ever required him to keep up a body of 2000 horse, contrary to the declaration made to him by the Governor-General and Council, on the 5th of July, 1775, that there should be no obligation to him to do it:

"My demand (that is, the demand of the Board) was not that he should maintain any specific number of horse, but that the number which he did maintain should be employed for the defence of the general state:

"I deny, that Raja Choyte Sing was bound by no other engagements to the Company, than for the payment of his tribute of six hundred rupees 22,50,000:

"He was bound by the engagements of fealty and absolute obedience to every order of the government which he served.

"I deny that the Raja Choyte Sing was a native Prince of India."

* On equal grounds might the demand have been set up, that the Company held the property of a prince of India. They were not only the subjects of the Shah Azim, but the subjects of the Nizam of Bengal, and according to the doctrine of Mr. Hastings, "bound by the engagements of fealty, and bound all conditions to their ruler or his successors which they served." How could the Governor-General and Council themselves declare respecting their ruler, the Governor-General and Council, in their secret letter (quoted above, in another volume) to that Nizam, in their secret letter (quoted above, in this volume, p. 111, 1st edition, 1775) "to the Nizam entered into with the late Nizam, in the year 1765, 1770, the Company's representatives acted as plenipotentiaries from the Nizam Nizam of Berhampore, and his successor (that is, the Nizam) "Hastings's plan of defence was this: "To avoid instead of the independence and sovereignty which constituted every right, and every consideration in justice, and out of that to transmute in complete right of independence

to confer with the Minister of the Raja of Devar, who was expected to meet him at Benares; and, through the influence of the government of that country, to accelerate the conclusion of a peace. That Minister, however, died, before the arrival of Hastings, and the loss of his intervention rendered the pacific intentions of Sindia more peculiarly gratifying. So far back as February, 1779, the Presidency of Bombay had recommended the mediation of Sindia, as that which alone was likely to render any service. The Colonel immediately received his instructions for a treaty, on the terms either of mutual alliance, or of neutrality; and either including the Peshwa, or with Sindia individually. If it included the Peshwa, the Colonel was authorized to cede every acquisition, made during the war, except the territory of Fattich Sing Gungwar, Lahore, and the fortress of Gwalior, and to renounce (but without the surrender of his person) the support of Ragoojee Rao. He was instructed to retain Benares, if it were possible, even with the surrender, in its stead, of all the territory (Salsette with its adjacent island and the moiety of Baroach excepted,) ceded by the treaty of Colonel Upton; but not to allow Benares itself to be any obstruction to the conclusion of peace.

When the separate treaty was concluded with Sindia, who undertook to mediate with the Mahometan powers, the Governor-General, who had not yet departed from Benares, sent Mr. Anderson and Mr. Chapman; the former to the court of Sindia, with full powers to negotiate and conclude a peace with the Poonah government; the latter to the court of the Raja of Benar, to perform what was in his power towards the accomplishment of the same object.

The business was not very speedily, nor very easily concluded. The Poonah ministers, selected for peace by the three English Presidencies at once, though they were somewhat shaken in their opposition, by the defection of Sindia from the war, by the steadiness with which the

¹ About the same time that the proposals for a peace were sent from Hastings and Buxar, a letter was addressed to the Poonah, on the part of Lord Viscount, for Lord Cornwallis, Sir Richard Wellesley, and Mr. Munro, through the Rajah of Mysore and Ah, at Benares, to signify to their Highnesses, peace, the restoration of the Company, and the delivery of the British to conclude a peace and having treaty a proceeding which manifested, contrary to the existing constitution of the Government of India, and only calculated to obstruct the negotiations. — *Ibid.* II. 459 — 67.

BOOK V. English sustained themselves against Hyder, by the facility
CHAP. VII. with which they had subdued the Raja of Benares, and
1781. the vigour with which they carried the war almost to the
gates of Poona, were yet encouraged by the pressure
which the English sustained, and still more, perhaps, by
the eagerness which they manifested for peace.

Colonel Goddard, not yet informed of the steps which
had been taken by Mr. Hastings for urging the business
of peace with the Poona ministers, deemed it necessary
in pursuance of the powers for treating and concluding,
with which he was invested, to commence a formal nego-
tiation. And he gave the requisite commission to Mr.
Watherstone, who arrived at Poona on the 14th of
January, 1782.

The cunning of the Poona Ministers taught them the
advantages of negotiation with two adversaries, acting
under separate commissions; who, by the desire of attain-
ing the object for which they were sent, might be expected
to bid against one another, and give to the Mahattas the
benefit of an auction in adjusting the terms of peace.
They pretended, therefore, to be puzzled with two sets of
powers: though they laboured to retain Col. Watherstone,
after he was recalled.¹ They put on the forms of distance;
and stood upon elevated terms. Sindia, too, who meant
to sell his services to the English very dear, was displeased
at the commission sent to solicit the interference of the
government of Rome. The extensive sacrifices, however,
which the English consented to make, the steadfastness
on which the power of the leaders of Poona was
placed, and the exhausted state of the country, from the
long continuance of its internal struggles, as well as the
drain produced by the English war, triumphed over all
difficulties; a cessation of hostilities was effected early
in March; and a treaty was concluded on the 17th of
May.

Not only the other territories which the English had
acquired during the war, but Basatin itself, the city also
of Ahmedabad, and all the country in Guzerat which had
been gained for Purty Sing, were given up, and the two

¹ Their wish to retain this officer was, however, part of a policy not approved by the cabinet: the ministers of the Emperor would have willingly concluded a peace without Sindia's mediation. *Ibid.* 2. 438.—W.

brothers, the Unisowars, were placed in the same situation, both with respect to one another, and with respect to the Peshwa, as they stood in previous to the war. Even of the territory, which had been confirmed to them by the treaty of Colonel Upton, the English agreed to surrender their pretensions to a part (yielding annually three lacs of rupees), which had not yet come into their possession when the war was renewed. And all their rights in the city and territory of Boreach, valued at 20,000*l.* a year, were resigned, by a separate agreement, to Sindia and his heirs for ever. To Sindia was also given up, by the liberty of seizing it, the territory, including the fort of Quahar, of the Rana of Oohod; who had joined the English, but, as usual in India was the petty prince, who chooses their side from the hope of protection on the one hand, and the dread of plunder on the other, had been neither very able nor very willing to lend great assistance. Having given offence by his defect of service, and created suspicions by his endeavours to effect a separate reconciliation with Sindia, he was, in adjusting the terms of the treaty with Sindia, left to his fate. The unity of Sindia was purchased, by still further sacrifices, which evinced but little foresight. The project of Sindia for invading the territories of the Mogul Emperor, those of Nizam Elan, and those of other chiefs in the province of Delhi and the adjoining regions, was known and avowed. And it was, intentionally, provided, that no obstruction, by the treaty with the English, should be offered to the execution of these designs.

All that was stipulated in behalf of Bagmont Bee was a period of four months, in which he might choose a place

1. The letter of Instructions of the Government issued to Colonel M'lar says, "We are not to employ arms to protect the persons dependent of the King, on their side of the Red River, and the flag of disunion, and of peace is waving before us." The fact is that we do not desire that he or you be constrained to carrying out instructions any place or in any way. There is no objection to your, at the same time, if you wish, to continue your campaign against the King in your side of the country, which may eventually result either in a knowledge of the truth or in a compromise in favor of the latter. It is his duty, as he is able, to be extended to the whole of the people. In any of his or your efforts, and in the service those including persons, must be our own territory, and those of our side - General Taylor, we repeat, App. No. 1. By the way, the King's army, in your presence, is a different matter, because of the obligations of duty which the King's army imposed upon him. It is important to the Government, and towards his undivided Government the flag, and the obligations which, as a general principle of duty to him, he should (as the name given) to the nation's chief. Vol. 10, p. 100.

The Mahattas also agreed, and to this the imaginations of the English attached a high importance, that, with the exception of the ancient Portuguese establishments, they would permit no other nation, except the English, to open with them any friendly intercourse, or to erect a factory within their dominions.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1781.

The terms of this agreement, the gentlemen of the Presidency of Bombay assigned as inadequate, very humiliating; and declared, that had the negotiation been left to them and to Goddard, who best knew the state of the Mahatta government, and with what facility it might have been induced to lower its tone, a far more favourable treaty might have certainly been obtained.

CHAPTER VIII.

Burdens sustained by the Nohob of Oude.—His Complaints.

—How received by the English.—Mr. Bristow removed from Oude.—Agreement between Mr. Hastings and the Nohob.—The Begums deposed.—Whether the Begums incited Insurrection.—Alleged oppression of Colonel Munro.—The last Sumas of the Begums returned.—A present of ten Lacs given to Mr. Hastings by the Nohob.—Governor-General assumes Hindostan, and replaces Bristow.—Treatment received by Feroz's Khan.—Decision by the Court of Directors relative to the Begums.—Set at naught by Mr. Hastings.—Governor-General's new Instructions against Mr. Bristow.—Governor-General's Plan to remove the Residents from Oude.—Governor-General repeats his claims to Oude.—Resigns the Government.—Financial Results of his Administration.—Incidents at Madras.

THE next of the great transactions to which the presence of the Governor-General, in the upper provinces, gave immediate assistance, was the memorable arrangement which

and Hyder, by asserting the possibility of a union with either against the others, by which he hoped to convert them the basis the reciprocal oath of the Sepoils, and from the former, BARRON. If any clause could be imposed by it, it was the one for observing or imposing the treaty, but considering the possibility necessary to obtain it. Hist. of the Marathas, ii. 409.—W.

BOOK V. he formed with the Nabob of Oude. In his payments to the
 CHAP. VIII. Company, that Nabob had fallen deeply into arrears; and
 1781. the extreme pecuniary distress endured by the Company, rendered it necessary to devise the most effectual means for obtaining what he owed. His country, however, had, by misgovernment, fallen into the greatest disorder. The Zemindars were almost everywhere in a state of disobedience; the country was impoverished; and the disposition of the people, either deserting it or pining with want, threatened the evils, or provided the blessings, of a general revolt.¹ Before the connexion between the English and Oude, its revenue had exceeded three millions sterling, and was levied without being accused of deteriorating the country. In the year 1779, it did not exceed one-half of that sum, and in the subsequent years fell far below it, while the rate of taxation was increased, and the country exhibited every mark of oppressive exaction.

By the treaty of Fynshend, formed with the late Nabob, at the conclusion of the Rohilla war, it was agreed, that a regular brigade of the Company's troops should, at the expense of the Nabob, be kept within the dominions of Oude. Even this burden was optional, not compulsory; and the Court of Directors gave their sanction to the measure, "provided it was done with the free consent of the Nabob, and by no means without it."²

To the first was added, in the year 1777, a second, called the temporary brigade; because the express condition of it was, that the expense should be charged on the Nabob for so long a time only as he should require the corps for his service.³ The Court of Directors were still more anxious in this case than in the former, to determine, that the burden should not be fastened on the Nabob contrary to his will. "If you intend" (say they, addressing the Governor-General and Council) "to exert your influence, first, to induce the Viceroy to acquiesce in your proposal,

¹ Even the pay of the troops was, everywhere, four and six months in arrears.

² The Message by which the Governor-General introduced the subject of his journey to the upper provinces, begins in these words: "The province of Oude having fallen into a state of great disorder and confusion, its revenues being in an extraordinary degree diminished, and the Viceroy Asaph al Dowla," &c. *State Papers of the Select Committee in 1781*, App. No. 2.

³ Letter of Directors to the Governor-General and Council, dated 15th December, 1774.

and afterwards to compel him to keep the troops in his pay during your pleasure, your intents are unjust, and a correspondent conduct would reflect great dishonour on the Company." BOOK V.
CASE, VII.
1770.

Even the temporary brigade did not put a limit to the expense for English soldiers whom the Nabob was driven to maintain. Several detached corps, in the Company's service, were also placed in his pay, and a great part of his own native troops were put under the command of British officers.

In the year 1770, the expense of the temporary brigade, and that of the country troops under British officers, increased, the one to the amount of more than eighty, the other of more than forty thousand pounds sterling, above the estimate. These particulars, however, constituted only the military part of his English expense. The civil expenses resulted from an establishment under the Resident, which, without any authority from the Court of Directors, or any record in the books of the Council, had gradually and secretly swelled to a great amount; and was increased by another establishment for another agent of the Company, and by pensions, allowances, and large occasional gifts, to various persons in the Company's service.

In that year, viz. 1770, the Nabob complained that the pressure was more than he was able to endure. "During three years past," said he, "the expense occasioned by the troops in brigade, and others commanded by European officers, has much distressed the support of my household; inasmuch, that the allowances made to the wife and children of the deceased Nabob, have been reduced to one-fourth of what it had been, upon which they have subsisted, in a very distressed manner, for two years past. The attendants, writers, and servants, &c. of my court, have received no pay for two years past; and there is at present no part of the country that can be allotted to the payment of my father's private creditors, whose applications are daily pressing upon me. All these difficulties I have for these three years past struggled through, and feared this consequence therein, that it was complying with the pleasure of the Honourable Company, and in the hope that the Supreme Council would make enquiry, from in-

BOOK V. partial persons, into my distressed situation ; but I am
CH. IV. VOL. now forced to a representation. From the great increase
 1781. of expence, the revenues were necessarily farmed out at a
 high rate, and deficiencies followed yearly. The country
 and cultivation is abandoned. And this year, in particular,
 from the excessive droughts, deductions of many lacs¹
 have been allowed the farmers, who are still unsatisfied. —
 I have received but just sufficient to support my absolute
 necessities, the revenues being deficient to the amount of
 fifteen lacs ;² and for this reason, many of the old chief-
 tains, with their troops, and the useful attendants of the
 court, were forced to leave it ; and there is now only a few
 foot and horse for the collection of my revenues ; and
 should the Zemindars be refractory, there is not left a
 sufficient number to reduce them to obedience." In con-
 sequence of these distressing circumstances, the Nalob
 prayed, that the assignments for the new brigade, and the
 other detached bodies of the Company's troops, might not
 be required ; declaring that these troops were "not only
 quite useless to his government, but, moreover, the cause
 of much loss, both in the revenues and customs ; and that
 the detached bodies of troops, under their European
 officers, brought nothing but confusion into the affairs of
 his government, and were entirely their own masters."

This representation, which events proved to be hardly
 an exaggeration, and the prayer by which it was followed,
 the Governor-General received, with tokens of the highest
 indignation and resentment. "These demands," he said,
 "the tone in which they are asserted, and the reason in
 which they are made, are all equally alarming." In the
 letter which was despatched in his words to the Resident,
 the grounds on which the Nalob petitioned for relief are
 declared to be "totally inadmissible.—He stands engaged,"
 it is added, "to our government, to maintain the English
 armies which, at his own request, have been formed for
 the protection of his dominions ; and it is our part, not
 his, to judge and determine in what manner, and at what
 time, these shall be reduced or withdrawn." In his answer,

¹ Stated by the resident, in his letter, dated 11th December, 1778, to amount
 to nearly five lacs, 150,000*l.*

² 150,000*l.*

³ *Fourth Report, &c. supra. Appendix, No. 7.*

in consultation upon the subject, he says, that by the treaty made with Joseph ul Dowlah, upon the death of his father, "he became, eventually, and necessarily, a vassal of the Company." He affirmed that, "the disorders of his state, and the dissipation of his revenues, were the effects of his own conduct, which had failed, not so much from the cruel effects of incapacity, as from the detestable choice which he has made of the ministers of his power, and the participators of his confidence." And to the Nabob himself he declared, "Your engagements with the Company are of such a nature as to oblige me to require and insist on your granting advances for the full amount of their demands upon you for the current year, and on your reserving funds sufficient to answer them, even should the deficiency of your revenues compel you to leave your own troops unprotected for, or to disband a part of them to enable you to effect it."¹

The difficulties under which the Governor-General was placed, were various and distressing. It is true, that the protection of the Nabob's dominions rested solely upon the British troops, and that without loss of time they would have been overrun by the Mahabutas, had those troops been withdrawn: it is true, that the debt due to the Company would, in that case, have been lost; that a dangerous people would have been placed upon the Company's frontier; that the Company's revenues, always in distress, and then suffering intensely by war, could not maintain the same number of troops, if their pay was stopped by the Viceroy. And the law of self-preservation superseded that of justice. On the other hand, from the documents adduced, it is evident, that the English had no right to compel the Nabob, if not agreeable to him, to maintain any part of these their troops; and the Governor-General was not entitled, as he did, to plead at once, both

¹ The words which follow sufficiently indicate the species of compulsion which he meant: "I believe it expedient further to be declared, that I am well pleased to see the Ministers of the Nabob, who have been chosen to my assistance." Lord Warley, the friend of Hastings, and his fellow-defender on his trial, speaks and pleads, and calls them without reserve, the instruments of an infamous plan. See "Discourse in the House of Lords, on the Evidence delivered at the Trial of Warren Hastings," &c. a quarto volume got up by Mr. Hastings, and distributed to his friends, but never published.

² Tenth Report, at supra, Appendix, No. 1.

BOOK V. the law of self-preservation, and the law of right. The
 CHAP. VII. truth also is, that his law of self-preservation, when ex-
 amined, and brought into conformity with the facts, implies a strong convenience, and nothing more. It was very convenient for the English at that time, to have a large body of troops maintained by a different treasury from their own. But it will hardly be maintained, of any rate by the friends of Mr. Hastings, that, in his hands, the British empire in India must have been destroyed, had it been compelled to rely upon its own resources.* It was far a great convenience, then, and for nothing else, that the English, without any claim of right, compelled the Nabob Vizir to maintain their troops; that is, treated him as the vassal which Mr. Hastings described him, and substantially seized and converted the rights of sovereign and master over both him and his country.

Another point well deserves to be considered : whether the original brigade of the Company's troops was not a force sufficient to protect the Nabob's country against all the dangers with which it was threatened. If the English who included in their own line of defence the boundaries of Oude, did not provide their due proportion, but impose the whole upon the Nabob, they defended themselves at his expense; they delivered themselves from a burden which was their own, and, by compelling the Nabob to bear it, violated the laws of justice.

It is also a question, whether the troops quartered upon him, in addition to that brigade, as they were kept in idleness in his dominions, were not, with all their expenses, of little use either to him or the Company. As they were not employed against the enemies of the Company, they could be of little use in repelling them; and the complaint of the Vizir that they and their officers acted as the masters in his country, and as a source both of expense and of disorder, is confirmed by Mr. Francis, who, in Council, pronounced it "notorious, that the English army had devoured his revenues and his country, under colour of defending it."

* It would be presumptuous to affirm that it must have been destroyed, but it was enough for the government to squander the possibility of such an event, in justly then employing all available resources for its prevention. It was the something more than convenience; it was the safety. — W.

† Extract of British Correspondence, 18th December, 1779: Fourth Report, at supra, Appendix, No. 7.

The Governor-General, when pressed for argument, made the following avowal; that ambiguity had been left in the treaty: and that it was the part of the strongest to ascribe to those ambiguities that meaning which he pleased! That this is a very common political procedure, every one knows. The allegation, however, is the essence, is, it is evident, only a varnish placed upon injustice by fraud. In the present case, besides, it happened, by a singular chance, that ambiguity had not existence, and the allegation of it was false. "So long only as the Nabob pleased," was the express condition of the compact, and the moment at which the Nabob desired relief, the most exact definition was applied.

The Governor-General surmised a circumstance, which always seems to have animated him to peculiar severity: that the idea of the instability of the existing government was among the means which emboldened the Nabob to complain. "I, for my own part," said he, "do not attribute the demand of the Nabob to any conviction impressed on his mind by the necessity of his affairs; but to the knowledge which his advisers have acquired of the weakness and divisions of our own government. This is a powerful motive with me, however inclined I might be, upon any other occasion, to yield to some part of his demands, to give them an absolute and unconditional refusal in the present; and even to bring to punishment, if my influence can produce that effect, those incendiaries who have endeavored to make themselves the instruments of division between us."¹

Under the enormous demands of the English, and the Nabob's inability to meet them, the debt with which he stood charged in 1780 amounted to the sum of 1,400,000*l*.

¹ The words are these: "As no period was stipulated for the continuance of the treaty, and as the troops which are to supply their place in his service, and any funds necessary for maintaining them; the time and mode of withdrawal of them is to be regulated by such relative necessity, and the demand is to be made by such parties, and at such times. There, rather by some proposition, or otherwise. If my council agree upon them, it shall be done, the minister must decide."

² It would be very curious, if the Governor-General at the commencement of the year 1780, was fully aware of the state of the Nabob's finances; and he certainly must be afterwards, viz. at the time of his journey to the upper provinces, was so conversant of that state, as to make it the principal ground of the extraordinary procedure which he adopted, when he, showing the inability of the Nabob, resumed the tribute and other objects of complaint.

³ Extract of General Compton's letter, 20th December, 1779; Compt. Report, at supra, Appendix, No. 1.

BOOK V. The Supreme Council continued pressing their demands, CHAP. VII. The Nabob, protesting that he had given up everything, that "in the country no further resources remained, and that he was without a subsistence," continued sinking more deeply in sorrow : till the time when the resolution of Mr. Hastings was adopted, to proceed to make with him a new arrangement upon the spot.

1781.

As a step preliminary to the affairs which the Governor-General meant to transact with the Nabob, he withdrew the resident, Mr. Bristow. This gentleman had been appointed by the party of General Clive, and when they removed Middleton, the private agent of Mr. Hastings : the Governor-General had removed him soon after the time when he recovered his superiority in the Council : the Court of Directors had ordered him to be replaced, as unjustly and improperly removed. Mr. Hastings, in disobedience of these orders, had refused to replace him, till it became a condition of the compromise treaty which he entered with Pannu : and he now removed him again with a fresh violation of the authority of the Court of Directors, in conformity with whose orders he occupied the place. Mr. Middleton was again appointed, on the reason, notwithstanding the condemnation of the Court of Directors, again avowed, that a person in the Governor-General's own confidence was necessary in that situation.

As the Governor-General intended to make a very short stay at Benares, and then proceed to Lucknow, the Nabob had already left his capital, in order to pay him the usual compliments of a meeting, when he received intelligence of the intercession. Mr. Hastings, who wished not for the interview in a state of humiliation, or under the appearance of receiving protection from his ally, endeavoured by a letter to make him return to his capital. But the Nabob was eager to show the interest which he took in the fate of the Governor-General, or eager to know the situation in which he was placed : and hastened with but a few of his attendants to Chunar. The English ruler was at pains to afford him a cordial reception. And with little debate or hesitation they made a memorable arrangement. In consequence of "the repeated and urgent representations of the Nabob, that he is unable to support the expenses of the temporary brigade of cavalry, and English officers with

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.

1764.

their battalions, as well as other gentlemen who are now paid by him," (such are the terms of the preamble to the covenant) it was agreed, on the part of the Governor-General, that from the expense of the temporary brigade, and of all other English troops, except the single brigade left with Saja-ul-dowla, and a regiment of sepoye for the resident's guard; and from the expense of all payments to English gentlemen, excepting those of the resident's office; the Nabob should be relieved.¹ According to another article, permission was granted him to resume such of the jaghires within his territories, as he himself might choose, with only this reservation, that a pension equal to the net rent should be paid to the holders of such of them as had the Company for their guarantee. An article was also inserted, according to which the Nabob was to be allowed, when the suitable time should arrive, to strip Fyzoola Khan of his territory, allowing him only a pension in its stead.

Such was all that was seen on the face of this agreement; where no advantage to the English appeared. The circumstances, however, which constituted the real nature of the transaction were only behind the curtain.

There were two Princesses, known by the name of the Begums; the one, the mother of Saja-ul-dowla, the late Nabob; the other, the widow of the late Nabob, and mother of the present. These Princesses the preceding sovereign had always treated with the highest consideration and respect; and allowed them a magnificent and expensive establishment. At the death of Saja-ul-dowla, these Prin-

¹ See page 264, where happens that Hastings, little more than a year before, treated as a concession, and rewarded with pecuniary, those services, by which sagged on to defeat a project he would that the Nabob enjoyed the relief which was now granted, and so much so that, from a failure of the country which the Government General was left, steadily up to him. To liberally provide the representation of gentlemen, as there fairly in this particular, to be rather as to almost any of a more hurried action of a distant person, and of the abstract: a duty as the highest degree marked back to the people who suffer, and to the governing power. It affords a number would speculate to compare the same, and letters of the Governor-General, when understanding, at the treatment of the year 1764, the propriety of compelling the Nabob to reduce the whole of the jaghires assigned upon him, and his situation, and letters, when necessary, up the propriety of relieving him from these burdens in 1761. The arguments did not address on the one occasion, as well as the captivities, nor as the consideration to those mentioned on the other. See the documents in the Second and Third Reports, of papers printed also for the House of Commons on the 22nd of Barker's Charges: and in the Minutes of Evidence on the Trial.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.

1782.

cesses, according to the custom of India, were left in possession of certain jaghires; that is, the government portion of the produce of a part of the land, over which, for the greater certainty of payment, the holder of the jaghire was allowed the powers of management and collection. This was the fund, from which the Begums provided for their state and subsistence; and for the state and subsistence of the numerous families of the preceding Nabobs, placed under their superintendence. Saja-al-dowla, at his death, had also left to the Begums the greater part of the treasure which happened to be in his hands; and magnification swelled the sum to a prodigious extent. Mr. Hastings had been disappointed in the mine which he expected to drain at Benares. His power and reputation depended upon the immediate acquisition of money. In the riches of the Begums appeared to lie an admirable resource. It was agreed between Mr. Hastings and the Nabob, that his jaghires should be relieved from the expense, which he was unable to bear, of the English troops and gentlemen; and he, on his part, engaged to strip the Begums of both their treasure and their jaghires, delivering to the Governor-General the proceeds.¹

This transaction, however objectionable it may at first sight appear, Mr. Hastings represented as attended with circumstances which rendered it not only just but necessary. The weight of these circumstances ought to be carefully and impartially considered.²

In the year 1776, not long after the death of Saja-al-

¹ To enable the Nabob "to discharge his debt to the Company in the shortest time possible," that is, to get money from them, "and to prevent his affairs from being a long business of his life," "there, owing money, instead of seeking it, is declared by the Governor-General to have been "the chief object of his negotiations with the Nabob." Letter to Mr. Middleton, 23d September, 1782.

² Although the text does not repeat the enormous fortunes which the emigrated Nabobs and Begums acquired, and has been by some supposed to demand for the personal loss of the nabobs in a hundred years, the numerous instances of their success at the art of dissipation dispense. The jaghires and treasures of the begums were of considerable value, and what is of more consequence, were disposed of. The easy success of the Nabobs in the course of his negotiation to pass without interfering with the pleasures of the Begums, but their occupancy of the jaghires may have been a great loss to the Nabobs; and the result, which had been his father's war, by the Mohammedan law, necessarily his own: a mother being entitled to one-eighth only of her husband's property, and a grandmother having no share in inheritance when a mother is living. Therefore, as conquerors or not, the Nabobs had still retained the major part of the great wealth and power which the Begums had appropriated.—H.

Dowla, his widow, the mother of the reigning Nabob, complained, by letter, to the English government, of the treatment which she received from her son. She stated that various sums, to the extent of twenty-six lacs of rupees, had been extorted from her, under the plea of her being in want of money to discharge his obligations to the English chiefs; and that a recent demand had been urged for no less than thirty lacs, as absolutely necessary to relieve him, under his engagements to the Company; and to save his affairs from a ruinous embarrassment. Upon the faith of the English government, to which alone she would trust, she agreed to make this sacrifice; and it was solemnly covenanted, on the part of her son, and guaranteed on the part of the English government,* that no further invasion should ever be made upon her, in the full enjoyment of her jaghires and offices, whether she resided within the dominions of Asaph ul Dowla, or chose to reside in any other place. This agreement was far from producing peace between the Nabob and the Begum. Perpetual complaints of injurious treatment were made by the Princess, and the business of mediation was found by the English resident a difficult and delicate task.

In the beginning of the year 1778, these dissensions arose to a great height, and the aged Princess, "whose residence the treatment of her grandson" (so was the words of Mr. Middleton, the resident) "seems to have rendered intolerable and disgusting to her," resolved to abandon her dominions, and repair on a pilgrimage to Mecca. To the execution of this design, the Nabob was exceedingly averse; because it would withdraw from the sphere of his power the great treasure which he imagined she possessed, and which at her death, if not before, he could render his own. Both the Nabob and his grandmother applied to the resident; the one for the purpose of procuring his influence to prevail upon the Begum to remain; the other for the purpose of procuring it to

* This covenant was the grand error of the whole proceeding; for the English has no possible right to interfere in a family dispute. It was the unauthorized act of the Resident at Lucknow, always directly sanctioned by the Company, and approved in by the Council, on the plea of an having been done, and from the reluctance of the Company to withdraw their support from the Resident. *Mss. of East. Ind. Co.*

BOOK V. induce the Nabob to allow her to depart. The Begum
 1781. complained that she was subject to daily extortions and
 insults; that the Nabob withheld the allowance which
 had been established by the late Vizir for the maintenance
 of the family of her deceased husband; that he had
 resumed the jaghires and emoluments of her servants and
 dependants; that he had made no provision for the main-
 tenance of the women and children (a very numerous
 family) of the late Vizir, his own father; that the educa-
 tion and condition of the children were wholly neglected;
 and that the favourites of the Nabob were allowed, and
 even encouraged, to degrade his family by their oppres-
 sions and insults. The resident reported to the Governor-
 General and Council, that "the deportment of the Nabob
 toward her, his family, and relations in general, was, he
 could not but admit, very exceptionable; that her claims
 were very moderate and just, and such as it would be
 natural to suppose the Nabob could not in decency refuse."
 He even suggested, if the Nabob should refuse to comply
 with these reasonable demands, "that the influence of
 the English government should be exerted, to secure to
 the Begum whatever might appear to be her rights;" in
 which case he doubted not that her design of departing
 with her treasure would be willingly abandoned.

While the resident was endeavouring, but without suc-
 cess, to prevail upon the Nabob to afford to his grand-
 mother a reasonable satisfaction, he received from the
 second of the Princesses a representation of the violations
 which had been committed by her son of the conditions
 of the recent treaty; a treaty which she called upon the
 English government, in quality of its guarantee, to pro-
 tect. The resident in vain endeavoured to improve the
 behaviour of the Nabob; and in reporting upon his disap-
 pointment, observes, "I have on all occasions, as much as
 possible, avoided troubling the Honourable Board with any
 matters which reflect upon the conduct or government of
 the Nabob, wishing rather to check and obviate abuses, by
 friendly admonitions and remonstrances to his Excellency
 himself, than to correct them by an appeal to your au-
 thority. But such is his Excellency's disposition, and so
 entirely has he lost the confidence and affection of his
 subjects, that, unless some restraint is imposed upon him,

which would effectually secure those who live under the protection of his government, from violence and oppression, I am but too well convinced, that no man of reputation or property will long continue in these provinces."¹

BOOK V.

CHAP. VIII.

1783.

On the 23rd of March, the Council-General, in which Mr. Hastings had then the ascendancy,² took under their consideration the complaints of the Begums. With regard to the eldest of the Princesses, and those of the relations and subjects of the Nabob, in favor of whom the guarantee of the Company was not interposed, they held themselves incapable, in any other way than that of remonstrance, and by tokens of displeasure, to oppose the oppressions of the Nabob. But as they had become parties to a treaty for the protection of the second of the Begums, the mother of the Nabob, they determined to make use of their authority on her behalf. On the expediency which he had practised with respect to the elder of the Begums, and some of his other relations, their instructions to the resident were in the following words, "We desire you will repeat your remonstrances to the Vizir on these points, in the name of this government; representing to him the consequences of such an arbitrary proceeding; the reproach to which his honour and reputation, as well as ours, from being connected with him, will be exposed, by such acts of cruelty and injustice; and the right which we derive, from the nature of our alliance with him, to expect that he will pay a deference to our remonstrances." They add, "with respect to the *Las Begum* (the mother of the Nabob), her grievances came before us on a very different feeling. She is entitled to our protection, by an act, not sought by us, but solicited by the Nabob himself. We therefore empower and direct you, to afford your support and protection to her, in the due maintenance of all the rights she possesses, in virtue of the treaty established between her and her son, under the guarantee of the Company."³

Such was the light in which the relative conduct of the

¹ Mr. Middleton's Letter to Gov.-Gen. and Council, dated Syndah, and Feb. 1778. Report, &c. &c.

² The members were, Mr. Hastings, Mr. Cornwall, Mr. Pownall, Mr. Clive.

³ Report, &c. &c. The documents to which reference is here made were all reported, both to the Council called for by the House of Commons, and to the House of Lords, taken at the Trial in Westminster Hall.

BOOK V. Nalob and the Begums appeared to the Governor-General
CHAP. VIII. and Council, in 1778; and on the footing which was then

1781.

established, matters between them remained, till the meeting between Mr. Hastings and Asaph ul Dowla at Chunar, in 1781, when the Nalob was, by treaty, allowed to seize the property of the Princes, and of others his relations; and, on the condition of bestowing that property upon the English, actually rewarded for the seizure, by obtaining relief from a permanent and oppressive expense. The reasons which Mr. Hastings adduced for this proceeding are, that the Begums had endeavoured to excite insurrection in Oude in favour of Cheyte Sing, and that they employed their power and influence to embarrass and disturb the Nalob's administration.

If the testimony of an accuser shall pass for proof, when that accuser derives great advantage from the suppression of guilt, and great loss from the supposition of innocence, no individual is under protection*. It is further to be remarked, that the insurrection at Benares happened on the 18th of August; and the treaty by which the Nalob was authorized to resume the jaghires was signed at Chunar, on the 18th of September. The Begums, who had first to hear of the insurrection at Benares, and then to spread disaffection through a great kingdom, had therefore, little time for the contrivance of guilt. Besides, when the government of the Nalob, as the English themselves so perfectly knew, had fallen into contempt and detestation with all his subjects, it was very natural to suppose, that the servants and dependants of the Begums, who were among the severest of the sufferers, would not be the least forward in exhibiting their sentiments. And as the exclusion of the Begums rendered it impossible for them to superintend the conduct of their servants abroad, they were less than other people responsible for their conduct.

* This is arguing as if Hastings derived a personal advantage from the guilt of the Begums—an obvious advantage resulting from the recovery of the wealth lawfully derived by the Begums, was entirely public. There is and be no doubt that the position of the Begums, their resources, their armed followers, their possessions, and their example, were regarded in the highest degree to the government of the Viceroy.—G.

† If the Begums were innocent of responsibility, it followed that they were well as lawless persons. They had no business with arms, unless as if they could not prevent them, all denied them property what they pleased. The law is not true. The Begums had the means of controlling their servants.

But the observation of greatest importance yet remains to be addressed. What was the proof, upon the strength of which the Begums were selected for a singular and aggravated punishment? Answer: no direct proof whatsoever. Hardly an attempt is made to prove any thing except a *reverser*. Mr. Hastings' friends are produced in great numbers to say that they heard a *reverser*. Upon allegation of a *reverser*, that the Begums abetted Choyra Sing, judgment was pronounced, and punishment followed.

Before a just judgment can be pronounced, and punishment can be justifiably inflicted, it is necessary that trial should take place, and that the party accused should be heard in his defence. Was this justice afforded the Begums? Not a little of it. So far from it; that Mr. Hastings, while yet in the heat of the insurrection at Clanton, when the Begums had scarcely had time to rebel, much less had he had time to make any enquiry into the imputation of guilt; at a moment when all was confusion, alarm and hurry; when everything was ready to be reported, and everything to be believed; pronounced a final judgment, to supersede the guarantee of the English government, to strip the Princesses of Oude of their estates, and give them up helpless into the hands of the Nabob.

Of the evidence adduced upon this important point, it is highly requisite to give a short account. If anything be indispensable to righteous judgment, it is, that evidence should first be collected, and judgment follow after. Mr. Hastings pronounced judgment, and sent his instrument, the Nabob, to inflict punishment in the first place. Some time after all this was done, he then proceeded to collect evidence. But evidence of what sort? He brought forward persons who, he knew (or might know) beforehand, would give the sort of evidence he wished; and a month after judgment had been pronounced, got them to make affidavits, before Sir Elijah Impey, of the facts, or supposed facts, of which it was useful for him to establish the belief. It is altogether unnecessary to allude to the character or credibility of the individuals

But had it been otherwise, as asserted at the end, it would at once justify whatever measures were necessary to strip them their resources and power; they could not safely be trusted with.—W.

BOOK V. who were taken into his service. It is perfectly sufficient
 CHAP. VIII. to observe, that this is a mode of getting up a proof, by
 means of which there never can be any difficulty of get-
 ting a proof of anything. Find a number of persons,

1781.

even if not mendacious, with minds sufficiently partial to you, or sufficiently influenced by circumstances, to believe as you would have them (often a very easy matter, whatsoever may be the state of the facts), and get them to set down whatever they and you think proper, exposed to no cross-examination, exposed to no counter-evidence; and think, whether it would not be an extraordinary case, in which, upon these terms, any man, more especially a powerful ruler, could remain without a defence.

The fact is, that recourse to such a mode of defence betrays a deep consciousness, that the conduct in favour of which it is set up, stands much in need of a defence, and seems pretty strongly to imply that no better defence can be found for it.

The behaviour of the Supreme Judge, in leading himself to this transaction, exposed him to the severest strictures from the Managers for the Commons' House of Parliament on the trial of Mr. Hastings. He acknowledged, upon his examination, that he went from Benares, where his business was concerted between him and Mr. Hastings, to Lucknow, the capital of Oude, for the express purpose of taking those affidavits, though he acknowledged that "undoubtedly he did not consider his jurisdiction as extending to the province of Oude;" and though, in taking an affidavit, there is so little occasion for any remarkable qualifications in the Judge, that all he has to do is to hear a person swear that something is a paper is true, and to testify that he has heard him do so. "What the affidavits contained," said the Judge when examined upon the trial, "I did not know; nor do I at present, for I have never read them." He also declared that he did not know, whether the persons who swore to them had ever read them. He also said, "I believe Mr. Middleton, in consequence of a letter Mr. Hastings wrote to him, had communicated the subject-matter of what they were to depose to." At the time of taking the affidavits of the natives, not so much as a sworn

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
—
1781.

interpreter was present. The judge declared he never asked of one of the deponents, whether they knew the contents of their affidavits; and, "had no means of knowing whether the deponents in the Persian or the Hindo language understood anything of the depositions which they gave, except that they brought their affidavits ready drawn." He also admitted that he had no means of knowing whether, of the affidavits which were taken before him, the whole were published by Mr. Hastings, or whether all that had been unfavourable to him had not been suppressed. In fact, the examination of Sir Elijah Impey, upon the subject of affidavits, discloses a curious scene, in which it appears that one object alone was in view, namely that of getting support to any allegations which Mr. Hastings had set up.¹ A set of affidavits, thus circumstanced, could be no proof of the guilt of an absent party.²

These affidavits affirm not one criminal fact, on the part of the Begums. All that they affirm with regard to these Princesses is rumour merely. The witnesses had heard that the Begums instigated that disaffection, which manifested itself in almost every part of the Nizam's dominions. In one sense, this is evidence of the baseness and dishonourableness of Mr. Hastings; for undoubtedly it goes a certain way to prove that no other means were used to put matter into those affidavits.

Some of them speak directly to certain tumultuary proceedings in Gerookpore, one of the districts of Oude. But the insurrection, if such it might be called, was not against the British authority, for there was none there to oppose. The Nizam's sepoye were refractory for want of pay. An *Amil*, or master of the Begums, showed a disinclination to permit a party of the Nizam's sepoye

¹ See Minutes of Evidence at the trial, p. 552 to 555, and 555 to 558 — &c.

² An equal thing is universally stated, and an equal is said to be Sir Elijah Impey's own account of the transaction. He states that he suggested the appointment to Hastings, that people in England might be misled that Hastings in his previous had uttered no more than the truth. He thought the public would desire to be well convinced from circumstances on such terms before a judicial authority, and offered his services accordingly. The narrative of this age agrees with a point of almost verisimilitude, and the suppression of the Court district was a work of supererogation. His appointment was a measure out of its nature, but it deserved not the structure made upon it by the managers of the Company, ministers of which the activity was displayed by the clear and steady manner in which Sir Elijah's evidence was given.—*W.*

BOOK V. to pass through his district, which he knew they would
 CHAP. VII. plunder, and hence impose upon him a severe pecuniary
 tax. And the country people in general showed a hostile
 disposition to these same rapoys of the Nubob. What has
 this to do, in the smallest degree, with the British author-
 1784. ity? And if the rapoys had been British, which they
 were not, what proof is given, that the Begums were the
 cause of the hatred they experienced, or knew of the com-
 motions to which that hatred gave birth?

Rumour affirmed that the Begums promoted the dis-
 affection. If rumour, on such an occasion, were a proper
 ground of belief, rumour affirmed that the Nubob himself,
 together with his brother Saadat Ali, not only abetted the
 disaffection, but had entered into a deliberate plan for the
 expulsion of the English from the country. Why is
 rumour to be evidence against one, not evidence against
 another, just as it suits the pleasure and convenience of
 Mr. Hastings?

One of the deponents, who spoke most distinctly to what
 he reckoned symptoms of hostility on the part of the
 Begums, was a Major Macdonald, an English officer in the
 service of the Nubob. He states that his march, at the
 head of a party of the Nubob's rapoys, was opposed by
 Zalim Sing, a Zemindar, who had long been treated by the
 Nubob as a rebel. This hostile chief showed, even to Mac-
 donald's people, a paper purporting to be a command from
 the Nubob, restoring him to his Zemindary, and vesting
 him with the government of certain districts; and he in-
 formed them he had the Nubob's instructions to drive
 away the affidavits, "the Fringes out of his districts, that
 he only waited for the fortunate hour, boats being already
 provided from Fyzabad (which the deponent knew abso-
 lutely to be the case) to cross the Gogra, and carry the

¹ Certainly to the Nubob's efforts was no new thing with the Begums, who have treated as rebellion all it suited the time and the hour. In January, 1776, when the Begums was complaining to the English government, and when it was offering her protection, the Resident in Quila writes to the Governor-General and Council, "In making this complaint, the Begum Begum has forgotten conduct of her own affairs, which have hitherto preserved a total independence of the Nubob's authority. Her 1st officers of his govern-
 ment; and refused obedience to her Perwannahs." *Minutes*, at supra, p. 264.

² Whether the numerous hostile to the policy of the Nubob were founded at all upon facts or conjectures, but certainly they were shown to be of such rapid
 which he put himself in the power of Hastings at Chunar.—W.

Nabob's orders into execution. Further, that his Excellency had altered his sentiments regarding the part he was to take in the present contest; that his Excellency set out with the intent of adhering to his treaty with the Company, but that Mirza Asadut Ali wrote him he was to leave him no way assistance; that now was the time to shake off the English yoke; that it might not be prudent to declare himself at once; that he had only to stand neuter; and, under pretence of defending themselves, direct his subjects to take arms, and endeavour to prevent the junction of the English forces, when the matter would work of itself. The deponent said, he believed the reports, as before related, at that time, and still is of opinion, the threats contained were intended to be carried into execution had the league been successful.¹

Of the disturbances, moreover, in Coruckpore, and the hostile disposition manifested by the people to the agents of the Nabob, we are presented with another and a very different account. They are said to have been the effect of oppression; of oppression, cruel, and extraordinary, even as compared with the common degree of oppression under the government of the Nabob. It was given in evidence, that the country, from a very flourishing state in which it existed under the preceding Nabob, had been reduced to misery and desolation; that taxes were levied, not according to any fixed rule, but according to the pleasure of the collector; that imprisonments and scourges for enforcing payment, were common in every part of the country; that emigrations of the people were frequent; and that many of them were so distressed as to be under the necessity of selling their children.²

The country then oppressed, was under the management of Colonel Hanny, an officer of the Company, who had obtained permission to quit for a time the Company's service, and enter into that of the Nabob. He was allowed to rent the provinces of Coruckpore and Basilob; and, commanding also the military force in the district, controlled the whole of the local government. Mr. Holt, who was appointed assistant to the resident at the Vizir's court about the beginning of the year 1780, was asked, "Did you hear that Colonel Hanny was himself in particular danger

¹ Minutes, at pages, p. 302, 303.

² *Ibid.* p. 303-304.

BOOK V. from the instructions in 1781!—I did.—What do you
CHAP. VIII. suppose those instructions arose from at first—did you
1781. ever hear of any machinations or contrivances of parti-
cular persons, or did you ever hear what the cause was they
objected to?—I have heard it was owing to the miscon-
duct and misgovernment of Colonel Humey.¹

Captain Edwards, another of the Company's officers, who
had obtained permission to accept of service with the
Vair, and who was side-de-rang to that Prince at the time
of Mr. Hastings' quarrel with Choyta Sing, was asked, "In
what situation was Colonel Humey," meaning in the ser-
vice of the Vair!—"I understand that he routed a great
part of the Nabob's country, called Barmich and Gornok-
pora.—Do you know what was the general state of the
country with respect to Colonel Humey's administration
in those provinces?—That the measures of his government
appeared to the natives there very unjustifiable and op-
pressive.—Did you ever see, or know, any fact or circum-
stance from which you could infer in the same manner?—
When I accompanied his Excellency the Nabob into that
country (I believe it was in the latter end of the year 1778,
or early in the year 1780), the country seemed to be little
cultivated, and very few inhabitants made their appear-
ance; and the few that were in the country seemed much
distressed; and I understood that the country had been
better peopled, but that they had all left the country in
consequence of Colonel Humey's administration. Was it
at Lucknow that you heard the reports concerning Colonel
Humey, and his oppressions? It was both at Lucknow
and at many other places: it was a general report.²

¹ Humey, *id. supra*, p. 395. See in the same passage the evidence of Colonel Arbuthnot, p. 395—56. Some other passages should have been quoted from the evidence of this witness of its own worth, who is so good a man. With regard to the very subject, he was asked, "What effect the administration of Colonel Humey had in respecting the natives?—I saw no marks of an operation which I was desirous to see; but you would think you saw no marks of oppression?—What I mean by oppression, is, an abuse of power.—In answer to Mr. Hastings, it should be said, that when he was an ten-year-old, and heard one thing and another, he was between sixteen and seventeen years of age. This I will say. It is something towards the dignity of history to quote such testimony as this, in depreciation of a great public character." *id.*

² Minutes, *id. supra*, p. 398, 399. Of the instructions now proposed part of least was suggested by indignation at the oppression of a great number of persons in the Part of Oude, &c. followed by a design to effect their rescue. See Minutes, *id. supra*, p. 393, where a letter of Colonel Humey's is likewise alleged, to six officers at the spot, stating that the crimes of those persons would infect the country. See the Correspondence of Captain Williams, throughout, 1841, p. 100—101.

It is also a circumstance of great importance, that when Colonel Henny entered the service of the Nabob in 1774, he was a man, in date, or what is called by the witness "involved circumstances." Before the end of 1781, that is in a period of about three years, he was understood to have realized a fortune of 300,000*l*.¹

It is now, however, in justice to Colonel Henny, to be observed, with regard both to the oppressions of which he is accused, and the vast amount of his fortune, that most of the evidence adduced is evidence rather to the favour of these facts, than to the facts themselves. But if this be a plea, as it undoubtedly is, in behalf of Colonel Henny, it is a plea.² It must be remembered, no less availing in favour of the Begums. It appears, indeed, with strong evidence from the cross-examination of Mr. Hastings' own witnesses upon the trial, that a considerable number of the Rajas or ancient chiefs of the country,³ who till that time had remained in possession of their respected districts, paying an annual sum, as revenue, to the Vicer, were driven out during the administration of Colonel Henny; and that they retained the country in a state of perpetual disturbance, by endless efforts for their restoration.⁴ This accounts for the turbulent state of the country. Whether it was injustice, by which the Rajas were expelled; or whether it was impossible to make them obedient subjects, sufficient evidence is not afforded to determine.

It is at any rate certain, that Colonel Henny became in the highest degree odious to the Vicer; he dismissed him his service before the end of the year 1781, and having heard that he was using his influence to be sent back, he wrote to the Governor-General, about the beginning of September following, in these extraordinary terms:

"My country and house belong to you; there is no difference. I hope that you desire in your heart the good

¹ Minutes, at 209*l*, p. 209, 211.

² Something more; the witness, it is clear that the 'fortune' to Colonel Henny's dis-advantage was realized with a hesitancy, and adopted with a modification, not shown in those that were unfavourable to the Begums.—W.

³ Here again the word Rajas is misinterpreted. In the District of Carnarvon, every landlord, however petty, takes the name of Raja. These 'ancient chiefs,' however, are the owners of the land, and they were nothing but tributary farmers of the revenue, who would not pay their rents. Hastings was always, even in truthfulness distorted.—W.

⁴ Ibid. p. 207—208*l*.

BOOK V. of my concerns. Colonel Hanny is inclined to request
 CHAP. VIII. your permission to be employed in the affairs of this
 1281. quarter. If, by any means, any matter of this country
 dependent on me, should be intrusted to the Colonel, I
 swear by the Holy Prophet, that I will not remain here,
 but will go from hence to you. From your kindness let us
 concern, dependent upon me, be intrusted to the Colonel ;
 and oblige me by a speedy answer, which may set my
 mind at ease."¹

It is also a most suspicious circumstance, that the ac-
 cusations of the Begums seem originally to have come from
 Colonel Hanny, and to have depended almost entirely
 upon the reports of him and his officers ; who were deeply
 interested in finding, for the disturbances of the country,
 which they ruled, a cause different from their own mal-
 intentions.

When the Nabob departed from Chunar, at which time,
 according to the statements of Mr. Hastings, the Begums
 were in a state of rebellion, he chose to pass through Fy-
 mabed, the place of their residence, accompanied merely by
 his usual attendants, and about five or six hundred horse ;
 and, according to the opinion of Captain Edwards, probably
 entered the city with only a few attendants, as in general
 his rule of travelling far exceeded the utmost speed of a
 body of horse.

As every mark of suspicion that rebellion was excited
 or intended by the Begums was thus removed from the
 behaviour of the Nabob ; so not a single expression ever
 appears to have been uttered from him, which implied
 that they had been guilty of any such offence ; and yet
 if he had conceived any apprehension from them, it was
 to the English he must have flown for protection, and to
 them he would naturally have communicated his fears.
 His aide-de-camp, Captain Edwards, who had accompanied
 him to Chunar, and proceeded with the rest of the troops
 to Lucknow, when the Nabob left the direct road to his
 capital to pass through Fymabed, was asked, "Did you hear
 upon the return of the Nabob, and Hyder Beg, to Luck-
 now, any charge, or any thing that led you to believe, that
 discoveries of rebellion or treason had been made by the
 Nabob while at Fymabed ?—No, I did not.—When did you

¹ *Alamgir, v. caput, p. 262.*

first hear of any accusation, or charge, of any rebellion or disaffection, against the Begums?—Some time after I arrived at Lucknow; about a fortnight after, I heard the gentlemen in the Resident's family mention the different accounts, that Colonel Harnay and his officers had sent.—Was the intelligence you received upon that subject confined to communications, made by Colonel Harnay and his officers, to the Resident's office, or did you hear of any other sources? I heard that such reports prevailed at Lucknow, among the natives, which were not generally believed; and there were a few who mentioned they had heard the reports.—The question put to you is, whether you heard of any other instances than those mentioned by Colonel Harnay and his officers?—I heard my own servants say, as they went through the market-place, they had heard from the Resident's servants, that they had heard such reports did prevail.—Meaning the reports from Colonel Harnay?—Yes, meaning those reports.—Did the natives in general give any credit to these reports?—No, I do not think they did.—Did you not hear more of this sort of report after the treasure was seized in January, 1784?—I did; I heard the treasure was seized in consequence of the report, and the charge and accusation, made by Colonel Harnay and some of his officers, that the Begums had been in a state of rebellion.*

As Colonel Harnay and his officers, white and black, were almost the only persons whose affidavits, originally taken at Lucknow, imputed any acts of disaffection to the Begums; so they were his officers, including the Paymaster of his troops, who alone, or nearly so, were called to prove the allegations in England.† One or two other persons, the real of whose testimony was required, could speak to nothing but reports, at Allahabad, or at Calcutta. And it appears, with great force of evidence, from the examination of the witnesses adduced in favour of Mr. Hastings, that the accusation rested upon the allegations of Harnay, and his officers: who, themselves, could affirm nothing but rumours, or facts of which it is more probable that they themselves were the cause than the Begums; and that the story,

* *Mem. of Harnay*, p. 177.

† Colonel Harnay might have been an indifferent administrator of a province, it might that it was a general, but that is no reason why he and his officers should be suspected of treachery.

BOOK V. being taken up by Mr. Hastings, and propagated by him
CHAP. VIII. and his friends, with all the authority of government, was
spread abroad among the English throughout the country,
and by them, in the usual manner, upon no better authority,
passively, but not the less fervently and confidently, believed.¹

1784.

The departure of the Nabob from Chunar, for the purpose of selling the property of his mother and his grandmother, was urged by Mr. Hastings: upon the arrival, however, of that Prince in his own dominions, he manifested a great reluctance to enter upon the onerous work. The Governor-General waited, as he himself informs us, "with much impatience." He urged the Nabob by the strongest remonstrances. He enjoined the Resident, in the most urgent and most peremptory terms, to leave no effort unattempted for the accomplishment of this important event. The reluctance, however, of the Nabob continued unabated; and Mr. Middleton, the Resident, was instructed to supersede the authority of the Nabob, and perform the necessary business by the operation of English power. He proceeded at last to the execution of the Governor-General's commands; but the Nabob, shocked at the degradation which he would sustain in the eyes of his people, if acts under his government of so much importance should appear to emanate from any power but his own, undertook the unpleasant task.² The words of the Resident to the Governor-General are instructive: "I had the honour to advise you on the 7th instant, informing you of the conversation which had passed between the Nabob and me on the subject of retaining the jaghires; and the step I had taken in consequence." The step was

¹ See *Memoirs of Evidence for the Association*, p. 201. "On Decr. for the Begums, p. 1822—1823.—35.

There can be no doubt that the allegation was in the main true,—that the Begums were indebted to the British Government,—that they derived no, if they did not authorize, loans of money from the treasury of Oude Begum,—that their bankers were prepared to raise on account. There was no solid reason, but there was a much notion of bonds having much justified credence.—36.

² According to Mr. Hastings, the Nabob had no objection to plunder the Begums. But he had given jaghires to certain persons, with Mr. Hastings tells us, "favours, and others of that nature." "The propriety of his doing so," there he wished not to resist; and, therefore, endeavoured to depart from his engagement of relinquishing situations. But the court appeared not willing to account for the other. It would require the jaghires of his collectors, which were of selling amount, what it could have hindered him from giving them something of equal or greater value?"

the issuing of *permanas* or warrants to the *Annals* or *Agrippa*, on the *placards*, to desert from acting in behalf of the *Regime*. "His Excellency appeared to be very much hurt and incensed at the measure; and loudly complains of the treachery of his ministers, first, in giving you any hopes that such a measure would be adopted; and, secondly, in promising me their whole support in carrying it through. But as I apprehended" (he means, especially) "rather than suffer it to appear that the point had been carried in opposition to his will, he at length yielded a nominal acquiescence, and has this day issued his own *permanas* to that effect; declaring, however, at the same time, both to me and his ministers, that it is an act of *conspiration*;"

The assumption of the pighires was not the only measure which had been considered and resolved against the Berbers. These measures were to be aimed: 'The Nalob

[illegible][illegible]

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.
—
1782.

The expedient was attended with success. The Begums or rather the elder of the two, in whose possession, as head of the female department, the treasure was placed, was wrought upon by these proceedings to make a surrender; and money was paid to the English resident to the amount of the bond given to the Company by the Nabob for his balance of the year 1779-80.

The cawacks were not yet released. Another balance remained, for the year 1780-81. Money for the discharge of this remaining debt was also demanded of the Prisoners. "She declared with apparent truth," says the Resident, "that she had delivered up the whole of the property in her hands, excepting goods; which, from the experience," he adds, "of the small produce of the sale of a former payment made by her in that mode, I refused, as likely to amount, in my opinion, to little or nothing." Money, however, was absolutely required; and new securities were employed. To the officer guarding the cawacks, the following letter was addressed by the Resident, dated the 20th of January, 1782:—"Sir, when this note is delivered to you, I have to desire, that you order the two prisoners to be put in irons, keeping them from all food, &c., agreeable to my instructions of yesterday. (Signed) Nath. Middleton."

The sufferings to which they were thus exposed, drew from the cawacks the offer of an engagement for the payment of the demanded sum, which they undertook to complete, within the period of one month, from their own credit and effects. The engagement was taken, but the confinement of the cawacks was not relaxed; the mother and grandmother of the Nabob remained under a guard; and the Resident was commanded, by Mr. Hastings, to make with them no settlement whatsoever. In the mean time, the payment upon the bond extracted from the cawacks was begun; the Begums delivered what they declared was the last remaining portion of their effects, including down to their table utensils; and the Resident himself reported, "that no proof had yet been obtained of

present in the service of the Vizir, they had nothing's interest to do with the proceedings, and the cawacks also and were the wife of the Nabob and her maidens. The orders for their confinement were addressed to the officers on duty, through the Resident, but they complied with the Nabob.—*W.*

LOOK V. their having more." Before the 22nd of February, 1782, quæ. viii
 upwards of 800,000*l.* had been received by the Resident for the use of the Company; and there remained on the extracted bond a balance, according to the accounts, of 25,000*l.*; and of no more than 50,000*l.* according to the Resident. The prisoners entreated for their release, desiring their inability to procure any further sums of money while they remained in confinement; but expressing a confident hope of being able to raise the balance required, if they were allowed to go abroad among their friends, and solicit their assistance. So far from any relaxation of their sufferings, higher measures of severity were resorted to. On the 18th of May, after they had lain two months in irons, the officer who commanded the guard under which they were confined, wrote to the Resident in the following words: "The prisoners, Behar Ali Khan, and Jemur Ali Khan, who seem to be very sickly, have requested their wrists might be taken off for a few days, that they might take medicine, and walk about the garden of the place where they are confined. Now, as I am sure that they will be equally severe without their irons as with them, I think it my duty to inform you of this request. I desire to know your pleasure concerning it." The nature of the orders under which the Resident acted, rendered it necessary for him to refuse the smallest mitigation of their torments. Nay, within a few days, that is, on the 1st of June, other tortures were held up to them. They were threatened to be removed to Lucknow, where, unless they performed without delay, what they wanted themselves unable to perform, they would not only be subjected to still severer torments, but called upon to atone for other crimes. As these crimes were not specified, the threat was well calculated to act upon their fears. It involved the prospect of unbounded punishment; any infliction, in short, for which persons with arbitrary power in their hands could find or feign a pretence. Several expedients were offered, both by the prisoners and the Begum, who were alarmed at the prospect of losing, by removal, their confidential servants. These expedients were not treated as objectionable, on any other score except that of time. They were rejected. The prisoners were removed to Lucknow, and evils inflicted upon them, of which the

nature is not disclosed, but of which the following letter, addressed by the assistant-resident to the commanding officer of the English guard, is a disgraceful proof. "Sir, the Nabob having determined to inflict corporal punishment upon the prisoners under your guard, this is to desire that his officers, when they shall come, may have free access to the prisoners, and be permitted to do with them as they shall see proper."

DOCK T.
CHAP. VII.
—
1792.

All the ministers, however, of severity which could be derived, passed unavailing, though the women of the Zemana were at various times deprived of food till they were on the point of perishing for want. The rigours went on increasing till the month of December, when the Resident, convinced, both by his own experience, and the representations of the officer commanding the guard by which the prisoners were treated, that every thing which force could accomplish was already performed, and that if any hope remained of further payments, it was by lenient methods alone they could be obtained, removed, of his own authority, the guard from the palace of the Begums, and set at liberty their ministers. An ediculus had been used to make the severities appear the act of the Nabob, so the Resident strove to make the favour appear the bounty of the man by whom the English sceptre was swayed; declaring to the Begums, that it was the Governor-General from whom the relief had been derived, and that he "was the spring from whence they were restored to their dignity and consequence." The letter in which the commanding officer reported the execution of the order of release, exhibits what no other words can express. "I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the first instant; and, in consequence, immediately enlarged the prisoners, Behar Ali Khan, and Jemur Ali Khan, from their confinement, a circumstance that gave the Begums, and the city of Fyrmabad in general, the greatest satisfaction. In tears of joy, Behar and Jemur Ali Khan expressed their warm acknowledgments to the Governor-General, his Excellency the Nabob Vizir, and to you, Sir, for restoring them to that invaluable blessing, liberty; for which they would ever return the most grateful remembrance: and at their request, I transmit you the enclosed letters. I wish you had been present at the

since no prudent man would have risked the chance of discovery which the publicity of a banker's transactions implied. Mr Hastings informed the Directors of what he had received, in his letter dated the 20th of January, 1782; and in very plain terms requested their permission, as a reward for his services, to make the money his own.*

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.
—
1781.

In the beginning of 1782, when little or no progress had been made in realizing the sums of money which the Governor-General expected from his arrangements with the Nabob, he began to express, in a strain of unusual severity, his disapprobation of the Resident, Mr Middleton: either really dissatisfied with him, under the failure of his efforts, or, by a concerted plan, anticipating the commands of the Directors for the restoration of Benares, by removing the confidential agent, now when the confidential transactions were closed, that the restoration of Benares might carry the appearance of his own act, and receive its consecration before the commands of the Directors should arrive. Manifesting extreme anxiety for the money, or, at least of which he had ventured on disreputable ground, "the appointment," he said, "which I contracted with the Nabob, has yet served only to gratify revenge, or some concealed interest, and to make me odious to my own countrymen."† The Resident had at first suggested

* Letter of the Governor-General, 14 months Report, at page 10, Appendix B, No. 1. "What he should have wished for has been out of him, & that than any consideration of the Company's advantage, and under the most advantage, but a very improper notion may be supposed. I have from any of the Nabob's direct or indirect relations, the money must have obtained on their account, and could not be given to me personally, and without the sanction of the Directors and agents. The want of the Directors cleared the gift of the Nabob in all respects, is not reported or any account, no account of the Governor-General, or even himself, and the donation is, reported by him Governor-General without the knowledge of the public."

† "The only fault which could be imputed to the conduct of Benares, is, that the Resident should not have been consulted in the matter of the donation to the Nabob. As for the great matter for the interest of his reputation, as well as of the public interest, it is, that the Resident and very eminent and influential of Middleton, should be, in the name of Hastings, procuring the money, and giving it to the Nabob, and not to the public."

† Letter to Middleton, dated Benares, 1st of January, 1782. Extract from Papers of the Hon. E. of Cornwallis in the House of Commons, 17th of March, 1782, p. 52. "The Governor-General, showing a great similarity in the implications on each character is, namely the Government in Great Britain, and the Court of Directors, said he, 'that your address upon all official and public subjects, may be with all, I cannot mention any persons, and any dignities and character have been too far accustomed to admit of an introduction which I cannot but be sensible of.' I cannot but think that the success of the company, the money in hand, would severely the means. The fact, as with Lord Cornwallis, is generally held."

BOOK V. 1781. his debts, whether the force which he could employ in the resumption of the Jaghires, would be sufficient to overcome the opposition which he anticipated. "I judged it improper," says the Governor-General, "to expose a service of such importance, either to the hazard of a defeat, or the chance of a delay; and therefore immediately issued orders for the march of Colonel Sir John Cunningham, with his entire detachment, for the performance of it." The Resident hastened to communicate his opinion, that the Nabob would be alarmed and disgusted at the march of this force into his dominions; that the payment of the detachment would be a breach of the immediate treaty, equivalent to an order for imposing upon him above the expense of the temporary brigade; that a part of the Nabob's troops were equal to the service; and that a fortnight would suffice for its accomplishment. Under these representations, the Governor-General ventured not to condemn the march of the detachment; but he declared to the Resident, that the contradictions in his statements covered them with doubts; and, if the Resident could not assure him of his perfect competence to the service, that he would himself suspend his journey to the Presidency, and repair to Lucknow for the accomplishment of the business in person. The Resident declared his competence; and the Governor-General departed from Benares, on his way to Calcutta, on the 7th of January. He departed, however, "after much hesitation, and, I will confess," says he, "with some reluctance. I heard the insincerity and treachery which too much prevailed at the Nabob's councils, and great influence, in some degree, both the conduct of the Resident and the Minister; and I consider the impending measure of too much consequence to be exposed to the risk of a disappointment." The Resident had stated, that the Governor-General had not by him been understood as intending the reformation, this year, of the Nabob's military establishment, or as expecting a present supply to the Company's treasury. "Thus," says the Governor-General, in his letter of 2d January, "are fresh instances of what I have had too frequent cause to complain of, your total insubordination to my instruc-

¹ Letter from the Governor-General to the Council, dated 21st of January 1781; *Truth Teller*, Appendix, No. 4.

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.
1781.

tious." He then repeats to the Resident the passage in his instructions, in which he told him, that "to enable the Nabob to discharge his debt to the Company in the shortest time possible, was the chief object of his negotiation;" that the Jaghires should be appropriated to that purpose, and that the return of the troops should take place immediately after the settlement of the sum to be allowed for the personal and domestic expenses of the Nabob.* But these expressions are vague, and seemingly express no more than a very eager desire for despatch; and the Resident, for aught that appears in the words, might be well justified in the conclusion which the Governor-General thought proper to condemn.

Mr. Middleton continued the narration, and pursued all the assertions, which have already been described, for extorting the money which the Governor-General demanded. Yet he was formally accused by the Governor-General on the 23d of September, and pronounced guilty of rambles in his duty: when Mr. Denton was appointed to fill the office, from which, before the recent transactions, he had just been removed. In the meantime, that is, on the 4th of May preceding, Major Palmer had been sent to Oude, as the private agent of Mr. Hastings; and various new demands were urged upon the dependent Prince. The current annual claims varied from seventy to one hundred and thirty lacs per annum, previous to the time of Middleton's appointment in 1781. The receipts of the Resident, in discharge of these claims, varied from sixty to eighty lacs per annum, whence the balance of debt perpetually increased. At the time of concluding the treaty between the Nabob and Hastings at Chunar, that balance appeared to stand at forty four lacs. The Resident, instead of eighty lacs, which before was the maximum of the annual payments, reduced one crore and forty-one lacs. By demands, however, urged by Major Palmer to the amount of eighty-two lacs, and claims of unknown balances, which appeared on adjusting the books of the Presidency, the sum, of which payment in that year was required of the Nabob, exceeded considerably two crores and a-half; that is, were at least equal to twice the annual revenue of the

* *Original Sans Papers*, at supra, p. 22, *Trick Report*, at supra, *Appendix*, No. 6.

BOOK V. whole country.¹ In vindicating himself from the charge
 CHAP. VIII. OF VIOLENCE, in seizing the treasures of the Begum, Mr.

1782.

Middleton shows, that not only had he been successful in regard to the ultimate acquisition, but that no unnecessary time had intervened, and that no instrument of coercion, except the disgraceful one of violating the apartments and the persons of the Princesses, had been left unemployed. "The Nabob," he says, "was won to the Begum as were to proceed against: a son against a mother must at least save appearances: circumstances sufficiently marked the English as the principal movers in the business: the favourable comment was not allowed to persuade the Nabob that we instigated him to dishonour his family for our benefit: I had no assistance to expect from the Nabob's ministers, who could not openly move in the business: in the East, it is well known, that no man, either by himself or his troops, can enter the walls of a Zemana—scarcely in the case of acting against an open enemy—much less an ally—a son against his own mother. The outward walls, and the Begum's agents, were all that were liable to immediate attack: they were dealt with—and successfully, as the event proved."²

The reply which is made by the Governor-General to this defence is remarkable. As usual with the Governor-General, it is mysterious and equivocal. But if anything can be gathered from it, they are the two following things: that he did intend that Mr. Middleton should have violated the Zemana; and that not having acted in that manner, Mr. Middleton, his own agents and confidential agents, might, both by himself and by others, be suspected of having betrayed his duty for a lie. "I was pointed," says the Governor-General, "in my orders to Mr. Middleton, that he should not allow any negotiation or forbearance, when he had once employed the Company's influence or power in asserting the Nabob's claims on the Begum. My principal, if not sole inducement, for this order, which, with the instructions following it, was an

¹ "The Nabob's net success," says Mr. Middleton, Deceased by the Governor-General and Council, *Extracts from Papers of No. 1, Vol. II.*, presented to the House of Commons, 18th March, 1784, p. 2: "In my knowledge, never exceeded a crore and a half, but generally did very short of that sum." The Governor-General disapproved the demands made by his private agents, Dabest, and other residents took place.—*Ibid.*

² *Ibid.* p. 2.

BOOK V.
CHAP. I.—
1782.

absolute as it could be expressed, was—to prevent the imputation which is too frequently, with whatever colour of reason, cast on transactions of this nature, begun with demands of sums of money to an enormous amount, supported with a great military parade and denunciations of vengeance for a refusal, and all relenting into the acceptance of personal submission and promise of amendment: in plainer words, I did not choose to be made the instrument of private rapacity, if any such design existed; nor to expose myself to the obloquy of it, if such a design did not exist.”¹ The Governor-General, however, no where said to Mr. Middleton, You shall enter the Zenana itself, if respect for it prove any obstruction to your designs. And it would have been equally easy for him to have contradicted the Resident had he understood his orders in that irreverent sense, as it was, according to the sense in which he did understand them. If the Resident had been guilty of the violation, and a storm of edicts had arisen, the political conduct of the Governor-General lays sufficient ground for the presumption, that he would not have sought to form for himself a screen out of his own ambiguity.²

Upon the intelligence received of the recall of Mr. Bristow, and the appointment of Mr. Middleton to the office of Resident with the Viceroy, previous to the memorable journey to Benares, the Court of Directors wrote to the Governor-General and Council in the following terms:—“Equally extraordinary, and unwarrantable, have been your proceedings respecting Mr. John Bristow. He was appointed Resident at Oude in December, 1774. In December, 1775, he was recalled, without the shadow of a charge being exhibited against him. By our letter of the 4th of July, 1777, we signified our disapprobation of the proceedings against Mr. Bristow, and directed that he should be restored to his station; which direction we confirmed by our subsequent letter of the 12th of December, 1778. Mr. Bristow arrived in India in February, 1780, and in October of the same year it was resolved by

¹ *Cambridge and's Memoirs on Mr. Middleton's Mission, the Oude, 1782.* Chap. p. 24.

² Hastings takes care, that his orders should be clear. It was his intention to adopt the most objectionable mode of executing them. This is all that can be fairly inferred from his instructions.—H.

BOOK V. your Board, that Mr. Bristow should return to Oude; but
 CHAP. VII. that his appointment should be limited solely to the con-
 duct of political negotiations, Mr. Middleton being at the
 same time nominated to settle pecuniary matters with the
 1783. Viceroy. On the 21st of May, 1783, upon receiving a letter
 from the Viceroy, expressing his desire that Mr. Bristow
 should be removed from his court, he was again recalled.
 But, without entering into the consideration of this matter,
 and in order to vindicate and uphold our own authority,
 we do hereby positively direct that Mr. Bristow do forth-
 with proceed to Oude, in the station of our Resident there.
 You are likewise to observe, that we shall not suffer any
 other person to proceed to Oude, for the management of
 finance, one person being, in our opinion, sufficient to
 transact our business there as principal in both these
 departments."¹

Along with the repudiation of the recall, and command
 for the restoration of Mr. Bristow, a similar repudiation
 and command arrived from the Court of Directors re-
 specting Mr. Forke, as Resident at Benares. The Governor-
 General, claiming a latitude in displaying the orders of
 the Company, when those orders were "destructive to
 their own affairs;" and alleging that the diminution of
 authority of the Governor-General, in displaying to the
 eyes of India the defects of his instructions, even with respect
 to his own agents, was so destructive; indicating also,
 besides these general, some particular objections, of which
 he spoke in the following significant terms: "My personal
 objection to his appointment I dare not put upon record,
 the Members of the Board individually know it;" opposed
 obedience to the Company's instructions. The other Mem-
 bers, however, of the Board, consisting of Mr. Stables, Mr.
 Macpherson, Mr. Wheeler, and Sir Eyre Coote, were of a
 different opinion; they declared that, where the commands
 of the Directors were precise and peremptory, they con-
 sidered themselves to have no latitude of choice; and Mr.
 Forke reserved his appointment. The arrangement which
 the Governor-General had made for the management of
 the affairs of Benares had, as usual, disappointed his pe-
 cuniary expectations; and his dread of blame on the

¹ Company's General Letter to Bengal, 26th August, 1783; Tenth Report, at
 page, Appendix, B. v. 2.

BOOK V
CHAP. IXX.

1782.

score of the transactions, to which his journey had given birth, seems upon this head to have rendered his impression particularly keen. The storm of his indignation fell upon the person into whose hands the collection of the revenues had fallen, the father of the forty-trade Daj. "I feel myself," said Hastings, "and may be allowed on such an occasion to acknowledge it, personally hurt at the ingratitude of this man, and at the discredit which his ill-conduct has thrown upon my appointment of him. He has deceived me : he has offended against the government which I then represented." The "personal hurts" of the Governor-General seem but too frequently to have prompted the measures of his administration. If he was "personally hurt," he was ill-qualified to assume the function of a judge. The Nakh had failed in raising all the money which had been imposed as tribute upon the province. Had the tribute not been, as it was, too large, dismission from his office might appear to be a sufficient visitation for his offence. He was also deprived of rank, thrown into prison, and threatened with death, by the sole authority of Mr. Hastings, who did not so much as communicate the measures to his Council but after they were passed ; while the Nakh in vain represented, that the tribute exceeded the means of the country : that the ordinary receipts had been diminished by a drought ; and that, from a severe illness, he had, during two months, been incapable of attending to the painful and laborious duties of his office.*

Among the articles in the treaty, formed by the Governor-General with the Vair at Chunar, one related to the Mahob Fyzoola Khan. This was the chief who survived the ruin of the Bahalla nation in 1774, and who, having occupied a strong post on the hills, concluded a treaty, under the sanction and guarantee of the English government, by which he received in jagh'ee the country of Rampore and some other districts of Behakour, estimated at a revenue of fifteen lacs of rupees. "From the month of October, 1774, to the latter end of February, 1778," says the Governor-General, "we had no reference made to us relative to Fyzoola Khan ; but on the 23d of February, 1778, we received a letter from Mr. Middleton, in which he informed us, that reports had prevailed

* See the *Misuse of Evidence upon the Benares Charge*.

BOOK V. at Lucknow, that Fyzoola Khan retained in his service a
CHAP. VII. greater body of troops than were specified in the treaty of
 1774, and that he had given protection and encouragement
 1782. to Zabita Khan's defeated army. Mr. Middleton, in the
 same letter, told us that he did not pay much attention to
 these reports; but added — that the Nabob's oppressive
 and unjust conduct, in various instances, might induce
 Fyzoola Khan to form connections, and to engage in
 schemes, incompatible with his duty and allegiance to the
 Vizir."

The treaty which had been formed between Fyzoola Khan and the Vizir, in 1774, commonly known by the name of the treaty of Lal Durg, had been signed by the English Commander-in-Chief, in the name of his nation, as both a party to the transaction, and guarantee of the engagement. Distrusting the faith of the Nabob, and alarmed by the preceding imputations, which he justly regarded as proofs that the wish was formed to dispossess him of his country, Fyzoola Khan endeavoured to assure himself more completely of the protection of the English; and, as if the signature of the commanding officer was not sufficiently binding, made earnest application to have the treaty ratified by the Governor General and Council. 'Upon this subject,' says Mr. Hastings, "I had frequent applications from him. But the guarantee appeared to me unnecessary, except as it would afford great satisfaction to Fyzoola Khan; for our government must have interfered, if the Nabob Vizir had attempted to encroach upon the rights which Fyzoola Khan enjoyed under his treaty with the Vizir. Mr. Middleton deputed Mr. D. Burrell to Rampora, the residence of Fyzoola Khan. Mr. Burrell transmitted to Mr. Middleton a very particular account of Fyzoola Khan's conduct, which appeared to have been in no instance contrary to his engagements; and in the month of April, his treaty with the Nabob Vizir was guaranteed by the Company, agreeably to his earnest and reiterated requests. By whose suggestions doubts were instilled into the mind of Fyzoola Khan, as to the validity of the treaty which Colonel Champion had witnessed, I know not." On the occasion of the guarantee a present of elephants, horses, and other articles, with a lac of rupees, or 10,000*l.* sterling was made to the Nabob,

and one of a similar sum, or another lag, to the Com-
pany.

BOOK V,
CHAP. VIII.

1782.

This transaction was soon followed by another. In the same year intelligence was received of a war between England and France. Fyzoola Khan, "being indirectly sounded," displayed the greatest readiness to assist. He was under no obligation to afford a single man, but, at the suggestion of the Resident at Ouda, made an offer of all his cavalry, 2000 strong, and actually furnished 340. The Governor-General, on the 8th of January, 1779, wrote to him, "that in his own name, as well as that of the Board, he returned him the warmest thanks for this instance of his faithful attachment to the Company and the English nation."

In the treaty of Lal Durg, were the three following articles. "That Fyzoola Khan should retain in his service 2000 troops, and not a single man more; that with whomsoever the Vicer should make war, Fyzoola Khan should send two or three thousand of his troops, according to his ability, to join him: and that if the Vicer should march in person, Fyzoola Khan should attend him with his forces."

In November, 1780, the Governor-General and Council recommended to the Vicer to demand, that is, the Governor-General and Council did themselves demand, of Fyzoola Khan, to furnish a body of 5000 horse, "as the quota stipulated by treaty for the service of the Vicer." The treaty, however, did not stipulate for 5000, but only for 2000, or 3000, according to his ability; and not for horse, but troops, of which not the whole, but the usual proportion is horse, equity of construction, could by any means, require: and the troops were not for the service of the Vicer, but of the Company.¹ With the strongest expressions of duty and allegiance, Fyzoola Khan represented, that his whole force was by treaty limited to 5000 men; of which 2000 were horse, and 3000 foot, that 2000 foot were required for the business of his government and ad-

¹ This was too evident to be denied by any body, but it was expressly stated to Fyzoola Khan, by the Vicer, in the letter in which he recommended the demand, that the demand was made by the Authority of Mr. Hastings, and "not by the Vicer himself, but the Company's service." (See the Fortification Clauses, moved by Mr. Barne; Mr. Hastings would not give his assent to that change.) "Fyzoola Khan was under a strong temptation to furnish us with a single man, but did not demand a man from him." True, in words, as usual with Mr. Hastings; false in substance.

BOOK V. lections; but the whole was at the command of the Visir
CHAP. VIII. and the Company. When this answer was received, the

1782.

Governor-General, who, together with Mr. Wheeler, constituted the whole Board, and by his casting vote united in his own person all the powers of government, declared upon record, that "The Nizam Ferozda Khan had evaded the performance of his part of the treaty between the late Nizam Saja-ul-Deen and him, to which the Honourable Company were guaranteees, and upon which he was lately succeeded to furnish the stipulated number of troops, which he is obliged to furnish on the condition by which he holds the jaghirs granted to him."

In defence of this procedure, Mr. Hastings states, that the Company was surprised with difficulties: the burden of the Mahratta war; the alarming progress of Hyder Ali in the Carnatic; the march of the Deccan army into Calcutta; and the prospect of an armistice from France: That Sir Eyre Coote, before departing for Madras, recommended application to Choyta Sing for a body of horse to cover the province of Bahar; a battalion of sepays; 1000 of the Visir's artillery; and as many of Ferozda Khan's troops as could be procured, for the defence of Rohilcond. Then the British officer who commanded in that district complained by letter of having with him only 500 of that chieftain's horse, though, "in his agreement with government, he was obliged to keep up 300 troops for assisting in the defence of Rohilcond."¹ That in the hurry of business, he, and the other Members of the Board, were deceived by this letter in the belief that 5000 was the quota defined; and that horse, though not expressed in the treaty, was undoubtedly understood.²

A description of such a kind, in matters of such importance, is not the most honourable sort of apology, even where it holds.³ The demand, however, of the Board went far beyond the erroneous words of the letter. The letter spoke of only troops, not horse; and it spoke of 5000, as only to be kept up; not sent out of the country, for de-

¹ Hastings' Defence on the Charge respecting Ferozda Khan.

² It is clear from the terms of the treaty, letter, and his letter to Mr. Hastings, in which he admitted that the demand was a request, of that treaty, "Should Ferozda Khan mention any thing of the terms of the treaty, the said terms of it has been committed to him. I will approach him with Letters kept the army troops, and will oblige him to send the 5000 horse."

BHASKAR V.
CHAP. VII.
1781.

duction was necessary of those required for indispensable service at home : And the declaration of one of the parties as to what was understood in a treaty, but not expressed, when there is no reason why it should not have been expressed, is an unavailing protest, which, if admitted, would for ever place the weaker of two contracting parties at the mercy of the stronger. As to the dangers of the British government, urged by the Governor General on this, as they are on so many other occasions, there is only one principle which can render them applicable in his defence : viz. that they furnished sufficient grounds for taking from every prince or lord of the country, whatever any of them had not ability to prevent him from taking.

In proceeding to measures of compulsion, Hastings somewhat lowered his demand. On the 15th of February, 1781, he decreed in council, "that a deputation to Fyroolla Khan should be immediately recommended to be sent by the Nabob Vizir, accompanied by an agent from Mr. Middleton in behalf of the English government, as guarantors, and that in presence of proper witnesses they should demand immediate delivery of 3000 cavalry ; and if he should evade or refuse compliance, that the deputies should deliver a formal protest against him for breach of treaty, and return, making their report to the Vizir, which Mr. Middleton was to transmit to the Board." The deputation was sent. Fyroolla Khan, alleging both his inability and the express words of the treaty, offered "in addition to the 3000 cavalry already granted, to give 1000 more, when and wherever required, and 1000 foot ;" together with one year's pay in advance, and funds for the regular payment of them in future. The offer was rejected ; and the protest made. Hastings suspended all proceedings upon this protest at the Board ; met with the Nabob at Chunar ; and signed the following article relative to Fyroolla Khan — "That as Fyroolla Khan has, by his breach of treaty, forfeited the protection of the English government, and caused, by his continuance in his present independent state, great alarm and detriment to the Nabob Vizir, he be permitted, when time shall suit, to resume his lands and pay him in money, through the Resident, the amount stipulated by treaty, after deducting the interest and charges of the troops he stands engaged

BLACK T. to furnish by treaty ; which amount shall be paid to the
 1782. account of the Company during the continuance of the
 present war."

1782.

What comes next to be stated is a characteristic circumstance. In transmitting the treaty of Canara to his colleagues at the Board, Mr. Hastings accompanied each article with his own explanations and remarks. Those upon the article relating to Pysoola Khan, were as follows : "The conduct of Pysoola Khan in refusing the aid demanded, though not an absolute breach of treaty, was evasive and unbecomg. The demand was made for 5000 cavalry ; the engagement in the treaty is literally for 5000 horse and foot ; Pysoola Khan could not be ignorant that we had no occasion for any succours of infantry from him, and that cavalry would be of the most essential service ; so scrupulous an attention to literal expression, when a more liberal interpretation would have been highly useful and acceptable to us, strongly marks his unfriendly disposition ; though it may not impeach his fidelity ; and leaves him little claim to any excuses from us, for the continuance of his intrigues. But I am of opinion that neither the Vizir's, nor the Company's interests would be protected by depriving Pysoola Khan of his independency ; and I have, therefore, reserved the execution of this agreement to an indefinite term ; and our government may always interpose to prevent any ill effects from it."

This unequivocally calls for some observations. Mr. Hastings inserts, in an article of a solemn, public treaty, and sets his hand to the article, that a dependent of the Company has been guilty of a breach of treaty ; when at the same moment, he writes to his colleagues, that he has not been guilty of a breach of treaty, and that his fidelity is unimpeached. He gives to the Vizir, by equally solemn treaty, what the Vizir anxiously solicited, as an object of great desire, permission to dispossess Pysoola Khan ; yet he writes to his colleagues, that this was a fraudulent artifice, and that he never meant the permission to have any effect. The course of Mr. Hastings, during a calm investigation, suffers exceedingly by his practice and skill in the arts of deceit ; because the fair colours, which he himself can throw upon his conduct, become thoroughly

untrustworthy, and, unless where they are supported by other evidence, cease to persuade.

When, too, Mr. Hastings informs his colleagues, that by the treaty in virtue of which Fyroolla Khan possessed his jaghira, he was bound to afford 3000 troops, the information was glaringly incorrect; for the oppressed dependant had expressly appealed to the treaty, and offered obedience to the full extent of its bonds. Nay, by the treaty, he was rigidly bound not to retain in his service any more than 2000 troops both horse and foot: and had he sent 3000 horse to the service of the English, in addition to which he must have raised horse and foot for the business of his country, he might have been punished for breach of treaty, and on this pretext, deprived of his independence.

For several months after the return of the Viceroy to his own capital, the Governor-General was importuned, by applications both from him and from the Resident, to permit the expulsion of Fyroolla Khan. Towards the end of the year, 1783, a negotiation was opened for a pecuniary consideration of the military aid. Major Palmer was deputed to Benares; and spent a month, as he himself significantly expresses it, "in order to effect by persuasion, what he could have obtained in an hour by threats and compulsion;" that is, a sum of fifteen lacs of rupees, on the condition of being exempted from all future claims of military service.

Endicott was used to obtain from Fyroolla Khan another sum of fifteen lacs; for which his jaghira, which was only a tenure for life, was to be converted into a perpetual hereditary possession. As this change in his tenure was supposed to be of the highest importance to Fyroolla Khan, he very much surprised the English agent by declaring his inability to advance the money required, and declining the bargain. From the improving cultivation of the country, and apparent riches of the people, the effects of the good government which that land had maintained, the English, as usual, believed, in company with the Viceroy, that his riches were immense¹

¹ The result proved the accuracy of his views, for he did pay the fifteen lacs and without any consideration. Of the rapid increase of his resources, we have abundant testimony in the life of Shah Shereef Khan.

BOOK V. Major Palmer bore his testimony, on this occasion, to
 CHAP. VII. the falsehood, too, of the imputations upon which the
 oppression of Ferozulla Khan had been founded: That
 1782. he had given encouragement to the desertion of the
 ryots of the Vair; and that he had a greater number of
 troops than 5000. The numbers of the Rohilla people
 in this Country exceeded that amount; but hostilities,
 in other than military employments, were not by the
 treaty forbidden. At any rate, the Major adds, "it does
 not appear that their number is formidable, or that
 Ferozulla Khan could by any means collect such numbers
 as could cause any serious alarm to the Vair; neither is
 there any appearance of their entertaining any views
 beyond the quiet possession of the advantages which they
 at present enjoy."

It was an object with the Governor-General and Coun-
 cil, to convince the Court of Directors that the bargain
 they had made with Ferozulla Khan was a good one, and
 the money obtained an ample compensation, for the alien-
 ated right. They saw, therefore, distinctly understood
 and affirmed, that Ferozulla Khan was bound not to exceed
 the number of 5000 troops, on horse and foot, and to send
 to the service of the Vair only two or three thousand
 men; which, to the Vair, they said, was "a precarious and
 unenforceable right;" that "the rumours which had been
 spread of the hostile designs of Ferozulla Khan, against the
 Vair, were totally groundless; and if he had been in-
 clined, that he had not the means to make himself formidable."¹ These expostions are to be contrasted with those

which were uttered by Shuja-ul-Khan. "When Ferozulla Khan took possession of
 the territory granted to him by the treaty of Lucknow, he accepted every
 measure as his power for pursuing the cultivation, and, at a few years, we im-
 proved the country, that the produce was double, or perhaps quadruple, the
 former amount. Being prudent in his expensures, he collected a considerable sum,
 and he has resolved to construct a large proportion of the Afghans of Deroor,
 Feroz Shahr, Deesa, the hill of Chanderpore, the hill of Chanderpore, &c. p. 125.
 Thus in all the Ferozulla Khan acted wisely, as well as bravely, but the tendency
 of his conduct was an unnecessary exaltation of the spirit of the Vair, from
 which he had received, and their mutual enmity, and that he had no idea of hostility to
 furnish either men or money was obnoxious."—²

¹ Secret Letter from Bengal, the 20th of April, 1782, Calcutta from Parnon
 (in No. 2, vol. II), presented to the House of Commons, at paper, p. 24. In
 the Secret Letter from Parnon, dated 20th of March, 1782, the Governor-
 General and Council say, "That," (the Governor-General) "is a valuable com-
 pensation for expunging an article of a treaty, which was of such a nature, and
 so heavily weighted, that the Vair would never have derived any real advantage
 from it. The money well of course be received by the Company, in full
 liquidation of the Vair's debt."

made use of, on the 1st of April, 1781, by the Assistant Resident Johnson; who was sent for the purpose of making the protest, on account of the refusal of 3000 horse. On the hunt for appearances of guilt, he found them at every step, and the very day after his arrival, reported, that "the Rohilla soldiers, in the district of Bareilly alone, were not less than twenty thousand." With great caution should men in power reserve from their agents reports by which their known vices are disclosed, because the proportion of observers is necessarily small, who, in such cases, will not deceive themselves, and without any formed intention of mendacity, yet from the very lust of pleasing the men on whose favour or disfavour their prosperity or adversity depends, give them reports which will deceive them. It is necessary, in justice to Mr. Hastings, to add, that with respect to the provisions granted by the treaty of 1766, to remove the armies of Feroz Shah Khan, he afterwards allowed that his conduct was the proper object of blame.

It appears that the Viceroy selected at a period rather early in the persecution of the Begums. Before the recall of Mr. Vaddiasen, he wrote to the Governor-General several letters, on the particular subject of the destruction of the estates, and the confiscation of the treasures of the Princesses, and appears to have severely complained of the oppressive part which he was compelled to perform. It was one of the rules of the Governor-General, to suppress as much as possible of any correspondence, of which the appearance would give him pain. These letters, acce-

1 The two passages relating to Feroz Shah, see *Parliamentary Papers*, at pages 104 and 105, and the result of a charge presented to Mr. Darnley the Director of Mr. Hastings, and a copy Report of the latter General, vol. viii.

But, when we turn to the *Annals*, vol. viii, p. 145, we find a narrative of a different kind. It is with every circumstance, the same but without due consideration of Mr. Viceroy's charge of oppression by Feroz Shah, even then, however, he is not to be taken as either prejudicially in the case, and what was the consequence? They were never reached, it was a mere, unimportant deposition in support of his innocence, and not a statement that never took place, in consequence of his own intervention against the oppression, as is implied in the text. The third instance of the conduct of Feroz Shah against the Begums is reported in a manner possibly more than true, and doubt, if it were ever proposed in the first that was said by him, and responses accordingly collected from him, which the Viceroy presented to the Governor-General, and from which he is to be held to the Viceroy. The charge, which he has, however, admitted, is reported in the *Annals*, in consequence of which he was ordered to furnish evidence to the Governor of the Viceroy. The letter read publicly before the Council, Khan, by the consequence, that he required a proceeding after that manner would be death, in the year 1784, during which his country became successively increasing and prosperous, and he had a large accumulated treasure to his worthy descendants, &c.

BOOK V. singly, were not entered in the Company's records. But what he wrote to the Resident on the subject of them remains, and shows, that in his breast they excited the highest resentment. He chose to consider them as not the letters of the Vizir; whom he represents as too void of character, to write anything of himself. He called them the letters of the minister, "who," says he, "by an abuse of his influence over the Nabob, he being, as he ever must be, in the hands of some person, a mere cipher in his hands, dared to make him assume a very unbecoming tone of refusal, reproach, and recrimination, in opposition to measures recommended by me, and even to acts done by my authority."

L-82.

He persisted in ascribing guilt to the Begums, and said, "the sacrifices which have been exacted towards them, were most justly merited, by the advantage which they took of the troubles in which I was personally involved last year, to create a rebellion in the Nabob's government," and to complete the ruin which they thought was impending on ours." "If it is the Nabob's desire to forget and forgive their past offences, I have no objection to his allowing them, in pension, the annual amount of their *jaghires*; but if he shall ever offer to restore their rights to them, or to give them any property in land, after the warning which they have given him, by the dangerous abuse which they formerly made of his indulgence: you must reconstitute, in the strongest terms, against it; you must not permit such an event to take place; until this government shall have received information of it, and shall have had time to interpose its influence for the prevention of it." On this, and on various other occasions, where the Governor-General spoke of pensions with so much ease, he well knew, that in the like instances and with the disposition of the government of the Vizir, a pension, unless to

* When I asked the Governor-General he could assign the disturbances in Oude to very different causes. In a Memoir (Beng. Secret Correspondence, 1780; Extracts from Papers (p. 202 & 203 n.) presented to the House of Commons upon the 13th day of March, 1780, p. 71, he says:—"The disturbances in the kingdom of Oude, and in the other dominions of the Nabob, Asaf al Dowla, have their origin in a series of small rebellions, or disorders upon the frontiers of the Nabob's dominions in Oude, they could only be suppressed by a military force superior to that which they could oppose to it." The disturbances, nearly of the same nature, were not then visited in answer for the little ferment which took place in Oude, upon the coronation of the emperor in Roum.

Englishmen whom he feared, hide or nothing deflected from a name. Ray more; if the payment had been ware, the nominal revenue was but a portion of the actual proceeds; and the Begums, of course, were to be robbed of all the rest. It was, in fact, from this robbery, namely, the revenue which the Nabob could extract from the estates of the Begums, beyond the pensions he would bind himself to pay them, that the money was to come, by which the distress of Mr. Hastings was to be relieved.

The period at last arrived for the review by the Court of Directors, of the proceedings of their government in India, relative to the Begums. In their letters of the 18th of February, 1783, "It is wished," say the Directors, "appears, from the papers at present in our possession, that the Begums exacted any contributions previous to the imprisonment of Chetty Beg, and only aimed themselves in consequence of that transaction; and it is probable that such a conduct proceeded from motives of self-defence under an apprehension that they themselves might likewise be laid under unwarrantable contributions." The Court of Directors, in consequence, gave their commands, that if, upon inquiry, it should appear that the Princesses had not been guilty of the practices of which Mr. Hastings accused them, their estates should be restored, and an asylum offered them within the Company's territory. In obedience to this injunction, it was moved by Mr. Dalrymple, a member of the Supreme Council, that the inquiry should be instituted.

The conduct pursued by the Governor-General in the next object of regard. He set himself in opposition to the inquiry; and, having a majority of the Council on his side, he prevented it. The reasons by which he supported his opposition were as follows. He asserted, "that the reasons of the Court of Directors, if transmitted with the orders for the inquiry, will prove, in effect, an order for collecting evidence to the justification and acquittal of the Begums, and not for the investigation of the truth of the charges which have been preferred against them." Here

* Justice and equity are here contemned, although two very different things. The Begums had no estates, and every principle of good government demands the payment of no graces till upon the admission of military service, which only furnished a pretext for keeping armed Indians, and a means of defying the authority of the state.—W.

BOOK V. The information is, that whenever, in India, the views of
 CHAP. VIII. government are known, all evidence tendered will be sure
 to coincide with those views. The Governor-General

1782.

ought to have reflected, that, if this be true, all the evidence which he produced against the Begums, Chagte Sing, or any of the other parties, whom he pretended to punish under the colour of guilt, if in other respects less devoid of the essentials of proof than it really was, ought to be counted for nothing. Besides, it was neither necessary nor did the author of the proposal require, that "the reasons" of the Court of Directors should be transmitted with the order for inquiry. Mr. Hastings, in a further Minute asserted, that the inquiry would be fought with "evils greater than any which exist in the consequences which have already taken place, and which time has almost obliterated." "He" said he, "I am rightly informed, the Nabob Vizir and the Begums are ex. terms of mutual good will, it would ill become this government to interpose its influence, by any act which might tend to revive their animosities, and a very slight occasion would be sufficient to effect it. They will instantly take for an such a declaration, procure the judgment of the Court in their favour, demand a reparation of the acts, which they will construe wrong, with such a sentence varying that construction, and either accept the invitation (to reside under the protection of the Company), to the proclaimed scandal of the Nabob Vizir, which will not add to the credit of our government, or remain in his dominions, but not under his authority, to add to his vexations and the disorders of the country, by continual rafngers and sollicitations. Enough already exists to affect his peace, and the quiet of his people. If we cannot heal, let us not inflame the wounds which have been inflicted." He added, "If the Begums think themselves aggrieved to such a degree as to justify them in an appeal to a foreign jurisdiction; to appeal to it against a man standing in the relation of son and guardian to them; to appeal to the justice of those who have been the abettors and instruments of their imputed wrongs; let us at least permit them to be the judges of their own feelings, and prefer their complaints, before we offer to redress them. They will not need to be prompted. I hope I shall not depart from the simplicity

of official language, in saying, the Majesty of Justice ought to be approached with veneration, not deposed to provoke or invite it, much less to debate itself by the suggestion of wrongs, and the promise of redress, with the denunciation of punishments, before trial, and even before accusation." If nothing remains to stain the reputation of Mr. Hastings, but the principles avowed in this singular pleading, his character, among the friends of justice, would be sufficiently determined.

Although the commands of the Court of Directors, respecting reparation to the Begums, were strengthened by a formal application from the Vicer, "requesting" (such are the words of Mr. Hastings, introducing the subject to the Board) "that he might be permitted to restore, to his grandmother and other relations, the jaghires which were taken from them the beginning of last year," the authority of the Governor-General was sufficient to prevent, at the present time, the adoption of any measure in their favour.¹

Notwithstanding the securities practised upon the family of the Vicer, and the usurpation of his authority by Mr. Middleton, who even issued warrants upon his own authority for the resumption of the jaghires, Mr. Middleton was dismissed for want of regard in pressing the demands of the English government; and Mr. Bristol was appointed, under the implied as well as declared expectation, that he would supply what had been wanting in the conduct of his predecessor. Nor was this all. He was furnished with a set of instructions, from the hand of the Governor-General, bearing date the 23rd of October, 1782. In these instructions, in which he was particularly referred to the injunctions which Mr. Middleton had previously received, four objects were successively pointed out to his attention: 1st, "To limit, and separate the personal disbursements of the Vicer from the public accounts; 2dly, To reform the military establishment, reducing the troops to one uniform corps, and to the best, if possible, most useful to the Company, that of cavalry; controlling even the appointment of officers, say, "peremptorily opposing it," as often as the Vicer should persist in a choice which to the East-

¹ See the Fourth Article of Charge, and Mr. Hastings' Answer, with the Papers printed by the House of Commons, in 1785.

BOOK V. *dent* should appear objectionable ; 3dly, To control, or
 CHAP. VII. rather to increase, the power of appointing *Amils* and
 collectors in the revenue department, it being reserved to
 the Nabob's ministers to appoint them, with the concurrence of the Resident ; 4thly, To endeavour to reform the
 disgraceful state of the administration of justice.

1782.

The grand object of the English government was, to obtain from the Nabob the payment of the sums for which they had induced him to become bound. But such were the disorders of his administration, and such the effects of those disorders upon the population and produce of the country, that without great reform this payment seemed impracticable, and without the virtual assumption of the powers of government into better hands than those of the Vizir and his agents, all reform was an object of despair. The government, accordingly, had been converted into a government of Englishmen, in fact ; conducted by the instrumentality of the Vizir and his agents, and under the forms of their authority. Of this, the points of instruction to Mr. Middleton, described above, are more than adequate proof.

In the administration of the Nabob, the principal organ went by the name of the Minister. The person named to this office by the influence of the Governor General was Hyder Beg Khan. The character and situation of this person, as described by Mr. Hastings himself, require to be noticed. In his instructions to Mr. Bristow, in October, 1784, he says "Immediately on your arrival, sound the disposition of Hyder Beg Khan. His conduct has, for some time past, been highly reprehensible. Till within these three months he possessed, without control, both the unparticipated and entire administration, with all the powers annexed to that government ; the Nabob being, as he ever must be in the hands of some person, a mere cipher in his." To so great a degree did Mr. Hastings represent the Vizir as being the mere tool of the minister, that he treated the very letters of the Vizir as literally the letters of the minister ; and spoke of him and of them in the following terms : " He has dared to use both the Nabob's name and even his seal affixed to letters, either dictated to the Nabob, or written from him without his knowledge." He then proceeded to state the necessity,

that this man, in whose hands the Vicir was a tool, should be merely a tool in the hands of the English Resident; in other words, that the English Resident should wield substantially the powers of government. "I cannot sink," said he, "to repeat the sentiments which I expressed in the verbal instructions which I gave you at your departure, that there can be no medium in the relation between the Resident and the minister, but either the Resident must be the slave and vassal of the minister, or the minister at the absolute devotion of the Resident." He then describes him as the mere creature of the English government. "He exists," said the Governor-General, "by his dependence on the influence of our government; and if he will submit to hold his office on such conditions as I require, I would prefer him to any other. At the same time, it will be necessary to declare to him, in the plainest terms, the feeling and conditions on which he shall be permitted to retain his place, with the alternative of discontinuance, and a scrutiny into his past conduct, if he refuses. These conditions are described as follows:— "In the first place, I will not receive from the Naloh, as his letters dictated by the spirit of opposition—but shall consider every such attempt as his minister's and as an insult on our government. In the second place, I shall expect that nothing is done, in his official character, but with your knowledge and participation; at the same time the first share of the responsibility will rest with you: the other conditions will follow distinctly in their places, because I consider you as responsible for them." The responsibility implies the power; therefore the power was to rest in the Resident; and any opposition, so much as by letter, that is, by complaint, was to be considered as an insult on the English government.

To the Minister, Hyder Beg, Mr. Hastings himself wrote in the following terms. "In answer to my letter Raja Gobind Ram received a perwana from the Naloh, containing complaints and reproaches at my interference in his affairs, and his unwillingness to receive any agent from me. These sentiments, and these expressions are neither consistent to the benevolence of the Naloh's temper, nor to the friendship which, I know, he possesses for me;—but were dictated for other purposes, known to yourself only. They

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1797.

BOOK V. are your sentiments, and your expressions; and not the
CHAP. VIII. Nawab's. But my astonishment at the other parts of the
 1782. pervading, is not to be expressed; for it declares all I had
 said respecting the disordered state of the Nawab's govern-
 ment to be entirely false. Either these affirmations were
 dictated by the Nawab; or written without his know-
 ledge. If they were dictated by the Nawab, they were
 such as would not admit of a reply from me, as an imme-
 diate address to himself; because I must have told him
 that he was deceived, and kept in utter ignorance of his
 own affairs, at the same time that the whole world, except
 himself, saw the condition they were in, and the destruc-
 tion that was hanging over him. If the letter was written
 in the Nawab's name, but without his knowledge, what
 must have been your opinion of me, that could induce
 you to attempt so gross a deception upon my understand-
 ing? In either case, your conduct is without excuse. Its
 object I plainly saw. By the authority of the Nawab Vizir
 you mean your own. When you make the Nawab ac-
 complish of the usurpation upon that authority, and to assert
 his right to the uncontrolled exercise of it, the plain in-
 terpretation of this is, that you yourself lay claim to the
 usurpation of his authority, and to the uncontrolled exer-
 cise of it. And how has it been exercised? I shall not
 repeat particulars, having already written to you fully
 upon them—and the subject is unpleasant. But I must
 tell you that such is their activity, that the report of
 them is echoed to me from all parts of Hindostan and the
 Deccan; and the most alarming apprehensions are ex-
 pressed by my agents, employed in the remote affairs of
 this government, lest they should attract the hostilities of
 other powers."—Such, at the end of October, 1782, was
 the opinion declared by Mr. Hastings of the condition in
 which the government of Oude was kept in the hands of
 the Nabob and his Minister.

In pointing out to Mr. Bristow the establishment of new
 offices, for the business of the revenues, for reform in the
 administration of justice, for the appointment of new ad-
 ministrators, and the coercion of rebellious Zemindars; as
 part of the objects, on the accomplishment of which, for

Governor-General to Hyder Beg Khan, dated 30th October, 1782. *MS. Brit. M.*
 of mss., p. 183.

the reform in the disorders in the Nabob's government, the desires of the Governor-General were fixed; absolute performance was exacted at the hands of the Resident, without any other limitation to the exercise of his power, than what the rules of prudence, and "every ostensible and external mark of respect to the Nabob," might recommend.

When the Resident had as yet been but a few months in office, a letter was written by the Viceroy, dated the 25th of March, 1763, arrived, complaining, in the most bitter terms, of the usurpation of his authority by the Resident. Instead of leaving it, according to the terms of his paper of instructions, to the letter, "not of the Viceroy, but of the Minister, and as an insult on the English government," the Governor-General received it with profound respect; and, on the 25th of April, presented it, with the documents by which it was attended, to the Council, as a matter deserving their most serious regard. From the delicacy of the relation, in which, on account of former oppositions, he stood to Mr. Bristow, he professed a desire to be guided in his sentiments, on this occasion, by the sentiments of the Board. "On the 15th of May, consultation upon the subject took place, when the reserve of the Governor-General disappeared. He declared, that "the facts, as stated in the Nabob's complaint, were usurpations of the authority, and even of the sovereignty, of the Nabob Viceroy." But, what was more singular, he declared that his instructions to Mr. Bristow did not authorize any usurpation of that authority or sovereignty. And he proposed, even before Mr. Bristow should be heard in his defence, that certain proceedings of his, the objects of the Viceroy's complaint, should be immediately revealed. The Council, however, rejected this proposition; and only so far concurred with the Governor-General, as to send Mr. Bristow a copy of the papers, and require his defence. The tone of the Governor-General, upon this, was very high. "The Governor-General," such were the terms of his minute, "leaves it to be recorded, that he protests against the resolution of the Board, and will assign his reasons at large hereafter." What follows is still more remarkable. As if he had passed the instructions by his sole authority, and as if upon that authority alone their

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.
1763.

BOOK V. validity rested, he declared them no longer of any force.
CHAP. VIII. The minute goes on: "He (the Governor-General) also

1783.

desires, that as the instructions given by him to Mr. Bristow have no longer any force, and as he solemnly disavows their authority, under any construction, for Mr. Bristow to exercise any control over the Nabob's Vicer, or participation in the sovereignty of the Vicer's dominions, the Board will be pleased to cause such new instructions to be drawn out, and transmitted to Mr. Bristow, as they shall think proper." If the whole extent is admitted, of the exaggerating language of Mr. Hastings and the Nabob, which nevertheless very far exceeded the facts, the whole of his paper of instructions not only nullified, but annulled, a complete control over the Nabob Vicer, and not a participation only in the sovereignty, but the substantial exercise of the whole.

On the 24th of July, Mr. Hastings complained to the Board, that Mr. Bristow had been guilty of disrespect to the Board, in not transmitting his defence; and on this occasion could not forbear alluding to an offence, which he appears never to have mentioned without a purpose of punishment: "Perhaps," said he, "Mr. Bristow may wish to avail himself of the principle, which forbids that any man should be condemned unheard, to withhold his defence until he shall have exceeded the period which has been so repeatedly perturbed, for the close of the present government." On the 28th of the same month, he moved, "That Mr. Bristow, for disrespect to the Board, and disobedience of the written orders to him by the Board, on the 20th of May, be removed and recalled from his station and office at Lucknow." Yet Mr. Hastings had before him a letter of Mr. Bristow, dated on the 23rd of June, in the following words: "Since I had lost the honour to address you, I have been confined to my room by indisposition. I am now somewhat recovered, and shall not fail to expedite my reply to your commands of the 22th ult.,

¹ It is remarkable, that there is actually in his Paper of Instructions the following passage: "From the nature of our connection with the government of Cash, from the Nabob's incapacity, and the necessity which will for ever exist to the world the view of a policy upon the resources of his country, of exercising an influence, and requiring a substantial authority in the place of an armed and constitutional authority in the administration of his government." &c.

which I have on this account been compelled to postpone." The Board refused to acquiesce in the precipitate condemnation recommended to them by their President; and soon after, the letter of Mr. Bristow, dated on the 30th day of July, arrived. The Resident either absolutely denied the facts which were asserted in the complaints of the Vicir, or represented the actions with which he was charged, as actions to the performance of which he was, by the tenor of his instructions, compelled, actions absolutely necessary to accomplish the ends which the English government had in view, actions attended with beneficial effects, and performed with all the delay possible towards the Vicir. The complaints he represented as flowing solely from the Minister, to whose interests all reform was averse, who had opposed it in every instance, with all the power of eastern subdity, with all the power of a despotic influence tyrannically exercised over the helpless Vicir, and with all the effect which could be given to this power by a hold upon the ear of the Governor-General. On hearing this defence, the Council General, with the exception of Mr. Hastings, the accuser, unanimously declared, that no misconduct on the part of Mr. Bristow had been proved; and, by their decision, pronounced a heavy condemnation of their chief. Nothing seems better supported, than the opinion which the minutes of Mr. Macpherson expressed, "That Mr. Bristow has fully refuted the accusations advanced against him; and that, if they had in some degree been established, they would be more against the Board than against Mr. Bristow, who continually advised them of his endeavours to carry their instructions into effect."

The Governor-General meditated an important change in the relations between the Nabob of Oude and the English government. He moved, that in conformity with the proposal of the Vicir, and of his Minister, the English residency should be withdrawn, and the joint severity of the Nabob and the Minister taken for the discharge of the obligations which the Company held upon the government of Oude. In the instructions, to which reference has so frequently been made, of Hastings to Bristow, "The Nabob," it was said, "has repeatedly and bitterly complained of the indignity which he suffers in his authority, by the

BOOK V. usurpation of the Company's residents; and has repeatedly demanded, that whenever the Company's balance

1781.

shall be completely discharged, he may be free from this vexation, that he may be permitted to pay the subsidy in ready money; and that the assignments which have been granted to satisfy that demand may be restored him." The quarter from which this proposition proceeded, Mr. Hastings at the same time declared, was no secret to him. It proceeded, he said, from Hyder Beg Khan. He added, "It may not, however, be amiss to talk with the Minister on this subject; to let him know that it is well understood to be a demand for substantiating his authority in the place of the Company's, and to invest him with the sovereignty of the Vizir's dominions." These words are pregnant with meaning. In the first place they declare, that the authority exercised by the Company, embosomed the sovereignty of the Vizir's dominions, though, for the sake of crininating Mr. Darnley, he could erect every interference in that sovereignty into an act of guilt; and secondly, they declare, that to withdraw the English residency from Oude, was to deliver over the Vizir and his sovereignty into the hands of Hyder Beg, whose character he painted in the blackest colours. Yet, at the very moment when he was proposing to offer up this sacrifice of the Vizir and his sovereignty to the capality and tyranny of Hyder Beg Khan, he was not restrained from the glaring hypocrisy of expressing a deep concern for the indignity which he pretended the Vizir had sustained, by the part which the English Resident had acted, in endeavouring to reform his government, and check the malversations of the Minister by whom he was oppressed.

At the very time, however, of passing his instructions, Mr. Hastings stated that he had an inclination to the present measure. "I confess," says he, "that I did myself give encouragement to this proposition; knowing at the same time the quarter from which it came, I mean from Hyder Beg Khan; but willing to exonerate this government from the trouble and responsibility, and the Company from the disgrace, of whatever might attend the administration of the Nabob's government. I thought, too that it presented a sure prospect of the regular pay-

short of the current demands, by the penalty which would attend the failure, in the resumption of the former system of assignments, and in the personal claims which it would lay on the Minister. But his misconduct has since manifested itself in so many particular instances,—besides the universal disorder of the country; and this is so alarming in its effects to our government, that I shall hesitate, until I have the surest and most satisfactory grounds, to recommend an acquiescence in such a measure." What change there was in the grounds, except for the worse, in the few months between the time when this was written, and the date of his motion, does not appear. Another point is also remarkable. In the conversation which the Governor-General recommended to the Resident to hold with the Minister on this subject, he desired him to ask, provided the sovereignty of the Vair's dominions, according to the terms of his proposition, were transferred to him, "Whether, in the event of his involving our government in a new scheme of hostilities, by those which his mal-administration may produce, whether internally or by invasion in that country, he shall think himself in justice exempt from the personal vengeance which we may be disposed to exact from him."

In the first letter of complaint, which was received from the Vair against Mr. Bristow, the proposition for the removal of the residency, and the appointment of Hyder Beg Khan to the entire management of the country, was renewed, and Mr. Stables, in his Minute in Council on the 19th of May, 1781, declares, that this was the "great object which the minister, and" (the cipher in his hands) "his master, had in view, in preferring their complaints against the Resident." Mr. Stables added, "In justice and candour to the Nawab Vair and his minister, I think the Board ought explicitly to declare that they cannot, on any account, comply with the Vair's request, to grant him discretionary powers over his country, while such heavy debts remain due to the Company." In the debate, too, in Council, of the 31st of July, after the proposition was formally moved by the Governor-General, it met with the opposition of all the other members of the Board. The tone of the Governor-General, however, after the opposition has lasted for a little time, grew so high, as to intimi-

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.
1781.

BOOK V. date his colleagues; threatening them with the inconveniences of a divided administration, and the loss of his authority in the difficulties which attended the government of Oude. They were, therefore, induced to offer, on the 31st of December, to acquiesce in his proposal, provided he would take the whole responsibility of the measure upon himself. This, however, was a load which the Governor-General declined. It was afterwards explained, that responsibility with his fortune, or a pecuniary responsibility, was not understood. Responsibility, thus limited, which in fact was no responsibility at all, leaving nothing to be affected but his reputation, which it was impossible to exempt, he had no objection to undergo. On the 31st of December, it was determined, that the residency should be withdrawn; on receiving the security of creditable bankers for the balance which the Nabob owed to the Company, and for the accruing demands of the current year.

Many grounds of suspicion are laid in this transaction. From one remarkable fact, they derive the greatest corroboration. There is great reason to believe, that the letters which were written in the name of the Nabob, complaining of Bristow, were in fact suborned by the Governor-General, written in consequence of instructions, that is, commands secretly conveyed.

When Mr. Bristow was removed, just before the first journey of the Governor-General towards Oude, the removal was in like manner preceded by violent complaints from the Nabob. These complaints were suborned. Mr. Hastings himself, when proposing the return of Mr. Bristow in 1763, informs the Nabob's Vakool, that "His Highness," meaning the Nabob, "had been well pleased with Mr. Bristow, and that he knew what the Nabob had written formerly was at the instigation of Mr. Middleton." The instigation of Mr. Middleton was the instigation of Mr. Hastings.

Besides, it is in evidence, that this was not a singular case. It was the ordinary mode of procedure, established between Mr. Hastings and the Nabob. There was, it ap-

¹ Extract of an Answer, written (1774 August, 1767) from Raja Gopind Bahadur to the Vizir, by the Governor-General's direction. *Memoirs of Kewlaow, or Mysore*, p. 185.

poor, a regular concert, that the Nabob should never write a public letter respecting the residents or their proceedings, till he had first learned privately what Mr. Hastings wished that he should express, and that he then wrote accordingly. This appeared most fully, after the departure of Mr. Hastings, when the Nabob proposed to carry on the same practice with his successor. In a letter received on the 21st of April, 1783, "I desire," says the Vizir, "nothing but your satisfaction: and hope that such orders as relate to the friendship between the Company and me, and as may be your pleasure, may be written in your private letters to me through Major Palmer, or in your letters to the Major, that he may, in obedience to your orders, properly explain them to me, and whatever may be settled, he may first, as secret, inform you of it, and afterwards I may write to you, having learnt your pleasure—in this way, the secrets will be known to your mind alone, and the advice upon all the concerns will be given in a proper manner." The same thing is still more clearly expressed by the minister Hyder Beg Khan, on the same occasion. "I hope that such orders and commands as relate to the friendship between his Highness's and the Company's governments, and to your will, may be sent through Major Palmer in your own private letters, or in your letters to the Major, who is appointed from you as the presence of his Highness, that, in obedience to your orders, he may properly explain your commands, and whatever shall may be settled, he may first secretly inform you of it, and afterwards his Highness may, conformably thereto, write an answer, and I also may represent it. By this system, your pleasure will always be fully made known to his Highness, and his Highness and I will execute whatever may be your orders, without deviating a hair's breadth." When it was the intention of Mr. Hastings that Mr. Bristow, who had been withdrawn upon complaints, which, without any dislike to Mr. Bristow, the Nabob, through Middleton, had been instructed to prefer, that obedient sovereign was instructed to make an application of a very different description. "The Governor," said the Nabob's Vakil in the Arcot already quoted, "directed me to forward to the president, that it was his wish, that your Highness would write a letter to him; and,

BOOK V.
CHAP. VIII.
—
1782.

BOOK V. as from yourself, request of him that Mr. Bristow may be
CHAP. VIII. appointed to Lucknow." In his answer to the Nabob the
Nabob curiously says, "As to the wishes of Mr. Hastings,
1783. that I should write for him to send Mr. John Bristow, it
would have been proper and necessary, for you, privately
to have understood what were Mr. Hastings' real inten-
tions; whether the choice of sending Mr. John Bristow
was his own desire; or, whether it was in compliance with
Mr. Macpherson's—that I might then have written con-
formably thereto.—Writings are now sent to you for both
cases. Having privately understood the wishes of Mr.
Hastings, deliver whichever of the writings he shall order
you." After all this, and after the threats of Mr. Hast-
ings against all letters from the Nabob which he might
doubt, the meaning of the letters complaining of Bristow
cannot be misanderstood. It was a shrewd sacrifice of the
Nabob, respecting Macpherson: who had become recently
a Member of the Supreme Council, and whose support Mr.
Hastings might require. The accusations, which the Go-
vernor-General afterwards aimed at Mr. Macpherson for
exporting Bristow, fell in, at least, with the conjecture.

The cause which prompted so violent a desire for his
recall is involved in comparative mystery. We can trace
a kind of analogy. As the preceding removal of Mr.
Bristow was immediately followed by the first visit of the
Governor-General to the Nabob; so the present removal
was immediately followed by another. This, undoubtedly,
portends nothing against Mr. Hastings: but if there be any
other ground for suspicion, this tends to confirm them.
If these visits were intended for any unjustifiable trans-
actions between the Governor and Nabob, the removal of
a witness, whose compliance could not be depended upon,
was just the proceeding which, in such circumstances,
every man would adopt.²

Before the removal of the residency was finally settled,
the Governor-General had represented, that a great de-
mand existed for his presence in Oude, to aid in settling

¹ Minutes of Evidence, at supra, p. 716, 718, 720.

² This detail of the conflicting opinions of the Council, and of the machinery
by which Hastings maintained a necessary control over the Nabob, is essential,
and the British Resident, is surely a matter for inquiry, especially when the
subject of the whole process is the situation of a very young Governor,
salaried to the private integrity of Hastings.—W.

the disorders of the country, and in making such arrangements as would enable the Viceroy to fulfil his engagements. His journey was opposed by the other Members of the Board. Upon it, however, for some reason or other, the Governor-General had set his heart. A letter was procured from Major Palmer, representing the state of the country as alarming, and urgently requiring the immediate presence of Mr. Hastings; with other letters from the Viceroy, and his minister, earnestly requesting to see the Governor-General at Lucknow. The consent of a majority of the Council was at last obtained; and Mr. Hastings was authorized to proceed to Lucknow, invested with all the powers of the Board, to regulate and determine the affairs both internal and external of the state, and for that purpose to command even the military resources of the English government without control. The proposition of the Governor-General was introduced on the 20th of January, 1784: the consultation was closed, and the authority of the Board conferred on the 16th of February; and on the following day, the 17th, the journey of the Governor-General began.

In proceeding to Lucknow, he passed through the province of Benares, which, in the time of Chytsa Beg and his father manifested so great a degree of prosperity; and there, witnessed the effects of his late proceedings. The first deputy whom he had appointed for the Raja was dismissed for the offence of not making up his payments to the exacted amount. The second, as might well be expected, acted upon the "avowed principle that the sum fixed for the revenue must be collected." The consequence was, that the population was plunged into misery; and desolation prevailed the country. "From the confines of Bazar," says Mr. Hastings, "to Benares, I was followed and harried by the clamours of the discontented inhabitants. The distresses which were produced by the long continued drought inevitably tended to heighten the general discontent. Yet, I have reason to fear, that the cause rested principally, in a defective, if not a corrupt and oppressive administration." "I am sorry to add, that from Bazar to the opposite boundary, I have seen nothing but traces of complete devastation in every village." "I cannot help remarking, that except

BOOK V. the city of Benares, the province is in effect without a
 CHAP. VII. government. The administration of the province is mis-
 1784. conducted, and the people oppressed; trade discouraged,
 and the revenue in danger of a rapid decline from the
 violent appropriation of its means.¹ It is remarkable,
 how few of the political arrangements of Mr. Hastings
 produced the effects which he expected from them; and
 how much his administration consisted in a perpetual
 change of ill-concerted measures. The arrangements for
 the government of Benares were his own; and for the
 effect of them he was responsible; but he enjoyed a
 happy facility of laying the blame at any door rather
 than his own. He ascribed the existing evils to the
 deputy solely; and with the approbation of the Council
 removed him. The predecessor of that deputy, who trans-
 gressed in nothing but the extent of his authority, met
 with a severer fate. To procure some redress of his
 grievances, he had once repaired in person to Calcutta,
 where, so far from receiving any attention, he received
 two peremptory orders from the Supreme Council to quit
 the city and return. Nor was this all. Upon the arrival
 of Mr. Hastings at Benares, he ordered him into prison
 again; after which his vexations and hardships soon put
 a period to his life. His poverty was real and he died
 in want.

The Governor-General arrived at Lucknow on the 27th
 of March. He had some success in obtaining money from
 the nabob into whose hands the government was trans-
 ferred. In order still more to disturb the revenues
 of the Nabob, he agreed to withdraw the English detach-
 ment commanded by Colonel Sir John Cunningham, which
 still was stationed on the frontiers of Oude at the Nabob's
 expense; and agreed for this reason, "That the Company
 would give nothing by its continuance, since the Nabob
 had not the means of defraying the expense; and whether
 it remains," he added, "on account of the Company, or be
 continued to swell the Nabob's with an accumulating debt
 which he cannot pay, its effects on the Company's funds
 will prove the same, while it holds out a deception to the
 public." Mr. Hastings had eluded inquiry into the truth of

¹ Letter from the Governor-General to the Council Board, dated Lucknow,
 1st of April, 1784.

The allegations on which the confiscation of the estates and treasures of the Begums, and others, had been entered, and the commands of the Court of Directors had till this time remained without effect. The time, however, was now come, when at least a partial obedience was deemed expedient; and Mr. Hastings reported to the board, that the jaghires of the Begums, and of the Nuloh Sahar Jung, the uncle of the Vicer, had been "restored, conformably to the Company's order, and more so to the inclinations the Nuloh Vicer, who went to Fyzabad for the express purpose of making a respectful tender of them in person to the Begums." The restoration, however, tardy as it was, fell greatly short of completeness; for Mr. Hastings reported that the personages in question, had made a voluntary concession of a large portion of their respective shares.* The Governor-General was now so far from expressing any apprehensions of disorder from the possession of jaghires by the Princesses and other principal persons of the Nuloh's family, that he declared his expectation of their influence in supporting the arrangements which had taken place with the Vicer.[†]

The Governor-General departed from Lucknow on the 27th of August. He arrived at the Presidency on the 6th of November, resumed his seat at the Council Board on the 11th, and on the 2nd concluded the Directors of his request, addressed to them on the 20th of March, in the year 1783, to nominate his successor. He now began to prepare for his departure. On the 8th of February, 1784, he resigned his office, and embarked for England.[‡]

In India, the true test of the government, as affecting the interest of the English nation, is found in its financial results. In 1774, when the administration of Mr. Hastings began, the net revenue of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, which, being the principal branch of receipt, will suffice for that general conception which is all I can attempt

* Letter from the Governor-General to the Court Board, dated Benares, 29th September, 1784.

† For the succeeding state of measures, the reader is referred to the *Papers relating to the proceedings in India*, printed at the Request of Parliament in the year 1784; in the Third, fourth, fifth, seventh, and twenty-second Articles of Council proceedings at Warke, with the sanction of Mr. Hastings, and the approval of the Council printed a long while since; also in the Minutes of the Council on the Trial, in which the documents were printed again.

1700 & V. to survey, were 2,372,630*l.*; the civil and military charges of the government of Bengal were 1,700,478*l.*, difference 672,152*l.*: the whole of the bond and other debts in India were 1,530,106*l.*; and the debt in England, including capital stock, and the sums due to the annuitants, were 12,530,106*l.* In 1753, the revenues of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, including the new revenue of Benares, and the subsidies from Oude, amounted to 3,382,197*l.*; the charges, deducting Clive's jaghirs, 30,000*l.* per annum, which ceased in 1781, one-half of the allowances to the Nabob of Bengal, and the tribute to the Mogul, amounted to 4,312,613*l.*; the difference, 1,002,678*l.*, is an improvement upon the year 1753, of 334,307*l.*; but, on the other hand, the debt in 1786, when the whole of the arrears of Mr. Hastings' administration were brought to account, was raised to 15,443,348*l.* in England; and in India, including Oude to 10,464,000*l.*; a sum of 25,907,348*l.*; to which should be joined 1,240,000*l.*, the sum which was yielded by the subscription at 145 per cent. of 800,000*l.* added this year to the capital stock. The administration of Mr. Hastings, therefore, added about twelve and a-half millions to the debt of the East India Company; and the interest at five per cent. of this additional debt, is more than the amount of the additional revenue.¹

Nor is this the only unhappy result to the financial administration of Mr. Hastings. The net territorial revenues of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, instead of increasing had actually declined. In the year ending the 1st of May, 1774, they amounted to the sum of 2,126,799*l.*, and in the year ending on the same day in 1786, to that of 2,071,943*l.* In Lord Cornwallis's celebrated revenue letter, dated the 10th November, 1786, it is allowed, that the state of the accounts exhibits a debt in India of 8,91,24,118 rupees, and assets valued at 5,81,24,567, with

¹ For these statements see the account published in the *First and Fifth Reports of the Committee of Enquiry*, in 1784; and the accounts presented to Parliament for the several years. See also *James's History of British India*, p. 383.—E

It should not be forgotten, however, that during his administration he had to provide, from the revenue under his management, for the whole charge of the British and Madras Presidencies, during most numerous wars, for arms and to that purpose, for contingencies and expences, not intended for their relief, and for the debt of Bengal. The addition to the debt was a problem as would have been looked for under such extraordinary pressure.—E

² An address presented to the House of Commons, March 20th, 1786. See

a balance against the Company of 3,16,00,000. But Lord ROBEY V. Cornwallis observes, that the amount of assets is so much, made up for the sales of shore, that is, a delusion, that it presents a result widely different from the truth; and that the balance between the debts, and such assets as are applicable to their extinction, would not, in his opinion, fall short of 7,50,00,000 rupees. "Of this debt something more than a crore of rupees was subscribed for transference to England, leaving a debt of about 6½ crores, "nearly the whole of which," he says, "is running at an average rate of interest of 8½ per cent. per annum." "For the discharge of this," his Lordship adds, "your Bengal

also the following statement of the Bengal Revenue, taken from the printed Minutes of Evidence on Mr. Hastings' Trial, p. 1876.

Years.	Current net Collections.	Balance collected.	Total.	Bengal charges Collection.
1776—7	181,15,866	11,94,368	193,10,234	48,05,528
1777—8	186,08,718	20,76,414	206,85,132	52,88,818
1778—9	192,71,271	20,83,717	213,54,988	56,45,717
1779—80	190,71,708	15,38,303	206,10,011	56,95,827
Summa.	750,67,563	68,92,792	819,60,355	214,35,891
1781—2	198,04,864	6,73,865	204,78,729	67,75,865
1782—3	196,04,869	5,25,426	201,30,295	55,03,614
1783—4	197,70,853	6,73,295	204,44,148	71,26,876
1784—5	178,00,840	8,01,781	186,02,621	73,78,756
Summa.	779,81,366	26,74,367	806,55,733	267,85,111
	Less in last four years		18,03,890	
	Increases in last four years.....			85,00,571
1787—80	Total		890,25,237	
1781—5		810,07,718	
	Less in last three years ..		5,33,300	
1776—8	181,08,868	17,40,398	198,49,266	
1779—6	196,08,879	12,08,178	208,17,057	
1776—7	187,15,869	12,84,768	200,00,637	
	574,33,516	42,33,344	616,66,860	
Total in 1781—4			408,07,278	
Less in last three years			67,00,000	

BOOK V. government alone can hereafter furnish a third; which (under the limitations in the estimate) is stated at a gross sum of about 48,50,000 current rupees, per annum. And the ordinary expenses of your different establishments, allowing for the provision of an European instrument, at present exceed their resources." That is to say; the revenue of the Indian government at the close of the administration of Mr. Hastings, was not equal to its ordinary expense.

The incidents which had occurred under the Presidency of Madras, from the period of terminating the war with

Another View of the Collections under the Bengal Government.

Yr. &c.	Current Col- lections.	Collected unpaid Debts.	Gross Col- lections.	Charges Collections	Annual Surplus into the Treasury
1773-4	1,50,39,798	16,18,375	1,66,58,173	41,55,319	1,25,02,854
1774-5	1,59,27,509	16,36,818	1,75,64,327	42,08,396	1,33,55,931
1775-6	1,67,80,998	15,40,809	1,83,21,807	43,54,272	1,39,67,535
1776-7	1,68,33,796	1,1,16,736	1,79,50,532	43,57,471	1,35,93,061
1777-8	1,65,39,534	1,34,709	1,66,74,243	45,08,159	1,21,66,084
1778-9	1,74,58,717	28,79,710	2,03,38,427	52,90,819	1,50,47,608
1779-80	1,80,80,318	19,39,547	2,00,19,865	55,48,598	1,44,71,267
1780-81	1,87,30,553	16,60,331	2,03,90,884	58,46,337	1,45,44,547
1781-82	1,95,39,694	14,71,548	2,10,11,242	60,38,512	1,49,72,730
1782-83	2,06,15,975	6,79,089	2,12,95,064	67,77,668	1,45,17,396
1783-84	2,11,36,845	6,99,611	2,18,36,456	68,33,759	1,49,02,697
1784-85	2,23,72,385	6,49,815	2,30,22,200	71,25,711	1,58,96,489

Mr. Stuart's Report on the Revenue of Bengal, Bihar, and Orissa, Minutes of private Councils at Hastings' Trial, Appendix, Art. 6. No. 127 p. 264-26.

It is, however, to be remarked, explains the proceedings and parts in a clearer light, the real nature of the financial operations of Hastings' administration. The stated collections of the Bengal, Bihar, and Orissa, had not declined on the over exp. they had surpluses. The first collections of 1773 were upwards of 2,00,00,000; those of 1785, 2,23,72,385, giving a surplus on the latter of upwards of 1,50,000. The former period, viz. 1773, could be maintained, was the first year of the new revenue system, under which farmers of the average had agreed to collect, and raised the country to a higher state of general improvement. It is curious to observe that at the same time occurred, and thus far as declined from the collectors, but a decrease in the "net" collections. As observed by Mr. Macpherson, the successor of Hastings, their charges "should more properly be called the burthening expenses of our government. Thus the increased expenses of the collectors of the Revenue," including, as they, the charges of the Revenue and English Assistants, &c. &c., and Orissa's Courts, &c. &c., many other expenses only recently collected. The last year of collections, viz. 1784, 1785, &c. The great difficulty of such charges to increase, and the difficulty of effecting controlling them, it is observed in the Minutes of the government are admitted by most private surveys, are so universally a part of the history of all administrations, in all countries, that they induce no particular discredit on the government of Hastings. — F.

¹ Printed from Hastings' Letters, printed by order of the House of Commons. 1782.

Types, till the time when Mr. Hastings surrendered his office, remain to be adduced.

BOOK V.

CHAP. VIII.

1782.

The situation of the Naloh of Arcot, as it had long been, so it continued to be, a source of weakness and of difficulty to the English rulers in the southern Presidency. The wretched government which that Naloh maintained, and which he want of talents, he want of virtue, and the disadvantages of his situation, disqualified him for improving, not only sunk the people into the deepest wretchedness, but cut off the resources required for the defence of the country. The impossibility, which the Presidents had experienced, of obtaining, through his hands, the means which were necessary to provide for the security of the province; or their compliance, from unworthy motives, at his unwillingness to provide them, had laid open the country to all the disasters, to which the weak and unprotected state in which it was found by Hyder Ali exposed it. When the war began, the strongest necessity existed for rendering the resources of the country available to its defence. Supplies, in the highest degree defective, had been obtained from the Naloh; nor was there any rational prospect of improvement. For the payment of particular debts, both to the Company and to individuals, it had been usual with him, according to the custom of Indian princes, to grant assignments on the revenues of particular districts; and no inconsiderable portion of the whole was under this disposition. As the company was peculiarly violent, nothing less being immediately at stake than the existence in the Carnatic of both the Naloh and the English, Lord Macartney regarded an extension of the same expedient, namely, an assignment of all his revenues, as the only feasible plan for meeting the present difficulties; and compliance with it, as no unreasonable condition imposed on the Naloh, seeing the proceeds were to be employed for his own defence, and that it was impossible he could, if defended at all, be so well defended by any other means. Not without great difficulty the consent of the Naloh was obtained. It was an arrangement far from agreeable to that vanity and ambition, which formed a strong ingredient in his character. And there was no want of persons in his confidence who influenced his dis-

BOOK V. content, and who excited him to employ every stratagem to obtain the surrender of the power he had given away.

1782.

It has already been observed, that the seat or durbar of the Nabob, who had taken up his residence at Madras, was one of the most corrupt and active scenes of intrigue that had ever been exhibited in India. The Nabob, who was totally incompetent to his own defence, was necessarily in a state of abject dependence upon the Company; but, receiving directly the revenues of the country, he endeavoured, as far as possible, by the application of money, to secure the gratification of his will. His policy was, to purchase friends among the English rulers; and to excite opposition to those whose acquiescence he failed in acquiring. The effects were mischievous, in a variety of ways. The servants of the Company were too frequently taught to look to the violation, rather than the performance of the duties, as their most certain source of reward; and the business of the Presidency was in general disturbed by a violent spirit of division and contumacious

The mind of the Nabob was of that class of minds which never, by a kind of necessity, he always governed by somebody; and in the turbidity of age, and of a constitution worn with indolence, he now leaned more absolutely on the accustomed support than at an earlier period of his life. The persons who at this period had acquired the entire ascendancy over him were Asseer ul Oorrah, his second son, and Paul Benfield. The former is described as excelling in all the arts of Eastern, the latter in all the arts of Western, villany. The passion of the former was power, the passion of the latter, money; and this much, at least, appears, that both pursued their ends with much ardour, with great talents for intrigue, with great ardour, and not much of moral restraint. The immediate object of the former was to get his elder brother disinherited, and to obtain the succession for himself. For this purpose the old Nabob, whose passions and those of his favourite were one, had employed all his arts to obtain from the Company an acknowledgment, that he had the right of naming his successor, without regard to the established order of inheritance. With a view, by obtaining favour with the English, to pave the way to this and other desirable objects, the Asseer ul Oorrah had acted the part of

a useless instrument in obtaining the consent of his father to the assignment of the revenues. When he found that Lord Macartney was as little subservient to his purposes, after this event as before, his disappointment and his enmity were equally strong. His endeavour was to render the assignment useless; to arrest, if possible, the transaction. As he had his father's raised complaint in all things, so he had it eager in the pursuit of an end, the hope of which served as a balm to the wound his pride had received, in ever relinquishing the management of the revenues. In Benfield he met with an able confidant. Benfield had been removed by Lord Macartney from some of the offices which he held as a servant of the Company. The liberalities and the views of the Nabob and his son pointed out a path to fortune as well as revenge.

The first expedient was, by practising on the renters, and other persons in charge of the revenues, to render unproductive the collections. Disorder and desolation in the country was, without a government, and ravaged by a destructive foe, the realising of any revenue was in itself a difficult task. Lord Macartney had appointed a committee, consisting of some of the most trustworthy of the Company's servants at the Presidency, for consulting the business relative to the assigned revenues. They speedily discovered that secret orders and suggestions, which counteracted all their proceedings, had been sent into the districts. The people had been taught to distrust the validity of the engagements formed with the English government; and hence to practice all the arts of delay and evasion. The greatest oppression was evidently exercised upon the unhappy cultivators: yet little could be obtained from the renters and collectors for the Company's treasury; while large sums, it is affirmed, were privately sent to the *Amser ul Omrah*.*

The known enmity of Sir Eyre Coote to Lord Macartney suggested the first stratagem for overturning the engagement with the President. A bait was offered, the attractions of which, it was supposed, the avidity of the General for power would not be able to resist. The Nabob offered to vest in his hands full authority over all the officers of his government and revenues. But the General too well

BOOK V.
CHAP. VII.

1782.

BOOK V. knew what a frightful chase his government was, to have cast on any desire for the responsibility of so dangerous a trust.

1782.

As soon as it was found that the ear of the Governor-General was open to representations against the Governor of Madras, it was a channel in which the Nabob and his instruments industriously plied. Lord Maccarty was accused of not having abilities to render the assignment of the revenues productive, of committing the disorders of the country; and, above all, of practising the utmost cruelty and oppression towards the Nabob and his family. Letters of this import were not only sent at various times, in the Nabob's name, to Bengal; but one was written and transmitted to the British King.

Sufficient encouragement having been received from the Governor-General, the Nabob ventured at last to solicit the restoration of his revenues, by the surrender of the assignment; and his former agents, Assem Khan, and Mr. Richard Sullivan, were sent on a second mission to Bengal, in January, 1783.

Their emissive representations against Maccarty were received; and not only entered on the records, but immediately sent to England; without communication to the party accused; and of course without an opportunity afforded him of obviating their effects, however undressed, by a single word of defence. A most singular examination of the Nabob's agents or advocates took place before the Supreme Council, on the subjects on which the Nabob prayed their interference. The agents were directed to state whatever they knew, and did state whatever they chose: matters of history, as much as of perception; without a word of cross examination, from an opposite party, to limit and correct the partial representation of interested reporters. After completing their statements, and not before, they were asked, if they would swear to the truth of what they had stated. The compulsion was almost irresistible. To have said, they would not swear, was to confess they had not spoken the truth. Assem Khan, however, excused himself, on the plea that it was not honourable for a Mussulman to confirm what he said by an oath. Mr. Sullivan had no such apology, and therefore he took his oath, but with a solemn latitude; that, "to the best of his belief and remembrance, he had

spoken the truth, and nothing but the truth," on such
which, if we have charity enough to believe it to be an
degree strongly affected not any part of the truth, how-
ever material, which it might have suited and pleased him
to utterance.

BOOK V.
 CHAP. VIII.
 1580.

On the strength of this information, partial and authorized as it was, a resolution was passed, on the 8th of January, 1793, to surrender the assignment into the hands of the Nizam: though not only had this assignment been formerly approved and lightly passed by the Governor-General and Council, as an act of equal ability and justice, but the decency of the Madras government, which endeavored to accomplish the end by gentle means, had been treated as too scrupulous, and the utility of a greater severity particularly and strongly displayed.

The magnanimity and disinterestedness which the Naloh was able to give to the government of Malacca, he was emboldened to carry to the greatest height, by the encouragement he received from so high a quarter. A viler display of hypocrisy is not upon record, than the language in which the authors of the celebration of the slave rebellion, of those of Chyote Sang, and of the Kingdom of Oude, affected to bewail the cruelties which, he said, were practised upon the Nalohs of the Cameroons and Oude, by Lord Hastings, and Mr. Barendse. "The correction," Mr. Hastings said, "of both Princes is equally desirable and

[illegible]

² In his discussion on that of Moravskii, 1932, pointed among the papers presented to the House of Deputies on the 12th of March, 1934. For the opinion which Mr. Hasegawa collects out of the moribund character of the nation and of the economic crisis in regard with the same and the danger

BOOK V. equally oppressed; and the humiliation of their retac-
 CHAP. VII. tances shows them to be equally hopeless of any redress

1783.

but in the mercy of their oppressors.¹¹ Orders were dispatched to Madras for the restoration of his revenues to the Nabob; of which the sixth part, which he had reserved for himself, as requisite for the maintenance of his family and dignity, had been exactly paid; and in reality yielded to him more money for his private purposes, than he had ever before enjoyed. It variously happened that before the orders of Supreme Council arrived at Madras, despatches were received from the Court of Directors, which conveyed their approbation of the assignment, and commanded the assistance of the Bengal government to render it effectual; despatches which, at the same time, contained the confirmation of the transaction by which Mr. Sullivan was appointed an agent of the Supreme Council at the residence of the Nabob, and a declaration that the only organ of communication with Mahomed Ali was the Governor and Council of Madras. Upon this communication from the Court of Directors, the Governor and Council applied to the Supreme Council for the assistance which they were commanded to yield. After a hesitation of a few months, the Supreme Council resolved to comply; and informing the Governor and Council of Madras, that they assumed the right of judging for themselves, they repeated their orders of the 11th of January, and commanded the surrender of the assignment.

The consequences of obedience appeared to Lord Macartney of the most alarming description. The pay of the Madras army was at that moment seven months in arrear: from the resources of the Carnatic alone was any supply to be obtained: not a single pagoda, since the death of Sir Eyre Coote, had been sent from Bengal: if the assignment was given up, the slender produce of the Circars, which Mr. Hastings would have sacrificed, would alone have remained: and neither the native, nor European

¹¹ maintained as long as under the age of when he was sworn in Council at Madras: see the records of that Presidency in Ross's Appendix, p. 1207, 1208, 1211, 1212, 1213.

¹² Nothing is here stated but the truth; and the story of both parties was not dissimilar to those with which they are concerned. At the same time there is no doubt that Hastings would have felt little sympathy for them, if he thought their situation incompatible with public health or necessary.

troops, could be expected to bear any addition to the privations which they now endured. With a prospect of the actual dissolution of the government, if the revenues, on which every thing depended, were at so extraordinary a moment given up; and fully impressed with the conviction that to surrender them to the Naloh was to render them unavailable to the defence of the country, defence which then fell upon the Company without any resources, and oppressed them with a burden which they were unable to bear, he resolved to maintain the assignment, which, at the close of the second year, had yielded one million sterling from those very countries, which for eighteen months after the invasion of Hyder Ali had not contributed a pagoda toward the expenses of the war.

With this disobedience, Mr. Hastings, whose administration was now so ferociously assailed in England, and who was deeply concerned in the success with which he might perform the business of winding it up, found, either not leisure, or not inclination, to enter into contest.¹

After the unreserved exhibition, which I have accounted it my duty to make, of the evidence which came before me of the errors and vices of Mr. Hastings's administration, it is necessary, for the satisfaction of my own mind, and to save me from the fear of having given a more unfavourable reception than I intended of his character and conduct, to impress upon the reader the obligation of considering two things. The first is, that Mr. Hastings was placed in difficulties, and acted upon by temptations, such as few public men have been called upon to overcome: and of this the preceding history affords abundant evidence. The second is, that no man, probably, who ever had a great share in the government of the world, had his public conduct so completely explored and laid open to view. The mode of transacting the business of the Company, almost wholly by writing; first, by written consultations in the Council; secondly, by written commands on the part of the Directors, and written statements

¹ Papers preserved in the House of Commons, pursuant to their orders of the 6th of February, 1785, respecting the affairs of the Company, vol. II.; *Barrow's List of Lord Simsbury*, 1. 326-327.

BOOK V. of every thing done on the part of their servants in India; CHAP. VII. afforded a Lady of evidence, such as under no other government ever did or could exist. This evidence was brought forward, with a completeness never before exemplified, first by the contentions of a powerful party in the Council in India; next by the inquiries of two searching committees of the House of Commons; in the third place by the production of almost every paper which could be supposed to throw light upon his conduct, during the discussions upon the proceedings relative to his impeachment in the House of Commons; lastly, by the production of papers upon his trial. And all this was elucidated and commented upon by the keenest spirits of the age; and for a long time without any interposition of power to screen his offences from detection. It is my firm conviction, that if we had the same advantage with respect to other men, who have been as much engaged in the conduct of public affairs, and could view their conduct as completely unaided, and stripped of all its disguises, few of them would be found, whose character would present a higher claim to indulgence than his. In point of ability, he is beyond all question the most eminent of the chief rulers whom the Company have ever employed; nor is there any one of them, who would not have succumbed under the difficulties which, if he did not overcome, he at any rate sustained. He had no genius, any more than Clive, for schemes of policy including large views of the past, and large anticipations of the future; but he was hardly ever excelled in the skill of applying temporary expedients to temporary difficulties: in putting off the evil day; and in giving a fair complexion to the present one. He had not the forward and imposing authority of Clive; but he had a calm firmness, which usually, by its constancy, wore out all resistance. He was the first, or among the first, of the servants of the Company, who attempted to acquire any language of the natives, and who set on foot those liberal inquiries into the literature and institutions of the Hindus, which have led to the satisfactory knowledge of the present day. He had the great art of a ruler, which consists in attaching to the Governor those who are governed; his administration

assuredly was popular, both with his countrymen and the Hottentots.

100

CHAPTER IX

Legislature Proceedings from 1772 to 1780.—Renewal of the Charter.—Select and Secret Committees of the House of Commons.—Proceedings against Indian Delinquency.—Mr. Dowdell's East India Bill.—Mr. Pae's East India Bills.—Mr. Pitt's East India Bill.

IT is now time to inquire into the proceedings to which the affairs of India had given birth in England since the last great legislative interference. From the year 1767 till the year 1774, the East India Company was bound to pay to the public, yearly, the sum of 400,000*l.*, "in respect of the territorial acquisitions and revenues lately obtained in the East Indies." But in the year 1774, the financial embarrassments of the Company became so great, that

[illegible]

BOOK V. they were obliged to solicit, and they received, a loan from
CHAP. IX. the public of 1,400,000*l.* At that time it was represented,
1781. "That in the then circumstances of the East India Com-
pany, it would not be in their power to provide for the re-
payment of such loan, and for the establishing their affairs
upon a more secure foundation for the time to come,
unless the public should agree to forego for the present,
all participation in the profits arising from the territorial
acquisitions and revenues lately obtained in the East
Indies." It was accordingly, at that time enacted, that
it should not be lawful to make a dividend of more than
six per cent. per annum on the Company's capital stock,
till that loan was repaid; and that the whole of their sur-
plus profits should be applied to its liquidation: that
after the loan of 1,400,000*l.* should be repaid, it should not
be lawful to make a dividend of more than seven per cent.
per annum upon the capital stock, until, by the applica-
tion of the whole of their surplus profits, their bond-debt
should be reduced to the sum of 1,500,000*l.* In the year
1783, the loan being repaid, and the debt reduced, accord-
ing to the terms of the preceding ordinance, an act was
passed, to be in force for one year, permitting a dividend
of eight per cent. for that year, and reserving the surplus
profits for the future disposal of the legislature. In the
year 1785, another act was passed for one year also, con-
taining precisely the same enactments as that of the pre-
ceding year.

As the exclusive privileges were to expire upon these
years' notice after the 25th of March, 1786, it was now
high time to treat about a renewal of the charter; and ac-
cordingly, during the latter part of that year, and the
beginning of 1781, much negotiation took place between
the treasury and the East India House. In parliament,
the business was of very difficult handling. The contents
between the Supreme Council and Supreme Court, which
were represented as actually opposing one another with
an armed force, had given occasion to petitions from the
British subjects in India, from the Governor-General and
Council, and from the East India Company; and had
made a deep impression upon the public mind. The com-
plaints and representations of Mr. Francis, taken up

¹ Such are the words of the preamble of the Act, 25 Geo. III. c. 25.

warmly by a powerful party in the legislative assembly, had filled the nation with ideas of injustice and other crimes on the part of Mr. Hastings. Intelligence had been received of the eruption of Hyder Ali into the Carnatic, with the strongest representations of the misconduct of those agents under whom so much calamity had arrived. And strong fears were excited, that the ruin of the English interests, in that part of the world, was at hand.

The points were two, upon which the views of the minister and the Company found it difficult to concur; the right to the territory; and the remunerations due to the public for the advantages which the East India Company were allowed to enjoy. According to the minister, the right of the crown to all territory acquired by subjects, was a matter of established law. The Company were at this time sufficiently bold to assert, that the Indian territory which they had acquired belonged of right to themselves. On the other point, the only question was, what proportion of the proceeds from the Indian territory the East India Company should be made to give up to the nation.

Lord North was now tottering on the ministerial throne; the East India Company were, therefore, encouraged to greater boldness, in standing out for favourable terms; and they declined to bring forward a petition for a renewal of the charter, on those terms to which the minister desired to reduce them. On the 2th of April, 1781, he represented, that "though he did not then intend to state any specific proposition relative to the future management of the Company's affairs, still he held it to be his duty to state to the House some points, that would be very proper for them to consider, before they should proceed to vote. First, the propriety of making the Company account with the public for three-fourths of all the net profits above eight per cent. for dividend: Secondly, of granting a renewal of the charter for an exclusive trade for a short rather than a long term; Thirdly, of giving a greater degree of power than had been hitherto enjoyed, to the Governor of Bengal, that, in future, among the members of the Council, he might be something more than a *primus inter pares*, equal with the name of chief; Fourthly, of establishing a tribunal in England, for juris-

BOOK V.
CHAP. II.
—
128

BOOK V. SECTION III.
1781.
dictation in affairs relating to India, and punishing those servants of the Company who should be convicted of having abused their power; Fifthly, the propriety, as all the despatches received from India by the Directors were by agreement shown to his Majesty's Secretary of State, of making all despatches to India be shown to him before they were sent, lest the Directors might, at some time or other, precipitate this Kingdom into a war without necessity, with the princes of that country: Sixthly,* he said, "it would be the business of the House to determine, upon what terms, and whether with or without the beneficial reversion, the charter should be renewed; Seventhly, whether, if government should retain the territories, it might not compel the Company to bring home the revenue for government: and, Eighthly, whether any, and what regulations ought to be made, with respect to the Supreme Court of Judicature."[†]

Of these propositions, the third, the fourth, and the fifth, are remarkable, as the archetype, from which were afterwards copied three of the principal provisions in Mr. Pitt's celebrated East India Bill.

At last a compromise was effected between the minister and the Directors. A petition for renewal of the charter was presented from the Directors, on the 25th of June, 1781. An act was passed, of which the following were the principal provisions: That, whereas the Company, since

* See Parliamentary History, vol. iii.

† The purport of these three propositions he expressed more explicitly on the 26th of Nov. "He had been desirous he had ever thrown out, of giving the Directors-General private powers that were so justly visited on him; rather said, I do not mean to say, in any of his Cases, I only making to them, what he had so often, the revenue goes, which he justified, he said that, and sending home those revenues, together with such as the Council should as the company have obtained, in case they did not an opinion from the Government-General. Another reason he gave, as he said, was this. All powers the Company were allowed to send despatches to all their despatches from India, but not of any of the orders and instructions which they sent out. He said, therefore, to move in the bill a clause, obliging them to show to the Lords of the Treasury, or the Secretaries of State, all their instructions to their servants that related to their political and military conduct, and to add further, that his Majesty has a right properly to require, through his Secretary of State, to the Directors, any and all returns, in the particular request of the Company's servants, in regard to the persons and management of war in India, or in the political conduct of affairs, or in any revenue with the persons in India, that the Directors should be obliged to show such orders, and to send it out to India, immediately. . . . He thought it would be a desirable thing to establish a Court of Judicature in that Kingdom, to hear and determine, in a summary way, all charges of peculation and oppression in India." &c. p. 328.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.
1781.

the 28th of June, 1776, when they had paid their loan to the public, and reduced their bond debt to the pre-appointed limits, had been in possession of all the profits arising from the Indian territory, except from participation with the public, they pay 200,000*l.* to the public, as discharge of all claims upon their account previous to the 1st of March, 1761 : that all the former privileges granted to the Company be continued to them, till three years' notice after the 1st of March, 1761 : that the Company pay out of their clear profits, a dividend of eight per cent. per annum on the capital stock, and of the surplus three-fourths to the public, reserving the remainder to their own use : and that the claims with respect to the territory, on the part both of the Crown and of the Company, remain unaffected by the present act. Of the propositions, thrown out by the minister, for the introduction of reforms into the government of India, only one was carried into effect; namely, that regarding the powers of ministers over the political transactions of the Company. It was ordered that they should communicate to ministers all despatches which they sent to India, with respect to their revenues, and their civil and military affairs; and that in all matters relative to war and peace, and transactions with other powers, they should be governed by the directions which ministers might prescribe.¹

On the 15th of February, 1781, petitions from the Governor-General and Council, and from a number of British subjects residing in Bengal, and from the United Company of merchants trading to the East Indies, against the pretensions and proceedings of the Supreme Court of Judicature, were read in the House of Commons; and after a debate it was agreed, that a Select Committee should be chosen to whom they were referred. This was that celebrated committee who were afterwards instructed to take into consideration the administration of justice, in the provinces of Bengal, Bihar, and Orissa; and in what manner that country might be governed with the greatest advantage to the people, both of Great Britain and of India; in which Committee the most conspicuous, as well as the most laborious member, was Edmund Burke.

The Select Committee was moved for by General Smith,

¹ 21 Geo. III. cap. 43.

BOOK V. who belonged to what is called the opposition party
 CHAP. III. in the House; and it was chiefly composed of members
 1781. who had acted not in concert with the ministers. That a want of equal zeal for the abridgement of Indian delinquency might not be imputed to his party, the minister, on the 30th of April, immediately after the arrival of the news of the eruption of Hyder Ali into the Carnatic, moved for the formation of a Secret Committee, who should inquire into the causes of the war, then subsisting in the Carnatic, and into the state of the British possessions on the coast. This Committee was composed almost entirely of persons connected with the minister; and Mr. Henry Dundas, then Lord Advocate of Scotland, was its presiding and most active member.

The first of these Committees presented the House with twelve Reports, the other with six; and the public is deeply indebted to them for the publication of the most important documents of the Indian government, during the period to which their inquiries applied. Any considerable desire for the welfare of India, guided by any considerable degree of intelligence, would have drawn a great lesson from that example. An adequate plan for a regular, and successive, and still more perfect publication of the most material documents of the Indian administration, would be one of the most efficient of all expedients for improving the government of that distant dependency.¹

On the 13rd of May, a report from the Select Committee on the petitions against the Supreme Court was read; and leave to bring in a bill for the better administration of justice in Bengal, for the relief of certain persons imprisoned at Calcutta under a judgment of the Court, and for indemnifying the Governor-General and Council for resisting its process. The subject was debated on the

¹ The Reports of the two Committees, described in the text, undoubtedly contain a vast mass of materials in a historical sense, as so far as they originated from the Government and Company all that is of consequence for the chronology of events during the periods to which they refer. Some of the documents treated and applied, but the whole compilation is of no ordinary value. Many important official documents, illustrative of the history of British India, have been published from time to time, since the close of those celebrated debates, and consistently with the spirit of the present day, official documents respecting India have to be multiplied. Their utility, however, is even largely impaired by the circumstance, and the habit of inserting them in unconnected to their being advantageously connected. A systematic and judicious selection is wanted, to render them sources only of information of public information.—H.

19th of June, Mr. Dunning being the most remarkable of the opponents of the bill. It was passed without delay: and it exempted from the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court the Governor-General and Council, all matters of revenue, and all Zemindars, and other native farmers and collectors of the revenue!

1998

Lord North resigned the office of Minister in the month of March, 1781, and was succeeded by the Marquis of Rockingham and party, the hostility of whom to the present managers in India was sufficiently known.

On the 26th of April, 1782, Mr. Dundas moved that the reports which he had presented as Chairman of the Secret Committee should be referred to a Committee of the whole House; and, in a speech of nearly three hours in length unfolded the causes and extent of the national calamities in the East. He expatiated on the misconduct of the India Presidency, and the Court of Directors; of the former, because they plunged the nation into wars for the sake of conquest, contemned and violated the engagements of treaties, and plundered and oppressed the people of India; of the latter, because they blamed misconduct only when it was unattended with profit, but exercised a very constant forbearance towards the grossest delinquency, as often as it was productive of a temporary gain. The speech was followed up by a number of propositions, which he moved in the shape of resolutions. Among the resolutions which these resolutions cast upon the proceedings of the Company's administration in India, they pronounced a condemnation, so strong upon the measures of the Presidency of Madras, that nothing less than criminal proceedings against the authors of them could accord with so relevant a declaration of their guilt. The resolutions

[illegible]

BOOK V. were solemnly voted; articles of charge against Sir
CHAP. IX. Thomas Rumbold and other Members of the Madras
— Council were adopted; and a bill of pains and penalties,
1782. for breaches of public trust, and high crimes and misdemeanors, committed by Sir Thomas Rumbold, was introduced by Mr. Dundas. The bill was read a first time. Before the second reading, Sir Thomas Rumbold was heard in his defence. The session drew to a close, before a great progress was made. In the beginning of 1783, the state of the ministry was unsettled. And, as if, when ministry is unsettled, parliament were inadequate to its functions, the bill was neglected till the middle of the session. After the middle of the session, the members soon began to be remiss in their attendance.¹ And on the 18th of December, immediately after the dismissal of Mr. Fox's coalition ministry, a motion was made and carried for a adjourning the further consideration of the bill till the 24th of June next, by which the prosecution was finally dropped. Sir Thomas consented to accept of impunity without acquittal, his judges refused to proceed in his trial, after they had solemnly affirmed the contrary of guilt: and a black stain was attached to the character of them both.

Beside his prosecution of Sir Thomas Rumbold, Mr. Dundas proceeded to urge the legislature to specific propositions against Mr. Hastings and Mr. Hurdly, the presiding members of the other Presidencies. Against Mr. Hastings, in particular, he preferred a grave accusation, grounded on the recent intelligence of the sum brought upon the Raja Chyeto Sing. On the 20th of May, 1782,

¹ On the 2nd of May, 1783, "The Lord Advocate complained of the very thin attendance that he had observed there, whenever the bill of pains and penalties against Sir Thomas Rumbold, &c. &c. was the subject of discussion. He wished to know whether it was seriously intended to pursue the business to the end or not? If it was the object of the House to drop it, he wished to be so much acquainted with that determination, and then he would not be so far from leaving it to the subject, but it was a necessity to go on with this business on the bill, where they could not be kept together a sufficient number of Members to quail a house. Mr. Fox declared, that, in doing this, it would be productive of the same fatal consequence; for it would prove to the world, that the most strenuous administration in India had not met with success in corruption. And, therefore, he recommended government to withdraw the bill, and deliver of the country, retired to the country, and spend the bill. If the bill should be lost for want of attendance, it would not cause the character of Sir T. Rumbold. On the other hand, it would not cause the character of the people of India, that it was in vain for them to expect redress of their grievances in England. Mr. W. Fox thought, that some mode might be devised to enforce attendance, as in the case of bills for election reformers." Parliamentary History, vol. 10th.

BOOK V,
CHAP. II.
—
1783.

be moved, and the House adopted, the following resolution:—"That Warren Hastings, Esq. Governor-General of Bengal, and William Hornby, Esq. President of the Council of Bombay, having in several instances acted in a manner repugnant to the honour and policy of this nation, and thereby brought great calamities on India, and enormous expenses on the East India Company, it is the duty of the Directors of the said Company to pursue all legal and effectual means for the removal of the said Governor-General and President from their respective offices, and to recall them to Great Britain." The Marquis of Rockingham was still minister; and his party appeared to have firmly determined upon the recall of Mr. Hastings. The vote of the House of Commons was therefore followed by a similar proceeding on the part of the Directors. But the death of the Marquis, which happened at this critical period, gave courage and strength to the friends of that Governor, and in a Court of Proprietors of East India Stock on the 21st of October, 1783, the order of recall which had been made by the Court of Directors was rescinded by a large majority.

On the 24th of April, 1783, the Chairman of the Select Committee presented a series of resolutions, which referred to little more than two points. Mr. Sullivan, who was Chairman of the East India Company, had announced a conference held between him and certain Members of the House of Commons; and the consequence had been, that the relief intended to certain persons confined in the common goal at Calcutta, had been considerably delayed. Mr. Sullivan had also postponed the transmission of the act of parliament for the remedy of the evils arising from the proceedings of the Supreme Court of Judicature. Mr. Sullivan had moreover, been a clerk at the India House, peculiarly qualified to give information, by an oath of secrecy, from communicating evidence to the Select Committee. A series of resolutions were, therefore, moved and carried for the censure of Mr. Sullivan. This is the first of the points to which the resolutions moved on the part of the Select Committee referred. On the second, viz. the conjunct transaction of Mr. Hastings and Sir Elijah Impey, in making the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court head of the Sudder Dewannee Adawlat, it was

BOOK V. resolved, that the dependence of the Chief Justice, created
CHAP. III. by holding suchments at the pleasure of the executive
 1783. government, was inconsistent with the faithful administration of justice. That the Governor-General and Chief Justice were highly culpable in that transaction : and that the appointment should be immediately vacated and annulled. To these resolutions were added other two : the first, "That the powers given to the Governor-General and Council by the East India Act of 1773, ought to be more distinctly ascertained." The second, "That it will be proper to reduce into one act the several acts of parliament made to regulate the East India Company, and farther to explain and amend the same, and also to make new regulations and provisions to the same end." The whole of these resolutions were carried ; and upon those which related to the dependence, in other words the corruption, of the Chief Justice, was founded a resolution, voted on the 3d of May, for an address to the King, that he would recall Sir Elijah Impey, to answer for his conduct in that transaction.

The vote of the Court of Proprietors, in opposition to the recall of Mr. Hastings, was severely reprobated by Mr. Dundas, at the beginning of the next session of parliament, when he moved, that all the proceedings in relation to it should be laid before the House ; and pronounced it an act both dangerous in principle, and insulting to the authority of parliament.

On the 3d of March, 1783, a petition from the United Company of Merchants trading to the East Indies was presented to the House of Commons, and referred to a Committee. It set forth, that having paid 300,000*l.* of the sum exacted of them for the benefit of the public, by the late act, they were unable to pay the 100,000*l.* which remained ; that the advances which had already been received by the public "were made under mistaken ideas of the petitioners' pecuniary abilities ;" that the sum necessary to carry on their affairs only to the 1st of March, 1784, would, upon the most moderate calculation, be 500,000*l.*, even if excused the payment of the sum of 100,000*l.*, due upon the late agreement ; and they prayed, that if reimbursement be not made to them, they be allowed to increase their head debt, without diminishing their dividend,

which would affect their credit; that they be not required to share anything with the public, till the increase that made of their bond debts be again wholly reduced; that the term of their exclusive privileges, a short term being injurious to their credit, should be enlarged; and that the petitioners be relieved from that share of the expenses attending the service of the King's troops and navy which according to the late act they were bound to afford. Two acts were passed for their relief; the first allowing more time for the payment of the taxes for which they were in arrears, and enabling them to borrow money on their bond, to the amount of 200,000*l.*; the second act (the relief granted by the first being found insufficient), accommodated them with a loan from the public to the amount of 300,000*l.*; both acts permitting them to continue a dividend of eight per cent.; though, after paying necessary expenses, their receipt fell short of that dividend by a sum of 200,813*l.*¹ They borrowed money, therefore, to be divided among themselves, to that amount; a singular way for a trader to keep out of debt.

Upon the death of the Marquis of Rockingham, the Earl of Shelburne, afterwards Marquis of Lansdowne, became minister, and continued in office from the 12th of July, 1782, till the 3th of April, 1783. At that time, the coalition of Lord North and Mr. Fox gave existence to the ministry which that circumstance has served to designate, and to characterize.

The former exertions of Mr. Dundas, in the investigation and adjustment of the nation's Indian affairs, were followed up by a bill, which he introduced to the House on the 14th of April, 1784. Its principal provisions were these: That the King should have the power of recall over the principal servants of the Company; that the Governor-General and Council of Bengal should have a controlling power over the other presidencies; and that the Governor-General should have a power of acting, on his own responsibility, in opposition to the opinion of his Council: that the Governors of the other presidencies should not have a power of originating any measure contrary to their Councils, but a power of suspending their

BOOK V.
CHAP. XX.
1783.

¹ See the acts of 33 Geo. III. cap. 28 and 49; and Carter's Parl. Hist. vol. 27.

BOOK V. action by a negative till the opinion of the Controlling
 CHAP. 15. Presidency should be known : that the displaced Zemindars should be replaced : that the Raja of Tanjore should be secured in all his present possessions. In his speech he repeated his former arguments for the recall of Mr. Hastings ; and then launched out into the numerous and extraordinary circumstances, which pointed out Lord Cornwallis as the fittest person in the world for the government of India. "Here there was no broken fortune to be mended! Here there was no advice to be gratified! Here was no beggary, numbers were kindred to be provided for! No crew of hungry followers, gaping to be gorged!"¹ Leave was given to bring in the bill. But Mr. Dundas, who was now in opposition, and of course received no encouragement from the ministry, did not persevere.

1783.

On the 11th of November, in the year 1783, a new parliament met. In the speech from the throne they were informed, that definitive treaties of peace had been signed, or proffered, ratified, with the courts of France and Spain, with the United States of America, and the States General of the United Provinces. They were also informed, that among the important objects, the urgency of which had required their presence after so short a recess, the affairs and government of India solicited the utmost exertions of their abilities, and that the first was now expected of those important inquiries, which had been so long and diligently pursued.

By the treaty of peace with France, Pondicherry, and Caricai, to both of which some territory was annexed, the whole of the possessions which France enjoyed in Bengal and Orissa at the commencement of the war, together with Malé, and the power of restoring their factory at Surat, were conceded to the French. In the treaty with the Dutch, Trincomalee was restored ; but Negapatam was retained.

The opponents of the ministry, in both houses of parliament, proclaimed aloud the necessity, occasioned by the state of affairs in India, for instant and effectual reform. They enumerated the abuses which appeared to prevail ; and they called upon, they stimulated, and importuned

¹ See the note at 29 Geo. III. cap. 26 and 28 : and Collet's *Proc. Hist.* vol. 720.

BOOK V.
CHAP. II.

1783.

the minister to bring forward a scheme of improvement, and without delay to gratify the impatient expectation of the people. In these vehement calls, the voice of Mr. William Pitt was distinguished for its loudness and importunity. At that time it called him to devise not only reform, but complete reform; reform, co-extensive with the evil possible to be removed, and the good capable of being attained. He challenged and summoned the minister to bring forward a plan, "not of temporary palliation or sinister expedients; but vigorous and effectual; suited to the magnitude, the importance, and the alarming exigency of the case." Mr. Fox afforded his adversaries but little time to complain of delay.

His plan was divided into two parts, and introduced in two separate bills; one having a reference to the governing power at home; the other to the administration in India.

I. For constituting an organ of government at home, the two existing Courts of Directors and Proprietors of the East India Company were to be abolished, as totally inadequate to the ends of their institution; and, in their room, seven Commissioners were to be named in the act, that is, chosen by the legislature. These commissioners, acting as trustees for the Company, were to be invested with full powers for ordering and administering the territories, revenues, and commerce of India; and to have the sole power of placing and displacing all persons in the service of the Company, whether in England or abroad.

The following were the most material of the subordinate regulations.

For managing the details of the commerce, but subject to the authority and commands of the Superior Board, nine assistant Directors were to be named by the legislature, being Proprietors, each of not less than 2,000*l.* of East India capital stock.

In the superior body, vacancies were to be supplied by the King; in the inferior, they were to be supplied by the Proprietors, voting by open poll. Resolutions in the superior body were to be performed by the King, upon the address of either house of Parliament; in the inferior, by the same authority, and also by concurrence

BOOK V. of any five of the Chief Directors, recording their
CHAP. II. REASONS.

1783.

For the more speedy and effectual repression of offences committed in India, the Directors were, within twenty-one days after the receipt of any accusation or charge, to enter upon the examination of it, and either punish the offender, or record their reasons for not punishing.

Before any person who had served in India, and against whom any charge appeared, should be allowed to return, the Directors were to make a particular inquiry into the circumstances of the charge, and to record their reasons for permitting the return.

Upon knowledge of any dispute subsisting between the heads of the different settlements, or between the heads and their councils, the Directors were to institute immediate inquiry, and come to a decision in three months, or to record their reasons why they did not.

If the constituted authorities at any of the settlements should require the direction or opinion of the Directors, they were to give it in three months, or to record their reasons for not giving it.

If any injury to any native prince should be complained of, or appear, the Directors were to inquire, and to make compensation wherever it was due.

For publicity, one expedient was thought to suffice,—that the Directors should, once in six months, lay before the Proprietors the state of the commerce: and before the commencement of each parliamentary session, should present to the ministers certain political and commercial statements, which the ministers should exhibit to parliament.

It was provided that no Director or Assistant Director, should, while in office, hold any place of profit under the Company, or any place during pleasure under the King: but neither was to be disqualified for retaining a seat in parliament. And the act was to continue in force during four years.

II. Under the second part of the plan, that which had for its object the reform of the immediate administration in India, no improvement whatsoever, in the order and distribution of the powers of government, was attempted, and hardly any thing higher was proposed, than to point out what were deemed the principal errors or delinquencies

into which the Indian government had strayed, and to forbid them in future.

Strict obedience was enjoined to the commands of the Directors, because Mr. Hastings, whenever a strong motive occurred, disobeyed them.

The councils were forbidden to delegate their powers; because, in two memorable instances, those of his journeys to the Upper Provinces, the Supreme Council had delegated theirs to Mr. Hastings.

The regular communication to the councils of all correspondence, was rendered imperative, upon the Governor-General and other Presidents; because Mr. Hastings, when he had certain objects to serve, had withheld parts of the correspondence.

Because the other servants of the Company had usually united with the governors, in those proceedings of theirs which were most highly condemned, the servants were to be rendered less dependent upon the governors, by lodging a greater share of the patronage in the hands of the commissioners.

No banyan, or native steward, of any of the principal servants, was to be allowed to rent the revenues; because the banyan of Mr. Hastings had rented them to a great amount. Such renting to the banyan was declared to be the same thing as renting to the master.

No presents were to be taken, even for the use of the Company; because Mr. Hastings had taken presents, and screened himself by giving them up, at last, to the Company.

The abolition was to be obtained of all monopolies; because the Company's servants in Bengal had been the cause of evil, by monopolising salt, beetel-ut, and tobacco.

Passing then from the imputed errors in Bengal to those at Madras, the bill proposed to enact:

That no protected or dependent prince should reside in the Company's territory, or rent their lands; because the Nabob of Arcot had disturbed the Presidency with intrigue, by residing at Madras, and had rented, as was alleged, corruptly, the Madras Jaghira.

That no civil or military servant of the Company should lend money to such prince, rent his lands, or

BOOK V.

CHAP. IX.

1783.

BOOK V. have with him any pecuniary transaction; because, the
 CHAP. IX. lending of money to the Nabob of Arcot, renting his
 ——— lands, and other money transactions between him and
 1783. the Company's servants, had given rise to many inconveniences.

As the inaccurate definition of the limits prescribed to the control of the Governor-General and Council over the other Presidencies, had been fertile in disputes, an attempt, but not very skilful, was made to remove that deficiency, by enacting that it should extend to all transactions which had a tendency to provoke other states to war.

The old prohibition of the extension of territory was enforced, by forbidding hostile entrance upon any foreign territory, except after intelligence of such hostile preparations, as were considered serious by a majority of the Council; forbidding alliance with any power for dividing between them any acquirable territory; and issue of troops to the native princes; excepting, in all these cases, by allowance of the Directors.

The project of declaring the Zemindars, and other managers of the land revenue, hereditary proprietors of the land, and the tax fixed and unvariable—originally started by Mr. Francis, and in part proposed for enactment in the late bill of Mr. Dundas—was adopted.

Instead of the regulation, introduced into the bill of Mr. Dundas, that the Governor-General should have a power of acting on his own responsibility, independently of the will of his Council, power was only to be given to him, and to the Presidents at the other settlements, of adjourning or postponing, for a limited time, the consideration of any question in their respective councils.

A mode was prescribed for adjusting the disputes of the Nabob of Arcot with his creditors, and with the Raja of Tanjore.

All offences against the act were rendered amenable to the courts of law in England and India. And all persons in the service of the Company, in India, or in that of any Indian prince, were declared unfit, during the time of that service, and some succeeding time, to hold the situation of a member of the lower house of parliament.

No proceeding of the English government, in matters

times, has excited a greater ferment in the nation, than these two bills of Mr. Fox. An alarm diffused itself, for which the ground was extremely fertile, and for which, notwithstanding the industry and the art with which the advantage was improved by the opposite party, it is difficult, considering the total apathy of the public on such more important occasions, entirely to account. The character of Mr. Fox, who was at that time extremely unpopular, and from the irregularity of his private habits, as well as the apparent sacrifice of all principle to his coalition with Lord North, was, by a great part of the nation, regarded as a prodigious gambler, both in public and in private life, contributed largely to the existence of the storm, and to the apprehensions of danger from the additional power which he appeared to be taking into his hands^a. In the House of Commons, indeed, the party of the minister eminently prevailed; and though every objection which the imagination of the orators could frame, was urged against the measure, with the utmost possible pertinacity, vehemence, and zeal, the bill passed by a majority of more than two to one.

In the meantime opportunity had been found for alarming the mind of the King. The action circulated was, that, by vesting the whole patronage of India in the hands of Mr. Fox, by vesting it in a board of commissioners, under his appointment, it would be impossible for the King ever to employ, as minister, any other man; and the power of Mr. Fox would be rendered absolute over both the King and the people. Instead of having recourse to the expedients which the law had placed in his hands, of dismissing his ministers, or even dissolving the parliament: a desperate course was adopted, which violated the forms of the constitution. Though it had often been declared that the constitution depended on the total exemption of the deliberations in parliament from the in-

^a To prevent misapprehension, it is necessary to specify the persons that I mean in the account, which I give in the text, of our secret: the names of a particular officer. In the private discourse of Mr. Fox, there was enough, surely, of the three speakers, to cast the reflection on the shade. And though, strictly speaking, it was no great advantage to borrow upon loan, either as a speculative or practical measure; yet, when I compare him with the other two, who had figured in public life in his country, I am still more where I think his superior, none, perhaps, his equal.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.

1718.

pulse of the royal will, the King employed Lord Topley to inform as many as he thought fit of the peers of parliament, that those who should vote for the Indian Bill, he would take for his enemies. On the day of the second reading of the bill, the minister was left in a minority of seventy-nine to eighty-seven.

The outcry which was raised against this measure holds a considerable rank among the remarkable incidents in the history of England. It was a declaration, a vehement declaration, on the part of the King, and of the greatest portion of all the leading orders in the state, as well as of the body of the people, that the Commons House of Parliament, as now constituted, is altogether inadequate to the ends which it is meant to fill. Unless that acknowledgment was fully made, the outcry was groundless and preposterous.

The essence of the change which Mr. Fox proposed to introduce consisted in this, and in nothing but this: that the Board of Directors should be chosen, not by the owners of Company's stock, but by the House of Commons.

Surely, if the House of Commons were a fit instrument of Government, a better choice might be expected from the House of Commons, than from the crowd of East India Proprietors. The foundation on which the justice of the clamour had to rest, if any justice it contained, was this: that the House of Commons would act under a fatal subservience to the profligate views of the minister. But to suppose that the House of Commons would do this in one instance only, not in others, the motive being the same: that they would make a sacrifice of their duty to their country, in one of the most ruinous to it of almost all instances, while in other instances they were sure to perform it well, would be to adopt the language of children, or of that unhappy part of our species whose reason is not fit to be their guide. If the House of Commons is so circumstanced, as to act under motives sufficient to ensure a corrupt compliance with ministerial views, then, undoubtedly, the House of Commons is a bad organ for the election of Indian rulers. If it is not under such motives to betray the interests of the country to the views of ministers, then it is undoubtedly the best instrument of choice which the

country can afford; nor is there anything which can render it, compared with any other electing body, which could be formed in the country, unfit for this function, which does not, by necessity, imply an equal influence for all its peculiar functions: if it is unworthy to be trusted with the election of East India Directors, it is still less worthy to be trusted with the purse strings of the nation: if there would be danger to the British people in the one case, the danger is far greater in the other.

A heart-felt conviction, that the House of Commons, as now constituted, is totally unworthy of trust, sanctioned in the strongest of all possible terms, by the King, by the principal part of the aristocracy, of the whole, it, short, of that part of the nation whose interests and ideas are in the strongest manner linked to monarchical and aristocratical privileges and distinctions, is of infinite importance; because it may be so employed as to make them ashamed of that opposition to reform, which, by so many selfish and mean considerations, they are so generally engaged to maintain.

There is but one allegation, which appears capable of being employed to elude the force of this deduction: that the House of Commons would not act under a profligate subservience to the views of a minister, if subject only to the influence which was then at the command of the minister; but would be sure to do so, if subject to all that influence which would be created by adding the patronage of India.

This allegation, then, rests upon the assumption, that the profligate subservience of the House of Commons depends wholly upon the degree, more or less, of the matter of influence to which it is exposed: if the quantity to which it is exposed is sufficiently small, it will have no profligate subservience; if the quantity to which it is exposed is sufficiently great, its profligate subservience will be unbounded. Admit this: and is anything necessary, besides, to prove the defective constitution of that assembly? In taking securities against men, in their individual capacity, do we rest satisfied, if only small temptations to misconduct exist? Does not experience prove, that even small temptations are sufficient, where there is nothing to oppose them?

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.
—
1793.

MODE V. In the allegation is implied, that the House of Commons
CHAP. IX.
1763.

would, as not yet feeling the influence of Indian patronage, have, in choosing men for the Board of Directors, at that first time, chosen the best men possible; but these men, being the best men possible, would have employed the Indian patronage placed in their hands, to corrupt the House of Commons into a profligate subservience to the views of the minister. For what cause?

The analysis of the plan might, it is evident, be carried to a great extent, but it is by no means necessary; and for the best of reasons; because the parties who joined in predicting the future profligacy of the House, universally gave it up. The House of Commons, they said, is now, is at this instant, that corrupt instrument, which the patronage of India applied to it in the way of influence would make it. The House of Commons, they maintained, was then at the beck of the minister; was, even then, in a state of complete subservience, even for the worst of all purposes, to the minister's views. Mr. Pitt said, "Was it not the principle, and declared avowed of this bill, that the whole system of Indian government should be placed in seven persons, and those under the immediate appointment of no other than the minister himself? He appealed to the sense and candour of the House, whether, in saying this, he was the least out of order? Could it be otherwise understood, or interpreted? That these seven men were not to be appointed solely by the minister?"¹ On another occasion, he said, that he objected to Mr. Fox's bill, "because it created a new and enormous influence, by vesting in certain members of the minister all the patronage of the East."² Mr. W. Grenville (afterwards Lord Grenville) said, "The bill was full of blanks, and these blanks were to be filled by that House: it was talking a parliamentary language to say, the minister was to fill the blanks: and that the seven commissioners were the seven nominees of the minister: seven commissioners chosen, by parliament ostensibly, but in reality by the servants of the Crown, were to invest in the various of their authority, the whole treasures of India: these, poured forth like an

¹ Debate on Mr. Fox's motion for leave to bring in his East India Bill: *Colbert's Parl. Hist.* vol. 1220.

² Debate on the state of the nation: *Colbert's Parl. Hist.* vol. 1221.

irresistible flood upon this country, would sweep away our liberties, and all that we could call our own."¹ But if parliament would choose these seven commissioners at the beck of the minister; what is there they would not do at the beck of the minister? The conclusion is direct, obvious, and irresistible. Upon the solemn averments of these statesmen, the question is for ever set at rest.

At the same time, it must be admitted, that the Lilla of Mr. Fox, and especially as the men were who united their voices to compose them, manifest a noble effort in legislation. They affixed a memorable lesson; because they demonstrate, that the authors of them, however celebrated for their skill in speaking, were not remarkable for the powers of thought. For the right exercise of the powers of government in India, not one new security was provided; and it would not be very easy to prove, that any strength was added to the old.

1. There was nothing in Mr. Fox's number Seven, more than in the Company's number Twenty-four, to ensure good government; and by this change of one electing assembly for another, the nation decided, and under the present constitution of the House of Commons decided well, that bad would only be increased into worse.

If such was the nature of the fundamental expedient, it would be assumed that the subsidiary ones would impart

1. *Blackburnianism*. Mr. Blackburn's address is 10000 Colburn's Pass, New York, 10000.

2. The historical basis given to the House of Commons is a caricatured picture of certain inequalities from its constitution as a parliament, inseparable from the constitution of all parliaments in medieval, and possibly in pre-medieval, times - *electio* - *electio* . Part of the historical basis of the House of Commons is the assembly composed of a number of persons of various degrees, knights, nobles, bishops, abbots, and monks, who were regarded as meeting any question which arose in the medieval state, and attending to their own business. Their will and voice was made various influences, the combination of which constitutes the general system of a parliamentary system - *parliament* . The composition of parts, for the House of Commons as constituted in the medieval history of parliament, has no absolute of course, but drops completely as a result of the state which may be more than a whole for the different parts of the system, and it may, therefore, even be an object of present government to be organized in a certain state, either in number or difference . It may be considered, however, that the House of Commons of the Middle Ages was a single assembly of men, who, whether the historical constitutional system of parliament was a single assembly, but a few notable in many of its elements of influence which may be of that particular period, but in all that respect, as applied to medieval constitution, and in the House of Commons, the House of Commons from its assembly of the House of Commons, perhaps . It is taking a very characteristic view of the members of parliament, and it is not any particular view of the House of Commons, but the view of it as constituted by the House of Commons, and as it is used in the constitution of parliament, and the history of man, etc.

BOOK V. a high degree of spirit to the whole. If not absolutely
 CHAP. II. negative, they were all feeble in the highest degree.
 ———— What useful power of publicity, for example, was involved
 1783. in transferring annually to the hands of the ministers a
 certain portion of Indian papers? A proper policy being
 established between the minister and his seven directors,
 they could present to parliament everything which favoured
 their own purposes, keep back everything which opposed
 them; and thence most effectually impose upon the nation.
 It seems, from many parts of the bill, to have been the
 opinion of its authors, that if they only gave their com-
 mands to the rulers of India to behave well, they would
 be sure to do so. As if there were no channel of corruption
 but one, it was held sufficient, if the directors, while in
 office, were prohibited from holding places of profit under
 themselves, and places of profit during pleasure under the
 King.

The seven directors, in the case of some of their most
 important decisions, were bound to record their reasons;
 a most admirable security where the public are to see
 those reasons. Where they are to be seen only by the
 parties themselves, and by those who have like sinister
 interests with themselves, as in this case by the minister,
 they are obviously no security at all.

Good conduct in any situation depends upon the motives
 to good conduct, which operate in that situation; and
 upon the chance for intelligence and probity in the indi-
 viduals by whom it is held. That, in regard to motives,
 as well as intelligence and probity, the public had less
 security for good conduct, in the case of the ministerial
 commissioners, than in the case of Directors chosen by
 the Company, will be fully made to appear, when we come
 to examine the nature of the ministerial board erected by
 Mr. Pitt; a board which, in all those particulars, is very
 nearly on a level with that of Mr. Fox.

II. With regard to that part of the scheme which was
 intended to improve the state of administration in India,
 no change in the order and distribution of the powers of
 government was attempted. The plan of the machinery,
 therefore, that is, the whole of its old tendency to evil,
 described by Mr. Fox as enormous, was to remain the
 same. All, it is evident, that, upon this foundation, could

be aimed at, was to palliate; and, in the choice of his palliatives, Mr. Fox was not very successful.

BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.

1781.

Merely to forbid evil, in a few of the shapes in which it had previously shown itself, was a slender provision for improvement, when the causes of evil retained the same as before; both because there were innumerable other shapes which it might assume, and because forbidding, when there is no chance, or little chance, of harm from disobedience, is futile, as a barrier against strong temptations.

To lessen the power of the Chief Ruler in selecting the immediate instruments of his government, was so far to ensure a weak and distracted administration. The sure effect of it was, to lessen the power of a virtuous ruler in obtaining assistance to good. And as the co-operation of the inferior servants, in the imputed plunder, embezzlement, and oppression, was secured, not by the power of the Governor-General to promote them, but by the common interest which they had in the profits of misrule; his not having the power to promote them was no security against a co-operation secured by other means.

In respect to functions, on which the efficiency of every enactment depends, Mr. Fox's bill provided two things: chance of removal, and prosecution at law, nothing else. In respect to chance of removal: as the effect of the bill was to render the minister absolute with regard to India, those delinquencies alone, which thwarted the views of the minister, created any danger; those which fell in with his views were secure of protection. From prosecution at law, under tribunals and laws such as the English, a man who wields, or has wielded the powers of government, has it is obvious from long experience, very little to fear.

It really is, therefore, hardly possible for anything in the shape of a law, for regulating the whole government of a great country, to be more nugatory than the bill of Mr. Fox.

On the great expedient for ensuring the rights of the native subjects, borrowed from Mr. Francis, the scheme of declaring the land unexchangeable, and the revenue hereditary, we have already made some and shall hereafter have occasion to make other remarks, to show that it is

BOOK V. founded upon false ideas, and productive of evil rather
 CHAP. II. than good.

1783.

The prohibition of monopolies and patents, and some other minor regulations, were beneficial, as far as they went.

If this project of a constitution for India proves not the existence of a vast portion of intellect among those by whom it was framed, the objections of those who had only to criticize, not to invent, appear to prove the existence of a still smaller portion among its opponents. Not one of their objections was drawn from the real want of merits in the plan; from its total inefficiency, as a means, to secure the ends, at which it pretended to aim. They were all drawn from collateral circumstances; and, what is more, almost all were unfounded.

The danger to the constitution, in giving the appointment of Directors to the House of Commons, was the subject of the principal cry. But it has been shown that this could have no injurious effect, unless the House of Commons were already perverted from its supposed ends, and the goodness of the constitution destroyed.

Much rhetoric was employed to enforce the obligation created by the "chartered rights of men." But it was justly observed, That the term, "chartered rights of men," was a phrase full of affectation and ambiguity; That there were two species of charters: one, where some of the general rights of mankind were declared or confirmed by the solemnity of a public deed; the other, where these general rights were limited for the benefit of particular persons: That charters of the last description were strictly and essentially trusts, and ought to expire whenever they substantially vary from the good of the community, for the benefit of which they are supposed to exist.

The loss of the India bill, in the House of Lords, was the signal for the dissolution of the ministry. At the head of the new arrangement was placed Mr. Pitt. On the 14th of January, 1784, he moved for leave to bring in a bill on the affairs of India. A majority of the House of Commons still supported his opponent, and his bill was rejected. Mr. Fox gave notice to the House of his inten-

tion to being in a second bill. On the 10th of March, however, parliament was dissolved; and in the new House of Commons the minister obtained a decided majority. The re-introduction of his India bill could now wait his convenience.

The new ministry had been aided in the triumph obtained over their opponents, by all the powers of the East India House, who had petitioned against the bills of Mr. Fox, had employed every art to excite the public disapprobation, and had exerted themselves at the general election to swell the ministerial majority. The minister owed a grateful return. The Company's sale of tea was a principal source of their income. It had of late been greatly reduced by the powers of smuggling. As high price afforded the encouragement of smuggling, a sufficient reduction would destroy it. Any part of the monopoly profit would not have been a pleasant sacrifice to the Company. The public duties, they thought, were the proper source of reduction: and it pleased the minister to agree with them. On the 21st of June, he moved a series of resolutions, as the foundation for an act, which soon after passed, and is known by the name of the Commutation Act. The duties on tea, about 30 per cent., were reduced to 12½ per cent. It was estimated that a diminution would thence arise of 600,000*l.* in the public revenue. Under the style and title of a commutation, an additional window-tax, calculated at an equal product, was imposed.

To relieve their pecuniary distress, the Company, as we have seen, had applied to parliament for leave to borrow 500,000*l.*, and for a further aid, afterwards of 300,000*l.* to Exchequer bills. They had also prayed for a remission of the duties which they owed to the public, to the amount of nearly a million. They were bound not to accept, without consent of the Lords of the Treasury, bills drawn on them from India, beyond the annual amount of 300,000*l.* Bills, however, had arrived from Bengal, to the amount of nearly one million and a half beyond that amount. For these enormous sums provision had been made before the dissolution of the preceding parliament. The minister now introduced a bill, to afford a further relief in regard to the payment of duties, and to enable them to accept

BOOK V. *Bills beyond the limits which former acts of the legislature had prescribed.*

1784.

In other pecuniary adventures, the receipts upon the capital embarked are in proportion to the gains. If profit has been made, profit is divided. If no profit, no division. Instead of profit, the East India Company had incurred expense, to the amount of an enormous debt. It was proposed that they should still have a dividend, though they were to borrow the money which they were to divide, or to obtain it, extracted, in the name of taxes, out of the pockets of their countrymen. A bill was passed which authorized a dividend of eight per cent. In defence of the measure, it was urged, that unless the dividend was upheld, price of India stock would fall. But why should the price of India stock, more than the price of anything else, be upheld, by taxing the people? It was also urged, that not the fault of the Company, but the pressure arising from the warlike state of the nation, produced their pecuniary distress. If that was a reason, why was not a similar relief awarded to every man that suffered from that cause? The arguments are without foundation; but from that time to this they have supported an annual taxation of the English people, for the convenience of the parties on whom the government of India depends.

At last, Mr. Pitt's bill, for the better government of the affairs of the East India Company, was again introduced; and being now supported by a competent majority, was passed into an act, on the 13th of August, 1784. With some modification, it was the same with the bill which the former House of Commons had rejected.

The Courts of Directors and Proprietors remained, in form, the same as before. The grand innovation consisted, in the creation of what was called a Board of Control. This, together with, 1. The creation of a Secret Committee of Directors; 2. A great diminution in the powers of the Court of Proprietors; 3. A provision for a disclosure of the amount of the fortunes brought home by individuals who had been placed in offices of trust in India; 4. The institution of a new tribunal for the trial and punishment of the offences liable to be committed in India; constituted the distinctive features of this legi-

lative exertion; and are the chief particulars, the nature of
 which it is incumbent upon the historian to disclose. The
 other provisions were either of subordinate efficacy, or
 corresponded with provisions in the bills of other re-
 formers, which have already been reviewed.

BOOK V.
 CHAP. IX.
 1791.

I. The Board of Control was composed of six Members of the Privy Council, chosen by the King, of whom the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and one of the principal secretaries of state were to be two; in the absence of whom, the senior of the remaining four was to preside. In point of fact, the whole business has revolved with that senior; the other commissioners being seldom called to deliberate, or even for form's sake to assemble. The senior is known by the name of the President of the Board of Control, and is essentially a new Secretary of State; a secretary for the Indian department. Of this pretended Board and real Secretary, the sphere of action extended to the whole of the civil and military government, exercised by the Company; but not to their commercial transactions. Its duties, very ill defined, or rather not defined at all, were administered, in the following vague and uncertain terms: "From time to time, to check, superintend and control, all acts, operations, and concerns, which in any way relate to the civil or military government, or revenue, of the territories and possessions of the said United Company in the East Indies." All correspondence, relative to the government, was to be communicated to the Board; including all letters from India, as soon as received, and all letters, orders, or instructions intended for India, before they were sent. The Board was also to be furnished with copies of all proceedings of the Courts of Directors and Proprietors; and to have access to the Company's papers and records. By one clause, it was rendered imperative on the Court of Directors to yield obedience to every command of the Board, and to send out all orders and instructions to India, altered and amended at the pleasure of the Board. On the second introduction of the bill, when a bare majority made the minister bold, a power was added by which, in cases of secrecy, and cases of urgency; cases of which the Board itself was to be the judge; the Board of Control might frame and transmit orders to India without the inspection of the Directors.

BOOK V. It was only in the case of a doubt whether the orders of
CHAP. IX. the Board of Control related or did not relate to things
 1784. within the sphere of the civil and military government, that
 the Directors were allowed an appeal. Such a doubt they
 were to refer to the King in Council. An appeal from the
 King's Council, to the King in Council, was an appeal from
 men to themselves.

Of two bodies, when one has the right of unlimited
 command, and the other is constrained to unlimited obedi-
 ence, the latter has no power whatsoever, but just as
 much, or as little, as the former is pleased to allow. This
 is the relative position of the Board of Control, and the
 East India Company. The powers of the Board of Control
 convert the Company's Courts into Agents of its will.
 The real, the sole governing power of India is the Board
 of Control, and it only makes use of the Court of Directors
 as an instrument, or as a subordinate office, for the man-
 agement of details, and the preparation of business for
 the cognisance of the superior power.

The real nature of the machine cannot be disputed,
 though hitherto its movements have been generally
 smooth, and the power is considerable which appears to
 remain in the hands of the Directors. The reasons are
 clear. Whatever there is not a strong motive to interfere
 with business of detail, there is always a strong motive
 to let it alone. There never yet has been any great
 motive to the Board of control to interfere; and of con-
 sequence it has given itself little trouble about the
 business of detail, which has proceeded with little harm,
 and as little benefit, from the existence of that Board.
 So long as the Court of Directors remains perfectly sub-
 servient, the superior has nothing further to desire. Of
 the power which the Directors retain, much is inseparable
 from the management of detail.

The grand question relates to the effects upon the
 government of India, arising from an authority like the
 Board of Control, acting through such a subordinate and
 ministerial instrument as the Court of Directors.

It is evident, that, so far as the Directors are left to
 themselves, and the Board of Control abstain from the
 trouble of Management, the government of India is left
 to the imperfections, whatever they were, of the previous

condemned system, as if no Board of Control were in existence. In that part of the business, in which the Board takes a real share, it is still to be inquired, what chance exists, that better conduct will proceed from the Board of Control, than would have proceeded from the Court of Directors?

BOOK V.
CHAP. II.
—
1794.

Good conduct in public men arises from three causes; from knowledge or talent: from the pressure of motives to do good; and the absence of motives to do evil.

I. Few men will contend that the lord, or other person, whose power, or powerful lantern, may recommend him for President of the Board of Control, is more likely to possess knowledge or talent, than the Court of Directors. That which the practical state of the British constitution renders the prevailing principle in directing the choice of men for offices whose most either of power or money is to be enjoyed, affords a much greater chance for ignorance than knowledge. Of all the men who receive education, the men who have the most of parliamentary interest are the least likely to have any unusual portion of talent; and as for appropriate knowledge, or an acquaintance in particular with Indian affairs, it cannot be expected that the Board of Control should, except by a temporary and rare contingency, be fit to be compared with the Court of Directors; besides, it would have been easy, by laying open the direction to men of all descriptions, and by other simple expedients, to increase exceedingly the chance for talent in the Court of Directors.

II. If the Board of Control, than is more likely than the Court of Directors to govern India well, the advantage must arise from its situation in regard to motives: motives of two sorts; motives to application; and motives to probity. Both the Board of Control, and the Court of Directors, are destitute of these motives to a high degree; and it is a matter of some nicety to make it appear on which side the deficiency is most extraordinary.

Motives to application, on the part of the Board of Control, can be discussed now. And application, accord-

BOOK V. ingly, such as deserves the name, a careful pursuit of
CHAP. IX. knowledge, with incessant meditation of the ends and the
 means, the Board has not even thought of bestowing. If
 1784, Mr. Dundas be quoted as an objection, it is only necessary
 to explain the circumstances of the case. The mind of
 Mr. Dundas was active and meddling, and he was careful
 to exhibit the appearance of a great share in the govern-
 ment of India; but what was he, as President of the Board
 of Control, that he ever did? He presented, as any body
 might have presented, the Company's annual budget, and
 he expressed an extraordinary share of their patronage.
 But I know not any advice which he ever gave, for the
 government of India, that was not either very obvious, or
 wrong.

The Institution of the Board of Control, as it gave
 no motive to application in the members of that
 Board, so it lessened prodigiously the motives to ap-
 plication in the Court of Directors. Before the exis-
 tence of the Board of Control, the undivided reputation
 of good measures, the undivided ignominy of bad, re-
 sounded to the Court of Directors. The great sanction
 of public opinion acted upon them with undivided energy.
 Men are most highly stimulated to undergo the pains
 of labour, when they are most sure of reaping the fruits
 of labour; most surely discouraged from labour, when
 they are least sure of reaping its advantages; but, in
 taking pains to understand the grounds of action, and
 laboriously to frame measures adapted to them, the
 Court of Directors, before their subjugation to the
 Board of Control, were sure of reaping the fruits of
 their labours in the execution of their schemes. What
 motive, on the other hand, to the laborious considera-
 tion of measures of government, remained, when all
 the fruits of knowledge and of wisdom might be rejected
 by the mere caprice of the President of the Board of
 Control?

Such is the sort of improvement, a retrograde improve-
 ment, in respect to knowledge or talent, and in respect to
 application, which the expedient of a Board of Control
 introduced into the government of India.

It only remains that we examine it in relation to pro-

bility; and inquire, whether the men who compose it are subject to the action of stronger, or weaker motives, to the exercise of official probity, than the Court of Directors.

BOOK V.

CHAP. IX.

1789.

There are two sorts of motives, on which, in regard to probity, the conduct of every man depends: by the one he is attracted to virtue; by the other repelled from it.

In regard to attracting motives, very little is provided to operate either upon the Board of Control, or the Court of Directors. The sanction of public opinion, the credit of good, and the disrepute of bad conduct, is one source: and it does not appear that there is any other. In the first place, it ought to be remembered, as a law of human nature, that the influence of this sanction is weakened, or more truly annihilated, in any important person, by division. Whatever might have been its force, upon either the Board of Control, or the Court of Directors, acting alone, it is infinitely diminished when they act both together; and, by sharing, go far to destroy responsibility.

For the salutary influence of public opinion, both the Board of Control, and the Court of Directors, are unfavourably situated; but it will probably, without much dispute, be allowed, that the Court of Directors is the least unfavourably situated. So long as they acted by themselves, the Court of Directors were exposed, without shelter, to the public eye. The President of the Board of Control is the mere creature of the minister, acting by his will, confounded with the other instruments of his administration, sheltered by his power, and but little regarded as the proper object either of independent praise, or of independent blame.

With regard to motives repelling from probity, in other words, the temptations of improbity, to which the Board of Control and the Court of Directors are respectively exposed, the following propositions are susceptible of proof:—That almost all the motives of the delinquent sort, to which the Court of Directors stand exposed, are either the same, or correspond, with those to which the Board of Control is exposed. That those to which the

BOOK V.

CHAP. II.

1784.

Court of Directors are exposed, and the Board of Control is not exposed, are of inconsiderable strength : that those to which the Board of Control is exposed, and the Court of Directors are not exposed, are of great and uncommon strength : and that by the conjoint action of the two bodies, the deleterious motives of the one do not destroy those of the other, but combine with them, and increase the power of the whole.

It is to be observed, that neither the Board of Control, nor the Court of Directors have any direct interest in the misgovernment of India. Their ambition is not gratified by the unnecessary wars, nor their pockets filled by the oppressions and prodigalities of the Indian rulers. In as far as the Directors are proprietors of Indian stock, and in as far as good government has a tendency to increase the surplus produce of India, and hence the dividend upon stock, the Court of Directors have an interest in the good government of India. The Board of Control, as such, has necessarily no such interest; in this respect; therefore, it is inferior to the Court of Directors.

If exempt from motives of the direct kind, to them in government of India, it remains to inquire what are the motives of the indirect kind, to the action of which the Board of Control, and the Court of Directors, are severally and respectively exposed.

In the first place, we recognise the love of ease; an insatiable force, and for that reason of the most potent agency in human affairs. Being the cases in which the result depends not upon the general qualities of the species, but the accidental ones of the individual, this is a motive which it is not easy to find other motives sufficient to oppose; which, in general, therefore, prevails and over-rides. This is a motive, to the counteraction of which, there is scarcely anything provided, in the case either of the Board of Control, or of the Court of Directors. To a great extent, therefore, it is sure to govern them. Provided things go on in the beaten track, without any unusual stoppage or disturbance, things will very much be left to themselves.

Little, however, as is the application to business, which

can rationally be expected from the Court of Directors, still less can be looked for on the part of the Board of Control, where either hereditary idleness and inefficiency will prevail; or the mind of the President will be engrossed by those pursuits and struggles on which the power of the Ministry, or the consequences of the individual, more immediately depends. The consequence is certain; whenever attention to the pain and constraint of labour governs the superintendent, the interest of the subordinates, in every branch, is naturally pursued at the expense of the service, or of the ends which it is the intention of the service to fulfil.

Beside the love of ease, which everywhere is one of the chief causes of misgovernment, the motives to the abuse of patronage, and to a connivance at delinquency in India, seem almost the only deleterious motives, to the operation of which either the Board of Control, or the Court of Directors, are exposed.

In regard to patronage, the conduct of the Court of Directors will be found to exhibit a degree of excellence which other governments have rarely attained. In sending out the youths who are destined for the different departments of the service, the Directors have been guided, no doubt, by motives of affection and convenience; but all youths go on to the lowest stations in their respective departments, and can ascend only by degrees. The rule of promotion by seniority has sometimes been too rigidly observed; soldiers, comparatively, victoried by favouritism. The Directors, who send out their relatives and connexions, have very often retired from the direction, before the youths whom they have patronized are of sufficient age or standing in the service, to occupy the stations in which the power of producing the greater evil is enjoyed.

But, as the constitution of the Court of Directors has prevented any considerable abuse of patronage; so the situation of the British minister, depending as he does upon parliamentary interest, creates, it may, without much fear of contradiction, be affirmed, a stronger motive to the abuse of patronage, than, under any other form of government, was ever found to exist. In this respect, good government is far less exposed to violation from an insti-

BOOK V. tution such as that of the Court of Directors, than an
CHAP. III. institution such as that of the Board of Control.¹

1784.

To connivance at delinquency in India, the Directors may be supposed to be led by three sorts of motives:

1. Inasmuch as they may have been delinquents themselves.

2. Inasmuch as they may send out sons and other relatives, who may profit by delinquency.

3. Inasmuch as delinquents may be proprietors of India stock, and hence exert an influence on the minds of Directors.

1. The motive to connive at any delinquency, in which a man is to have no profit, because he himself has formerly been delinquent in a similar way, must be regarded as a feeble, if any motive at all. Experience proves it. Clive was not less violent against the undue emoluments of the Company's servants, because he had drawn them so copiously himself. If the Court of Directors be inferior in this respect to the Board of Control, it must be allowed to be so inferiority easily compensated by other advantages. Besides, if a man must be supposed to sympathize with delinquency, because he has been a delinquent himself, the disposition is pretty nearly the same which leads to delinquency in India and in England; and hence a danger fully as great, of finding this kind of sympathy at the Board of Control, as in the Court of Directors.

2. The Directors may send out sons and nephews. So may the Secretary of State for the India department, the President of the Board of Control.

3. East India delinquents may operate on the minds of Directors through influence in the Court of Proprietors. East India delinquents may also operate on the minds of ministers through parliamentary influence. And the latter operation, it is believed, will certainly appear to be, out

¹ "With respect to the degree of patriotism," said Mr. Wanklyn, in his dissenting speech, (May 18th, 1835) on Mr. Curzon's Motion B.C., "one of them by which the interests of emigrants will in reality most suffer, I perfectly agree, that it is a burning one, of which the government, properly so called, took little or no notice in the highest offices, as was likely to be guilty and from their opportunities more likely to be guilty than any others. Nothing and indeed the provisions, the witnesses, the unsuitable remedy, the prodigious disregard of all claims from merit or services, that we often see in persons of high official stations." *Parliamentary Debates*, May 18th, for publication in which the speech was written and prepared by the author.

of all comparison, the stronger, and more dangerous operation of the two.

In point of fact, the influence exerted upon the Directors through the Court of Proprietors has never been great. The Court of Directors have habitually governed the Court of Proprietors; not the Court of Proprietors the Court of Directors. The Company's servants returned from India have not been remarkable for holding many votes in the General Court.

BOOK V.

CHAP. II.

1794.

The powerful operation of ministerial support extends to every man in India, whose friends have a parliamentary interest in England. The men who have the greatest power of doing mischief in India, are the men in the highest stations of the government. These are sure to be generally appointed from views of ministerial interest. And the whole force of the motives, whatever they are, which operate to their appointment, must operate likewise to confluence at their faults.

In every one of the circumstances, therefore, upon which good government depends, the Board of Control, when assumed, is found to be still more defective, as an instrument of government, than the Court of Directors, the incompetency of which to the right government of India, had been so loudly and so universally proclaimed.

What will be said in its favour to this? That the Board of Control and the Court of Directors check each other. To this end we must of necessity suppose, that where the Court of Directors may have an interest in misgovernment, the Board of Control will have no such interest, and in that case will not allow the Court of Directors to pursue their interest; that, in like manner, where the Board of Control may have an interest in misgovernment, the Court of Directors will have no such interest, and in that case will not allow the Board of Control to pursue their interest.

According to this supposed mode of operation, the interests of all the governing parties are defeated. The theory unhappily suggests that there is another mode of operation; in which their interests may be secured. That is the mode, accordingly, which stands the best chance of being preferred. It is a very obvious mode; the one party having leave to provide for itself, on condition that

BOOK V. It extend to the other a similar indulgence. The motives
 CHAP. XX. to misgovernment, under this plan, are increased by aggregation, not diminished by counteraction. Such are the greater part of the pretended checks upon misgovernment, which have ever been established in the world; and to this general law the Board of Control and Court of Directors do not, certainly, form an exception.

1784,

There is still another circumstance; and one to which the greatest importance will doubtless be attached. So long as the government of India was independent of the minister, he had no interest in hiding its defects; he might often acquire popularity by disclosing them. The government of India, in these circumstances, was subject to a pretty vigilant inspection from Parliament. Inquiries of the most searching description had twice been instituted, and carried into its inmost recesses. The persons charged with the duties of government in India, acted under a full view of the attention with which they were watched, and of the exposure to which their conduct was liable. A beneficial jealousy was preserved alive, both in parliament, and in the nation. At that time both erred, perhaps, by too much, rather than too little, of a disposition to presume among their countrymen in India the existence of guilt: a disposition far more salutary, notwithstanding, than a blind confidence, which, by pursuing that every thing is right, operates powerfully to make every thing wrong. A great revolution ensued, when the government of India was made dependent upon the minister, and became in fact an incorporated part of his administration. Then it was the interest of the minister to prevent inspection; to hush suspicion asleep; to ward off inquiry; to inspire a blind confidence; to praise incessantly the management of affairs in India; and, by the irresistible force of his influence, make other men praise it. The effects are instructive. From the time of the acquisition of the territorial revenues of Bengal, parliament and the nation had resounded with complaints of the Indian administration. The loudness of these complaints had continually increased, till it became the interest of the minister to praise. From that very moment complaint was extinguished; and the voice of praise was raised in its stead. From that time to this, no efficient

BOOK V. Board of Control, and the Court of Directors, they could annihilate all direct power of the Court of Proprietors. By these several regulations, for more and more lessening the number of persons in whom any efficient part of the power of the East India Company remained, the facility of using it as a tool of the minister, was more and more increased.

CHAP. IX.
1784.

IV. The next important provision in the bill of Mr. Pitt, was that by which it was rendered obligatory upon the servants of the Company, to give an inventory of the property which they brought from India. If the undue pursuit of wealth was there the grand cause of delinquency, this undoubtedly was a regulation of no ordinary value. When the amount of a man's acquisitions in India was known, comparison would take place between his acquisitions and his lawful means of acquiring; and the great sanction of popular opinion would operate upon him with real effect. The difficulty of convicting the delinquent would thus be exceedingly diminished; and this prospect of punishment would contribute powerfully to save him from crime.

To the credit of the authors of the bill be it spoken, means of far greater than the usual efficacy were employed to force out the real state of the facts, and to defeat the efforts of concealment or deception. The parties were rendered subject to personal examination upon oath; and, for false statement, to the forfeiture of all their goods, to imprisonment, and incapacitation. Information leading to the detection of falsehood was called for by the greatest rewards.¹

So important an instrument of good government as this, ought not, necessarily, to be confined to India. Wherever the pursuit of wealth is liable to operate to the pre-
 judice

¹ These clauses were repealed, only two years afterwards, by the amended Bill, by Act 26, Geo. III. cap. 126, and, notwithstanding the commendable motives upon which it was introduced, it was justly; for Mr. Pitt himself, although he exposed some of the anomalies, instead of the original law, which would not every individual who had been in India accountable for his fortune, it was inconsistent with the national character, a violation of natural rights, and, according to the legislature, was dangerous to the country; it afforded every advantage which villainy could derive, and exposed humanity alone to ridicule and contempt. The order treated the following persons, for the establishment of a Special Tribunal for 1-day Delinquents, with equal severity. All that had been said in its introduction, "and short of its remedy, it had no authority, example, or precedent, except perhaps the House-Chamber of immediate memory." *Parliamentary History*, vol. p. 1806.—W.

tion, in any degree, of bad government, there undoubtedly BOOK V.
CHAP. IX.
1791.
 it ought to exist.

V. A new tribunal was constituted, "for the prosecuting and bringing to speedy and condign punishment British subjects guilty of extortion, and other misdemeanors, while holding offices in the service of the King or Company in India." The Judiciary was composed of one judge from each of the common law courts in Westminster Hall, chosen by his Court; four peers, and six members of the House of Commons, chosen, after an open method, by their respective houses of parliament.

Of the procedure, according to which justice was, in this channel, to be administered, the only part which it is here material to notice, is that which regards its powerful instrument, Evidence.

For more effectually opening the sources of evidence, it was ordained, that witnesses should be compelled, by punishment as for a misdemeanor, to attend, and, by fine or imprisonment, at the discretion of the Court, to give evidence. The Commissioners or judges might send for papers, process, and records, and consent be given for all provocation.

The punishment of offences committed in India, by trial in England, conducted under the rules of evidence uncharitably established in the English courts, was impracticable, and the attempt absurd. This important truth seems, in part at least, to have been now very clearly perceived by the legislature; and an attempt was made, very feeble indeed, and far from commensurate with the evil, to remedy a defect of the law; a disgusting defect, which occurred, or little less than occurred, in nearly to one of the highest orders of crimes.

"Whereas the provisions made by former laws" (such are the words of the statute,) "for the hearing and determining in England offences committed in India, have been found inefficient, by reason of the difficulty of proving in this kingdom matters done there," it was enacted, that witnesses should be examined in India, by the competent judges; that their testimony should be taken down in writing, and that, when transmitted to England, it should be received as competent evidence by the tribunal now to be established. It was further enacted, "in order"

BOOK V. (says the statute) "to promote the ends of justice, in
 CHAP. XL. ascertaining facts committed at so great a distance from
 1794. this country, by such evidence as the nature of the case
 will render practicable," that all writings which might
 have passed between the Company and their servants in
 India, might, as far as they related to the facts in ques-
 tion, be read, and their evidence, as far as to the Court
 might appear to weigh upon the question, should be re-
 ceived. And also, upon the prayer of either of the parties,
 power was given of obtaining the examination, upon
 interrogatories, before a commissioner duly appointed, of
 absent witnesses, the depositions of whom, in this manner
 procured, should be admitted as evidence.

Of this important provision in the East India Bill of
 Mr. Pitt, the nature will appear, if we consider, first the
 necessity for it, and next its adaptation to the ends which
 it had in view.

1. The necessity for it implies, that there was no tri-
 bunal, as yet existing in this kingdom, which was adequate
 for the purpose of punishing and repressing crimes com-
 mitted in India; because, if there was any such tribunal, as
 often, for a purpose which might have been answered with-
 out it, ought to have been called into existence. By enacting,
 therefore, a law for the creation of this new tribunal, the
 legislature of the country, with all the solemnity and
 weight of legislation, declared, that, for the punishment
 of crimes of the description here in question, the other
 tribunals of the kingdom, the courts of law, the courts
 of equity, and even the high court, as it is called, of par-
 liament, are unfit. In what respect, unfit? Not merely
 for their absurd exclusion of such evidence as it was or-
 dained that the new tribunal should receive. Because,
 had this been the only objection, it might have been
 easily removed, by simply prescribing what sort of evi-
 dence they ought to receive. They were, therefore,
 according to the declaration of the legislature, unfit on
 other grounds, and these as fundamental, that no super-
 ficial change could remove the unfitness.

This declaration is of very great extent. For if the
 tribunals, previously existing, were all, even with such
 rules for the admission of evidence, as the legislature might
 have compelled them to observe, unfit to try and to punish

the crimes of high functionaries in India, they were equally unfit to try and to punish the crimes of high functionaries in England. The crimes of high functionaries are not one sort of thing in England, another sort of thing in India. They are the same sort of thing in both countries. And the only difference is, that the means of proof are to be brought in one case from a greater distance.

That the courts of law and equity are not tribunals by which the crimes of high functionaries can be repressed, was already the doctrine of the constitution; since it appointed the method of impeachment before the high court of parliament. The present declaration of the legislature here, then, particularly, only upon the method of impeachment. That the declaration was just, as regard to the method of impeachment, if any doubt till then could possibly have remained, was made appear, according to the confession of all parties, even in parliament, a few years afterwards, by the trial of Mr. Hastings.

We may then proceed upon it as a fact, fully established by experience, and solemnly recognised by the legislature, that, as far as law is concerned, there is impunity, almost or altogether perfect, to the crimes of high functionaries in England.

2. If we consider the adaptation of this tribunal of Mr. Pitt to the ends which it had in view, we shall first perceive that it was so constituted as to be an instrument in the hands of the minister, and sure to do whatever could be done with any tolerable degree of safety, to secure his objects, whatever they might be.

It consisted of two parts; three judges sent from the three courts of common law; and ten members from the houses of parliament. The subservience of the judges of the common-law courts to the minister, or to the master of the minister, is the doctrine of one of the most remarkable parts of the British constitution; the trial by jury. If it were not for the wrong bias to which the judges of England are liable, and all biases are trifling compared with the bias towards the Court, the institution of a jury would not only be useless, but hurtful. And if this be the doctrine of the constitution, there is scarcely none of its doctrines, which an experience more full and

BOOK V. complete, an experience more newly surveying, can be
CHAP. 18. adduced to confirm.

1784.

Such is the state of the case, in as far as regards that part of the proposed tribunal, consisting of the ordinary judges. With regard to that part which consisted of members chosen by the two houses of parliament, the case is cleared by the doctrine of the authors of the bill themselves. Mr Pitt and his friends maintained, and nobody affected to deny, that the members to be chosen by parliament for Mr Fox's Directors, would be "nominees" of the minister. There was nothing which could give the minister a power of nomination in that, which he would not possess in the present case. The second class of the members of the tribunal would, therefore, be "nominees" of the minister.¹

The subservience of the whole would for that reason be complete. So far only as it was the interest of the minister that justice should be well administered, so far only would there be the intention to administer it well. How far, even when it had the intention, it would have the other qualities requisite for the detection and punishment of the official offences of official men, would demand a long inquiry sufficiently to unfold. I must leave it to the reader's investigation. Enough has probably been said to give a correct, if not a complete, conception of this new expedient for the better government of India.

Such were the five principal provisions in the celebrated India bill of Mr Pitt. Of other particulars, not many require to be mentioned; and for such as do, a few words will suffice.

¹ For some curious information on this subject, see a debate which took place in the House of Commons, on the 16th of February, 1784, on the proposition that, in a substantial list of members to be selected for on the very first choice for this new tribunal, was headed, to members, by the directors, at the door of the House, Colburn's Parl. Hist. vol. xvi. 1784-1800. After some opposition, viz. on the 15th of March, 1784, Mr Burke said, "that the new institution was entirely the workman of men that would be corrupted, because it had one of the greatest objections belonging to it that could belong to any court. The members of it were nominated by the minister, and it was known soon after the commencement of every session who they were." Colburn's Parl. Hist. vol. xvi. Mr Pitt said, "While I shall live, I will, against generally to believe, that, in every act of the House, the influence of the minister was prevailing, he should attempt to enter into the question, nor did he think such an institution decent or respectful to parliament." This, if not an allusion, was not far from it. The only other circumstance with which he attempted to embarrass the assertion was this, that each parliament gave in a list. That; but what list? The minister's list, or another

As the increase of the patronage and influence of the minister was the foundation of the furious outcry, which had been raised against the plan of Mr. Fox, there was a great affection of avoiding all increase of ministerial patronage, by the bill of Mr. Pitt. In particular, no salaries were annexed to the offices of President, or Members of the Board of Control; and it was stated, that these offices might always be filled, without increase of expense to the nation, or of influence to the Crown, by functionaries who enjoyed other places of profit. We shall afterwards see, that this was a mask; which it was not long thought necessary that the project should wear.

The patronage of India was left to the Directors, subject to the following restraints: that the nomination of the Commander-in-Chief, who should always be second in Council, should belong exclusively to the King; that the Governor-General, Presidents, and Members of all the Councils, should be chosen, subject to the approbation of the King; and that the King should have the power of recalling them.

When it is said that the patronage of the Company was left with the Directors, it can only, by any body, be meant, that it was *ostensibly* left. For it never can for one moment be doubted that whatsoever patronage is in the hands of the subordinate and obeying body, in reality belongs to the superordinate and commanding. To ministerial purposes in general the patronage of the East India House is the patronage of the minister: in all the departments subordinate to the minister a large portion of the patronage necessarily follows the superintendence of the details. And it is probable that, in the East India House, a less proportion of the patronage remains, not placed immediately at the command of the minister, than in the most immediate departments of his administration, those, for example, of the Admiralty, and the Commander-in-Chief.*

* Mr. Burke said, "The new bill (Mr. Perce's) vested in the crown an immense patronage; to say that had been revealed by the old bill (Mr. Fox's). It put the whole East India company into the hands of the crown: and the influence arising from the patronage would be the more dangerous, as there was none to have the distribution of the whole, in reality, though perhaps not in name, would be removable at the will and pleasure of the crown." Colclough's Parl. Hist. 1800, 364. Mr. Fox said, "By whom is this Board of Superintendence to be appointed? Is it not by the Ministry? Is it not to be under its control? Is here dreadful a policy of care, then, upon the very supposition of an agreement between this Board and the Court of Directors?"

BOOK V. Such were the contrivances for improving that part of
 CHAP. IX. the machinery for the Indian government, which had its
 seat in England. For immediate operation upon the faults
 1784. of that part of it which had its seat, by unavoidable necessity,
 in India, the provisions of Mr. Pitt coincided to a great degree
 with the palliatives of Mr. Fox. A control was given to the
 Governor-General and Council of Bengal over the other
 Presidencies. Aggressive wars, persecutions, and disregard of
 orders, were forbidden. The Zemindars who had been displaced,
 were to be restored, and their situation as much as possible
 rendered permanent; though nothing was said about their
 hereditary rights, or a tax incapable of augmentation. The
 debts of the Nabob of Arcot, and his disputes with the Raja
 of Tanjore, were to be taken into consideration, and a plan
 of adjustment was to be devised, by the Directors.

strike every one who attacks it. Must not the existence of such a union
 entail the influence of the prerogative, by adding to it the patronage of the
 Company? Is it not giving power to the Sovereign, for the sake of influence,
 and for the extension of that system of corruption which had been so justly
 reprobated?" Ibid. 288. Mr. Fox again said, "The last parliament, in their
 immortal session, voided the influence of the Crown inconsistent with public
 liberty. The Right Hon. Gen., in consequence of that vote, finds it probably
 unequal to the great objects of his administration. He is, therefore, willing
 to take the present opportunity of making his count—what he knows such a
 district as the above will serve to accomplish—and the plain language of the
 whole matter now is—that the patronage of India must be appended to the
 executive power of this country, which otherwise will not be able to carry on
 a vigorous battle to the constitution in opposition to the House of Commons." Ibid. 289.—To these authorities may be added that of the Court of Directors.
 In the "Reply to the Arguments against the Company's Claim," &c., dated
 New India House, 17th January, 1808, it is affirmed, "The control and direc-
 tion of Indian affairs is not with the Company; unless, indeed, it be argued,
 that the small share of patronage gives them constitutive power and influence;
 all the great wheels of the machine are moved by government at home, who
 direct and control the Company in all their principal operations in India."
 See State Papers in Asia, Asia Reg. No. 1495, p. 283.

45-112

112-210

261-366

Aug 1912

112

210

181

366

Cons app^t each 366

183 472

Baronship of
and the country

Tampon Dapou
95

